



Water-Burial Among the Crocodiles

गोहि सभक बीच जलसमाधि

सम्पूर्ण त्रयी • The Complete Trilogy

A chapter-by-chapter teaching companion, in English

Gajendra Thakur • गजेन्द्र ठाकुर

About this teaching series

A chapter-by-chapter English study companion to Gajendra Thakur's Maithili epic — the complete trilogy (सम्पूर्ण त्रयी).

The scope. The complete series runs across three volumes and 301 numbered chapters — अध्याय -100 to 200 — followed by dramatic appendices. Vol-0 (-100...-1) is the pre-history; Vol-1 (0...100) and Vol-2 (101...200) carry the main narrative.

The spine. The village of Gaṛh Nārikel and its 1200-year witness, "Būṛhbā," hold the whole arc together. Its refrain — "the crocodile eats the body, not the name" — is the moral engine of every volume.

How each chapter is taught. One title card fixes the chapter's place, source and epigraph; then teaching cards vary in number with the chapter's length and density — longer, denser chapters receive more cards.

● *In many chapters you will meet*

RECURRING ELEMENTS

- An epigraph couplet in the voice of Gaṛh Nārikel
- A folk-song (लोकगीत) that states the theme
- A staged debate or nāṭya — प्रवेश, अंक, उपसंहार
- A closing kathā-dṛṣṭānta-uddharaṇa anthology
- A teaching takeaway that links to the larger arc



Conch and Silver

शंख आ रजत *Śaṅkha ā Rajat*

"Not all that glitters is silver, and not every name is a body — whoever takes the conch for silver takes the village for a map."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Dramatizes Vācaspati Miśra's Bhāmatī — the adhyāsa (superimposition) section on the four opening Brahma-sūtras

The frame: a village, a witness, and one small question

Conch and Silver • शंख आ रजत — card 1 of 3

Garh Nārikel. A village not on any large map, yet remembered for twelve hundred years in the root of a single pīpal tree at the heart of the Channā grove. Its perpetual witness is known only as "Būṛhbā."

The wager of the whole epic. Būṛhbā teaches one thing across every generation: the crocodile (goḥi) devours the body, never the name. To mistake glitter for truth is to mistake the name for the body — the same error that will run twelve centuries, from this debate-hall to today's screens.

The seed-question. Twelve hundred years ago, in a lamp-lit debate-hall, scholars gathered on a question small to look at but bottomless within: when a man mistakes a distant conch for silver, what exactly is that error?

● Composite voices, not portraits

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Sūtradhāra — stage-manager
- Vācaspati Miśra — commentator, host of the debate
- Ākṣepaka — the assembly's collective doubt
- Naiyāyika — defends anyathākhyāti
- Prābhākara — defends akhyāti

Three theories of error, tested at the door

Conch and Silver • शंख आ रजत — card 2 of 3

Naiyāyika — anyathākhyāti. The silver is real, sitting elsewhere (a shop, a memory), merely misplaced onto the conch. Vācaspati's reply: then a mere eye-defect would have to drag real silver across a city into your palm — no small flaw, but a miracle dressed as "illusion."

Prābhākara — akhyāti. Two correct cognitions arise — a bare "this" and a memory of silver — and the mind simply fails to mark them apart. Reply: a missed distinction is a kind of blindness, but it cannot explain the eager hand reaching for silver that isn't there.

Advaita — anirvacanīya. The silver was neither truly real (or the cognition would read "conch") nor simply unreal (no one reaches for a hare's horn). It was indeterminable — vivid, ungrounded, and vanishing the instant steady light corrects it.

● अनिर्वचनीय anirvacanīya

KEY TERM

- "That which cannot be pronounced either real or unreal."
- "Real" and "unreal" are contradictories, not two shades on one scale — affirming one is, in the same breath, denying the other.
- So error occupies the middle that logic seems to forbid.

From the conch to the world: the Bhāmatī move

Conch and Silver • शंख आ रजत — card 3 of 3

The extension. Vācaspati widens the mirage: the water a thirsty traveller runs toward is present, standing, ungraspable — like the silver. Now stretch it one step further.

The whole seen world. Body, senses, this hall, this lamp, this evening itself stand to the Self exactly as the silver stood to the conch — superimposed on a ground that does not itself change: the single, conscious ātman present alike in the child's body and the aged one.

The gentle correction. The entire Bhāmatī, the Sūtradhāra says, is nothing but the lamp being slowly, patiently trimmed — so that what we spent a lifetime calling silver we may see, without panic and without loss, was only ever a conch.

● Why this opens the epic

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The book's deepest question — what is error? — is asked first in its smallest dress.
- Names mistaken for bodies; maps mistaken for villages; glitter for truth.
- This single confusion is the root the whole novel will trace to its end.



Establishing the Self

आत्मसिद्धि-वाद *Ātmasiddhi-vāda*

"What says 'I' has its own breath for witness — the pond does not ask anyone how deep it is."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Dramatizes Udayana's *Ātmatattvaviveka* — a debate against Buddhist momentariness and idealism

The debate: is there anyone who says "I"?

Establishing the Self • आत्मसिद्धि-वाद — card 1 of 3

The question in four rooms. The debate asks one question four ways: who is asking? Is there someone who suffers, remembers, is bound — and can also be freed? Or is there only a river that mistakes its own waves for a bank?

The water-clock rule. Each side speaks in turn, measured by the ghaṭikā-yantra; neither may claim victory until the other has had its full time — a staged image of honest debate.

Movement one — momentariness. Kṣaṇabhadra argues everything real is momentary. Udayana answers: a stored seed waits through every season for rain, and the whole wait is the seed — so its "capacity" persists, which is the very permanence being denied.

● A composite opponent

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Udayanācārya — Mithilā's logician, defender of the Self
- Kṣaṇabhadra — one voice for many Buddhist logicians (Dharmakīrti, Ratnakīrti, Jñānaśrī)
- Śiṣya — the pupil who voices the assembly's doubt
- Pariṣad — the murmuring court

Against a world with no knower behind it

Establishing the Self • आत्मसिद्धि-वाद — card 2 of 3

The destruction argument. Kṣaṇabhadra says a thing perishes simply because it must. Udayana: then a stone in the sun is secretly ten-thousand stones, each perishing "by nature" with no hammer, weather or cause — a theory of change that leaves its most important change unexplained.

Movement two — idealism (vijñānavāda). If dream-gardens feel outer with no outer object, why assume any outer world? Reply: you yourself keep dream and waking apart — and that very sorting is done from a standpoint outside both, reporting something a dream cannot give and the world can.

The debate refutes itself. And to argue at all, your mind must receive a cause from outside it — my voice, entering your ear, addressed to a hearer you treat as distinct. If nothing is outside cognition, whom are you speaking to?

● The knower behind knowing

KEY MOVE

- "I know" is like "I cut": cutting is an act, and every act needs an agent that begins before it and remains after.
- The axe is blunted by cutting; the cutter is not destroyed by it.
- So the knower persists through the act of knowing.

Memory proves a Self — and a Self worth keeping

Establishing the Self · आत्मसिद्धि-वाद — card 3 of 3

The mango, thirty years on. I now remember a mango tasted in childhood. Tasting was one event, long perished; remembering is another, in a body wholly changed. For this to be my memory — not a stranger's diary — one thing must have been present at both moments.

The crowd that remembers nothing. A crowd, once scattered, remembers nothing; no crowd is left to remember. Yet I remember. Momentary flashes, each perishing before the next, could no more bridge this than one wave could recall a wave that broke an hour before its birth.

Movement four — bondage and freedom. If there is no Self, no one is bound and no one freed, and every teacher taught an empty room to let go. But a Self that mistook itself for the body, and suffered that error, is the same Self that can unlearn it — freed not by vanishing, but by lasting, at last, without the old illusion.

● Why the Self matters here

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Only a persisting subject makes memory, ownership and liberation more than words.
- Udayana turns even the opponent's "hidden continuity" into the ātman under another name.
- The pre-history plants the Self that the whole novel will test against water and forgetting.



Who Made This World?

केऽ बनौलक ई जगत? *Ke'i Banaulak Ī Jagat?*

"The tree asked, 'Who planted me?' The earth laughed: 'The one who plants never asks.'"

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A 30-minute village play based on Udayana's Nyāyakusumāñjali — the inference of a world-maker

A quarrel in the village square

Who Made This World? • केऽ बनौलक ई जगत? — card 1 of 3

The setting. The Sūtradhāra brings not a tale of kings and demons but the oldest quarrel of all: who made the rising sun, the falling rain, the ripening rice — someone, or did it simply happen?

The players. The Ācārya (an Udayana-figure) meets Cārvāka, the quick village skeptic, with a potter-woman, the boy Modhu, old Būṛh Kākā, and Lekhnī Dīdī who copies the sacred leaves. The whole proof is staged in things a village already knows.

First flower — kāryāt. "Who made this pot?" "The potter, this morning." "But you never saw her make it." "Because pots don't shape themselves!" The Ācārya asks only that the vast, ordered world be looked at with the same honest eye.

● *Nyāyakusumāñjali, staged*

THE ARGUMENT'S FOUR FLOWERS

- कार्यात् — a made thing needs a maker (the pot)
- आयोजनात् / धृत्यादेः — order + upkeep (the granary wall)
- पदात् — words have fixed, assigned meanings (naming)
- प्रत्ययतः — testimony of the unseen needs a knower of it

Order, upkeep, and the first name

Who Made This World? • केऽ बनौलक ई जगत? — card 2 of 3

The granary wall — order and maintenance. Bricks do not choose their own order, nor do the rain-clouds choose to come in Sāvan and not in Māgh. Someone set the order at the start; someone keeps it standing against wind and rain — as a wall, once built, still needs a hand to hold it up.

The naming of "tinkolī" — padāt. Children squabble over what to call a strange new fruit; Būṛh Kākā ends it by decree: "Call it tinkolī." Cārvāka notes the word did not choose its own meaning — an elder tied it. So who tied the very first word to the very first meaning?

The reliable witness — pratyayataḥ. You trust your mother about fire because she saw it and had no reason to deceive you. Verses about the unseen fruit of deeds can only be trusted if someone directly knew the unseen — a knower the Ācārya will call God.

● An unbroken chain of names

KEY MOVE

- A rope of names passed down needs a first knot.
- Repetition never turns a guess into knowledge, however old.
- So the chain points back to a first, reliable knower.

The verdict: not silence, but a better question

Who Made This World? • केऽ बनौलक ई जगत? — card 3 of 3

Chance is not an answer. Cārvāka pleads chance. The Ācārya: chance must still work on something — atoms that combine, and combine in just the order that yields pots, rivers, rice, children. Left truly alone, chance does not even know to try again.

Cārvāka leaves — still doubting, now asking better. He cannot answer tonight, and says so honestly. He leaves as sure as ever that a pot needs a potter and a good question deserves a patient answer, not a loud one — and now he asks better questions.

The old texts' true ending. The play closes as the old books do — not by silencing the doubter, but by wishing the fragrance of this flower of reason to believer and skeptic alike, so both go home a little wiser. If one child asked "but why?" once more than usual, the little pot found its shape tonight.

● The temper of Nyāya

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Reason asks only for honest looking — not blind faith, not surrender.
- The doubter is honoured, not crushed.
- Even a children's play carries the full Naiyāyika proof of īśvara.



The Wishing-Jewel of Thought

चिन्तामणि रत्न *Cintāmaṇi Ratna*

"Mind steady, a clod is a diamond; mind shaken, a diamond is a clod — the jewel is not outside, but in the eye that knows it."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Dramatizes Gaṅgeśa Upādhyāya's Tattvacintāmaṇi — and, above all, its method

The method before the doctrine

The Wishing-Jewel of Thought • चिंतामणि रत्न — card 1 of 3

Testing the mortar first. Like a mason who tests his mortar before trusting a wall, Gaṅgeśa will let no conclusion bear weight until he has defined valid knowledge and pervasion so precisely that the definition survives every blow — including his own.

The signature technique. State the weakest, most exact form of a claim; invite the sharpest available blow; and if it lands, thank the opponent and rebuild. Self-refutation and refinement — not louder assertion — is how the jewel is cut.

First movement — maṅgalācaraṇa. Does the auspicious invocation cause anything? Gaṅgeśa concedes the objection's full force, then shows the invocation removes obstacles rather than directly producing completion — a rule bound by a condition, exactly like smoke and fire.

● Composite voices

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Gaṅgeśa Upādhyāya — the logician who refines his own claim first
- Bauddha — the sharp opponent, doubting unseen causes and unseen agents
- Mīmāṃsaka — a ritual scholar
- Śiṣya — whose plain questions keep the debate earthed

Two definitions, cut and re-cut

The Wishing-Jewel of Thought • चिंतामणि रत्न — card 2 of 3

Valid knowledge (prāmāṇya). First try: a cognition is valid when it presents a quality just where it truly is. The conch-silver case seems to split it — one cognition, valid in its "this," invalid in its "silver." Gaṅgeśa's answer: a mixed cognition is two claims on one glance, each testable apart, so no contradiction remains.

Pervasion (vyāpti). The bond between sign (smoke) and proven (fire) is refined four times, each patch closing a door the last left open — until "co-location where the sign never stands where the proven is wholly absent" survives the Buddhist's every counter-example.

Why a lifetime. "I am beginning to see why this text took a lifetime to write." Because every sentence already sits before an opponent as sharp as tonight's — and that is the only kind of sentence worth building anything on.

● *The mason's patch*

METHOD IN ONE IMAGE

- A wall tested four times by its mason, and still standing,
- is worth more than a wall no one has yet thought to push.
- Be dazzled by the method, not by the count of patches.

The inference of God — named with precision

The Wishing-Jewel of Thought · चिंतामणि रत्न — card 3 of 3

Naming the subject. Not vaguely "earth and the elements," but: "whatever is an effect and is not already known to us to be made by an embodied human maker." This excludes the pot, and excludes nothing genuinely in dispute.

Defining "agency" (kartṛtva). Not the mere presence of knowledge, desire and effort — we have those toward countless things we never made — but being the effective cause, as the potter stands to this pot, not as a bystander stands to a fire he did not light.

Why the chain must stop. An embodied agent presupposes a body, itself an effect needing just such a maker. The chain cannot end in an embodied maker without regress; it stops at a knower–willer–agent whose effort depends on no prior body. That, and nothing grander, is what we call God.

● Navya-Nyāya, dramatized

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Precision of the subject-term is half the proof.
- Progress, not defeat, is the mark of a well-run debate.
- The wishing-jewel is the disciplined eye itself.



Guarding the Memory

स्मृति-रक्षा *Smṛti-rakṣā*

"The body dissolves in clay; the name holds on the leaf — what the village keeps in mind, no hand can erase."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- An original play in the debate-hall lineage of -100/-99/-98 — where logic meets a death by the well

A death by the well, and a rushed verdict

Guarding the Memory • स्मृति-रक्षा — card 1 of 2

The turn. Earlier illusions were a convenience — no one died; a hand merely came away empty. Here the hand is not empty: the well is full. Hulāsā, the young copyist, is found drowned, and the word "suicide" stands up before the cause of death is even known.

Prestige versus truth. Kṣaṇapūra the ritualist and the village head want the case closed quickly, to protect the debate-hall's name. Vācaspati refuses: absence of witnesses proves absence, not agency — as no smoke in a dark room proves no fire ever burned.

The means, not the speaker. Testimony's validity rests on its instrument, not the speaker's caste or sex. Hulāsā's unsent last words, written alone for no listener, are free of deceit — for deceit always needs an audience.

● The debate-hall, ageing

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Vācaspati Mīśra — the aged ācārya, voice still firm
- Budhuā — his lifelong servant at the lamp and conch
- Hulāsā — the copyist found drowned
- Kṣaṇapūra — ritualist, guardian of "prestige"
- Ratneśa — the village head

The unfinished line, and the birth of Būṛhbā

Guarding the Memory • स्मृति-रक्षा — card 2 of 2

"हम..." — left unfinished. The last leaf breaks off mid-word: "I..." Vācaspati will not complete it. To finish it by guess would be his imagination's victory, not the guarding of her memory. To guard a memory is to keep its incompleteness intact, not falsely closed.

The verdict in stone. "Cause unknown, name Hulāsā, justice pending." To admit "cause unknown" is not shame but the mark of good learning — the same rigour once turned on the conch is now owed to a powerless girl.

The vow that outlives a life. Budhuā vows to keep watch by the conch and rope for as long as any name is erased by injustice. Such a vow outlasts one life — and across twelve hundred years "the old servant" becomes "Būṛhbā," the witness who opened this whole epic.

● Where trilogy meets novel

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The tools of proof are worthless if they cannot guard one weak name.
- Logic reveals truth; guarding revealed truth is a separate act.
- Budhuā's vow is the thread the reader will find again in the Channā grove.



The Submerged Manuscript

जलमग्न पाण्डुलिपि *Jalamagna Pāṇḍulipi*

"A flood can drown a book, not the throat — words written on the heart are not wetted by water."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- An original play in Udayana's monastery — set against the tradition that his Kiraṇāvalī opens with no invocation

The fire, and a life spent to save the books

The Submerged Manuscript • जलमग्न पाण्डुलिपि — card 1 of 2

"My invocation." Pupil Someśvara asks why the Kiraṇāvalī carries no maṅgalācaraṇa. Udayana: "Care, study, clear writing, timely revision — that is my invocation. A work completed without obstacle is its own proof of auspiciousness."

The fire. A lamp topples; the manuscript-hall catches. The oldest copies and the Kiraṇāvalī autograph are still inside. Jīvantī — Budhuā's pupil, the manuscript-guardian — proposes to sink the bundles in the pond, beyond the fire's reach.

The drowning. She swims deep to keep the bundles dry, her hair snags on a root, and she will not let go: "I was taught to be a witness — a witness to the books too." Aged Budhuā reaches her too late; the bundle is saved, Jīvantī is not.

● The monastery, by night

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Udayanācārya — philosopher-host, author of the Kiraṇāvalī
- Budhuā — Vācaspati's old servant, now here, vow-bound
- Jīvantī — manuscript-guardian, Budhuā's pupil
- Someśvara — the pupil who asks about the invocation
- Śambhunāth — the abbot, guardian of prestige

The price of an obstacle-free completion

The Submerged Manuscript · जलमग्न पाण्डुलिपि — card 2 of 2

The abbot's scale. By morning Śambhunāth is relieved "the manuscript survived." Udayana rebukes him: "You weighed the book before the girl — your scale tips toward the text."

His own words, turned back. Someśvara presses: "You said a work completed without obstacle is its own proof — but was this completed without obstacle? A life was lost in it." Udayana concedes the words were not false, only incomplete: he forgot that the price at which that completion was bought is itself a matter of proof.

A name at the library door. He makes a rule — this monastery will name the guardian wherever it preserves a text. Jīvantī's name is carved where the catalogue is written, and a "memory-chamber" (स्मृति-कक्ष) is founded: the list of scriptures and the list of names will run together.

● One line, two monasteries

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "Logic reveals truth; guarding revealed truth is a separate act" — Vācaspati's line, now heard from a second mouth.
- The vow now holds two names: Hulāsā, Jīvantī.
- Budhuā's whispered "हम् ..." — the unfinished word he still carries.



The Silence of Four Mouths

चारि मुखक मौन *Cāri Mukhak Maun*

"All four mouths spoke, yet one thing stayed hidden — behind every answer stands a silence."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- An original play — four schools debate under the pīpal while a famine crowd waits at the gate

Four philosophies, one hungry crowd

The Silence of Four Mouths • चारिमुखक मौन — card 1 of 2

The changed topic. In a famine year, Udayana halts the scheduled debate and asks the four scholars one plain question: "What does your philosophy say about the starving crowd at the gate?" Each retreats inside its own system.

The four answers. Sāṅkhya: suffering is of the three guṇas, cured by knowledge, not grain. Cārvāka's Rudradatta breaks the pattern — "if the store has grain and the belly is empty, give it; that is plain sense." Mīmāṃsaka: no Vedic injunction, so alms is optional. The Buddhist monk tangles in the emptiness of giver, gift and receiver.

Sohan collapses. A starving villager, Sohan, staggers in and dies by the pīpal root before the debate ends. Four systems, each complete, and not one could say in time: "food first, debate after."

● *Four schools, and the famine*

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Viśvambhar — Sāṅkhya: the three guṇas
- Rudradatta — Cārvāka poet: perception first
- Śīlabhadra — Buddhist monk: compassion, and emptiness
- Harinātha — Mīmāṃsaka: dharma is Vedic injunction
- Sohan — the starving villager who dies

The witness-tree, and the four faces

The Silence of Four Mouths · चारिमुखक मौन — card 2 of 2

Budhuā's rebuke. "Viśvambhar spoke of the guṇas, Rudradatta of perception, Śīlabhadra of emptiness, Harinātha of injunction. Sohan sat among these four tales, listening, and died. Was there not one tale that could have said at once — food first, then debate?"

Not philosophy's defeat. Udayana: your four knowledges are not false; but sitting together you could not speak with one voice for one life. This is not the defeat of philosophy — it is the defeat of those of us who love philosophy more than life.

Hands on the bark. Budhuā asks the pīpal to hold the four voices as witness; the scholars each lay a hand on it. Henceforth whoever debates in its shade must first ask, "Is anyone hungry at the gate?" The tree becomes the sākṣī-vṛkṣa, later "Pīpar Brahmā" — four faces, four philosophies.

● Knowledge before compassion

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The vow now holds three names: Hulāsā, Jīvantī, Sohan.
- Far ahead, in the Channā grove, the pīpal will give four answers — all four false.
- Because truth does not live where knowledge insists on speaking before compassion.



The Conch's Last Question

शंखक अन्तिम प्रश्न *Śaṅkhak Antim Praśna*

"What you once recognised, the dawn asks of you again — but one whose answer is steady does not fear the question."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- An original play returning the conch-silver error of -100 to Udayana's monastery, at the end of a doubter's life

A lifetime of doubt, come to die

The Conch's Last Question • शंखक अन्तिम प्रश्न — card 1 of 2

The doubter returns. The Ākṣepaka — the voice first heard in -100, who spent sixty years touring debate-halls raising doubts — comes back, dying, to Udayana's monastery with one last question, asked for himself, not for debate.

The question. If all of life is a conch-mistaken-for-silver, what is death? The end of the illusion — or an illusion that could never itself be tested? And if the very knower of the illusion was false, was sixty years of doubt worth anything at all?

Disagreement is not absence. Udayana notes the three schools (anyathākhyāti, akhyāti, anirvacanīya) all agree that error is error; they differ only on its mechanism. Their disagreement marks the subtlety of the subject, not the absence of truth. But the doubter's question is about death, not mechanism.

● End of a life

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Udayanācārya — now in his final year
- The Ākṣepaka — the doubter of -100, sixty years on
- Budhuā — vow-bound witness, who answers in the end
- Keśava — the young pupil in attendance

Budhuā's answer, and the silver light

The Conch's Last Question • शंखक अन्तिम प्रश्न — card 2 of 2

The value of doubt. Budhuā answers, not Udayana: three names — Hulāsā, Jīvantī, Sohan — each a victim of illusion, and each time the instruments of proof came late. But one thing never came late: the decision to be a witness. That decision arrives after proof falls silent.

The conch, not the silver. "Knowledge can only name the illusion; stepping out of it is the work of will, memory, love. You spent sixty years avoiding taking the conch for silver. I spent sixty years learning how much the conch is worth even without being silver — for it is still a conch, in my hand, and keeping it is my work."

Neither conch nor silver. Death is not the end of illusion, but the moment the conch shows its true worth without trying to be silver. The doubter dies at peace; a faint silver light — neither conch nor silver — rises from his eyes toward the sākṣī-vṛkṣa. Villagers will call it "Rākas."

● The circle of the conch

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The vow now holds four names.
- The conch of -100 completes its circle — but completion is only the door to a new question.
- Foreshadow: the Channā-grove kabaddī, where the Rākas throw silver light.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -92

The Prisoner of the Water-Clock

जल-घड़ीक कैदी *Jal-gharīk Kaidī*

"Drop by drop the water falls, drop by drop the time — the prisoner of the clock never learns the end of his sentence."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The first full portrait of Gaṛh Nārikel village — the future stage of the whole novel

The village, and a farmer who cannot be heard

The Prisoner of the Water-Clock • जल-घड़ीक कैदी — card 1 of 2

Nārikel-ghāṭ. The first detailed portrait of the village that will host the whole novel — the twin pond, the pīpal "witness-tree," the Kamalā-Balān river. Ācārya Keśava (Udayana's pupil) runs a court and loves procedure: every dispute is timed by a ghaṭikā-yantra, a pierced brass bowl that sinks when a speaker's time is up.

The blocked channel. Sukhdev Mahto, an honest poor farmer, comes daily for weeks: the powerful Ugrasen Ṭhākur has dammed the channel that waters his field. But his plain, unlettered complaint always sits behind grander disputes, and the water-clock always runs out — "come tomorrow."

Time as a barrier. Ugrasen's learned lawyer raises a new technical question each day, each demanding a fresh water-clock. Six weeks pass; drought comes; the daughter's buffalo Kajarī starves; Sukhdev himself withers like his own rice.

● *A village dispute*

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Ācārya Keśava — Udayana's pupil, lover of procedure
- Sukhdev Mahto — honest farmer, denied water
- Ugrasen Ṭhākur — the powerful landholder
- Budhuā — the aged witness at the pīpal root

The unfinished sentence, and "Loth"

The Prisoner of the Water-Clock · जल-घड़ीक कैदी — card 2 of 2

"My daughter..." At last Sukhdev rises to speak — "Ācārya, my daughter..." — and collapses dead by the pīpal root, the sentence unfinished. Keśava rushes: "I would have heard you today!" — but the words are now seed sown after the field has dried.

Budhuā's diagnosis. "Your order was not wrong. It only forgot that for many people time itself is a luxury — and one who cannot afford it reaches the end of his body, not the end of the queue." Keśava adds a rule: whoever waits more than three days is heard first — the "Sukhdev-niyama," never carved (his land passed to Ugrasen's steward; his daughter's name never entered the record).

The half-open mouth. A ghost lingers by the pīpal — "Loth," still as the dead but mouth half-open like the living, the sentence never finished. Budhuā tells the fearful: he needs only that his words be heard one day. Nārikel-ghāṭ becomes "Gaṛh Nārikel"; only the names of the village's hunger change — date, file, court verandah.

● A tool that turns on the weak

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The ghaṭikā-yantra, built to discipline scholars' debate,
- becomes a new barrier against the powerless when time is shared unequally.
- An unfinished sentence cannot be completed by any witness — Budhuā's oldest rule.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -91

The Light of the Cobblers' Quarter

चर्मकार टोलाक उजास *Carmakār Tolāk Ujās*

"The hand that stitches hide has its name on the leaf too — the quarter's lamp and the palace's lamp burn the same oil."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Young Gaṅgeśa among the leather-workers — the part of his life hidden behind the shine of scripture

A truth of Nyāya, learned from a drum

The Light of the Cobblers' Quarter • चर्मकार टोलाक उजास — card 1 of 2

The quarter at the edge. Past the dried Maral-Gaṅg lies the Camār quarter — drying hides, making drums, stitching shoes: work the village needs but keeps from its threshold. Here live Somar the finest drum-maker, Ratnā the midwife whose herbal and birthing knowledge is written nowhere, and their bright daughter Mālatī.

The fevered stranger. Young Gaṅgeśa collapses at their door, feverish, clutching palm-leaves, muttering "without proof, no prameya...". Ratnā takes him in — across the "impurity" taboo of a Brahmin in a Camār home — and nurses him fifteen days.

Mālatī's drum. She asks: if a speaker's mind holds no falsehood, how can the word be untrue, whoever the speaker? Her proof is her father's drums — if the hide is wrongly stretched the drum speaks falsely, however skilled the player; stretched right, it speaks as true as any palace instrument. Gaṅgeśa: "You have brought reliability (āptatā) onto the purity of the instrument, not the speaker's caste. You spoke the science of Nyāya."

● The Camār quarter

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Gaṅgeśa — the future author of the Tattvacintāmaṇi
- Mālatī — Somar's daughter, sharp and unlettered
- Ratnā — midwife; keeper of unwritten knowledge
- Somar — the finest drum-maker in the village
- Budhuā — who foresees the forgetting

The foundation the world forgets

The Light of the Cobblers' Quarter • चर्मकार टोलाक उजास — card 2 of 2

Marriage, and uproar. Gaṅgeśa keeps returning; within two years marriage is arranged. The Brahmin quarter erupts with threats that his work will never be taught. By the pīpal, Budhuā tells him: this marriage is not your fall but your text's foundation — yet the world will read your text and forget Mālatī's drum, making your marriage a tale of pity, not of justice.

The legend that covers a debt. The Tattvacintāmaṇi — twelve-thousand-texts' worth of thought — is taught everywhere; but the world forgets the drum and later invents Gaṅgeśa's genius as a tantric boon or Kālī's grace: easier to fabricate a divine tale than to admit a cobbler-woman's daughter saw a deep truth of epistemology in drum-hide.

Goddess or witch. The women's evening circle by the Maral-Gaṅg — where unwritten knowledge passes hand to hand — is feared and later called "ḍāin" (witch). Knowledge that is not written down, the village calls either goddess or witch; it has no name in between. So the women learn: a quiet voice is a safe voice.

● Whose light is recorded

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Budhuā's vow now guards Ratnā's and Mālatī's names — if not on scripture's page, then on another.
- An alternative to -97's divine-boon legend: a human teacher, unrecorded.
- The counter-canon the whole Videha project sets out to recover.



Budhuā's Water-Burial

बुधुआक जलसमाधि *Budhuāk Jalasamādhī*

"The crocodile took the body, released the name — one who takes water-burial dwells not at the pond's bottom, but in the village's mind."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The keystone of the pre-history — the birth of the "Būṛhbā" ghost and the novel's title-image

The last witness, and a memory too heavy to carry

Budhuā's Water-Burial · बुधुआक जलसमाधि — card 1 of 3

Still alive. Generations on, Ācārya Vardhamāna (seventh in Keśava's line) writes on the Tattvacintāmaṇi — and Budhuā still lives, as ordinary to the village as the pīpal or the pond. Children call him "Būṛhbā"; he can no longer walk, and to everyone who passes he speaks a name — Hulāsā, Jīvantī, Sukhdev, Ratnā — as if keeping them from falling out of the air.

Centuries inside one man. Asked his age, he answers: "When I began there was only the coconut-row, the pond and pīpal, and an ācārya arguing that a conch was mistaken for silver." "Vācaspati Miśra — but that was centuries ago!" "Yes. Those centuries now sit inside me, in my memory — and memory becomes a burden when the body carrying it grows weak."

The fear. If he dies as an ordinary man, where will the names go — Hulāsā's, Jīvantī's, Sukhdev's unfinished sentence, Ratnā's drum — none carved in stone, none in any book, held only in one old man's memory, ending with him like a lamp's light?

● Vol-0, gathered into one man

THE NAMES HE CARRIES

- Hulāsā — the copyist (-96)
- Jīvantī — the manuscript-guardian (-95)
- Sohan — the famine's death (-94)
- Sukhdev — the prisoner of the water-clock (-92)
- Ratnā & Mālatī — the drum's unrecorded truth (-91)

The water-burial

Budhuā's Water-Burial · बुधुआक जलसमाधि — card 2 of 3

Moonlight like silver. That night he carries his conch and rope to the pond, moonlight spread like silver on the water — the very conch-silver image of –100. He speaks a last word to each name: Hulāsā (carrying her unfinished "हम..." not to complete but to preserve), Jīvantī ("I finish your sentence not with your word but with my act — I will be a witness, always"), Sukhdev (bearing the "Sukhdev-niyama"), Ratnā (writing her name in the water, in memory, not ink).

"The vow breaks the limit of a lifespan." To Vācaspati, at the last: "You said a vow outlasts one life. Today I understand — it does not merely outlast a life; it breaks the limit of a lifespan itself." He sits down into the water as into sleep, without struggle or fear; the pond flashes silver for one instant, then stills.

Only a conch and a rope. At dawn the fishermen find only the conch and worn rope, neatly placed — no body, no footprints, no struggle — and the pīpal greener, as if its roots gained something overnight. Vardhamāna places the conch in the root: "Budhuā did not die. He has only become nearer to this tree, this water, and every memory of this village than any living man could ever be."

● जलसमाधि · water-burial

THE TITLE-IMAGE

- The crocodile (gohi) takes the body, releases the name.
- Water-burial is not descent to the pond's bed — it is entry into the village's memory.
- This is the seed of the whole novel's title and its moral engine.

The birth of Būṛhbā, and "twelve hundred years"

Budhuā's Water-Burial · बुधुआक जलसमाधि — card 3 of 3

A presence at dusk. From then, a patient old presence lingers by the pīpal at dusk, whispering names; children hear the old stories though no one knows who tells them. "Būṛhbā," the village says, "is still sitting there."

Folk time, not the calendar. Details blur; the age becomes a round, memorable number — "twelve hundred years" — neither wholly true nor false, like the conch that is never quite silver yet keeps silver's memory in its shine. (By Vol-0's own clock the gap from Vācaspati is nearer four or five centuries; the number is a folk idiom for "rememberable antiquity," true to the story's inner time, not the outer calendar.)

The thread into the novel. The roots reach toward the Channā grove — or perhaps the grove is only the old pīpal's reach; the village never settles the question. Whoever sits there at dusk still meets a patient old presence, holding the names, waiting — as it once sat by Vācaspati's door, tending the lamp. This is the Būṛhbā the reader will meet, "twelve hundred years on one branch," in the Channā-grove kabaddī of Vol-1.

● Where Vol-0 becomes the novel

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Būṛhbā is Vol-0's memory made permanent — the reader's guide through Vol-1 and Vol-2.
- Symbolic, non-linear time: 1885, 1934, 1977 and now will be leapt in one kabaddī turn.
- The crocodile eats the body, not the name — now proven in a life.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -89

First Night, First Flood

पहिल राति, पहिल बाढि *Pahil Rāti, Pahil Bāṛhi*

"The first flood took the house, not the village — the night that survived became the seed of the dawn."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- One year after the water-burial — Būṛhbā's first test, and the origin of the name "Gaṛh Nārikel"

A witness who cannot save is only a spectator

First Night, First Flood · पहिल राति, पहिल बाढि — card 1 of 2

The cloudburst. A year after his water-burial, a midnight storm bursts the weak earthen embankment where the Camār quarter sits. Būṛhbā, now one with the water, feels the flood coming and screams — but his hands slip through doors without sound. "A witness who cannot save is only a spectator, not a witness."

The dream that wakes the quarter. Seven-year-old Gaurī — Ratnā and Mālatī's fourth-generation heir, carrying a faint "half-ghost" thread — hears Būṛhbā in a dream repeating "Rise. Rise." She wakes screaming; her grandmother opens the door to the roar of water, and the quarter runs for high ground.

The current turned, for one instant. The embankment collapses toward the Camār quarter. Būṛhbā bends the current for a single moment, and Gaurī's family reaches the old cremation-mound — shunned as inauspicious, and therefore empty and safe. Seven die that night, including her great-grandmother Subhāgī, whose last words were "Did Gaurī survive?" The six Camār dead go unrecorded.

● The night of the flood

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Būṛhbā — the water-witness, tested for the first time
- Gaurī — the child who hears him; Ratnā's heir
- Subhāgī — the great-grandmother lost to the flood
- The Camār quarter — at the embankment's weakest point

"A witness becomes half-ghost"

First Night, First Flood · पहिल राति, पहिल बाढि — card 2 of 2

The weeping tree. At dawn Būṛhbā weeps for the first time since the water-burial — no tears, no sound, yet every pīpal leaf is wetter than dew, as if the tree itself wept. To Gaurī: "I couldn't save you all, only some; but saving what can be saved is no small thing."

The half-ghost. "You heard my voice when no one else could. Perhaps one who is ready to be a witness becomes half-ghost — neither wholly living nor dead, a thin thread between two worlds." The saying spreads: a child's strange dream, or a groundless dread before calamity, may mean Būṛhbā is speaking to a half-ghost.

The rampart, and the name. The village rebuilds the embankment in brick and stone — the Camār side first and strongest, for the first time valuing the quarter's safety equally. "Nārikel-ghāṭ" becomes "Gaṛh Nārikel" — gaṛh, "fort," in memory of that rampart, bought with seven lives.

● Memory tied to a place-name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Mithilā's flood country: embankment resources mirror social hierarchy.
- A fictional etymology binds the place-name to memory and justice.
- Būṛhbā's first lesson: not all can be saved — but saving some is no small act.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -88

The Witch's Accusation

डाइनक आरोप *Dāink Ārop*

"Whom the village called 'witch,' no one asked her name — an accusation burns the body; truth stays on the leaf."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Twenty years on — how a "witch" charge is manufactured to seize a prospering quarter's land

An accusation built to order

The Witch's Accusation • डाइनक आरोप — card 1 of 2

The prospering quarter. Twenty years after the flood, the Camār quarter is safe and prosperous — its drums sell across Mithilā — and the old landed families resent it. Gaurī, now 27, is its healer-midwife, Ratnā's fourth-generation heir, still half-ghost, still hearing Būṛhbā before calamities.

The plot. Pratāpsen Ṭhākur (Ugrasen's grandson), his wealth shrinking, plots with Paṇḍit Yaśpati: declare a quarter "impure" and its land rights can be "reviewed" for purification. Yaśpati's target is Gaurī — she knows herbs, walks out alone at night, speaks to the unseen at the pīpal. "Proof is manufactured, not asked for. Fear runs faster than reason."

The twist. Pratāpsen's own son falls dangerously feverish. He forbids a "Camār woman" to touch the boy, but his wife Kamalā Devī secretly summons Gaurī, who breaks the fever by dawn. Yaśpati inverts it: "The fever rose, then she came, then it broke — proof she caused it first, then feigned a cure. That is the witch's ploy."

● The conspiracy

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Gaurī — healer-midwife, branded a "ḍāin"
- Pratāpsen Ṭhākur — the resentful landholder
- Yaśpati — the ritualist who manufactures the charge
- Kamalā Devī — Pratāpsen's wife, whom Gaurī saves
- Phulesarī — leader of the women's secret circle

The charge, and the torches

The Witch's Accusation • डाइनक आरोप — card 2 of 2

Pride, not gratitude. Pratāpsen — his pride more wounded than his gratitude that his son lives — seizes the argument. An emergency assembly is called; Yaśpati declares Gaurī a witch using tantra on children, orders her barred from religious functions and her quarter's land moved from the embankment, "for purification."

The silence of the saved. Many whose children Gaurī saved sit stunned — torn between fear and gratitude. A few voices object, but Yaśpati's authority and Pratāpsen's power crush them. Torches begin to move toward the quarter.

The names return. Gaurī suddenly remembers Ratnā, Hulāsā, Jīvantī, Sukhdev — all the names Būṛhbā has carried, all whose truth stood incomplete before the great systems. She runs to the pīpal: "And if this time Būṛhbā can do nothing?"

● *Superstition made to order*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Ḍāin-charges historically tracked land disputes, enmity, and women's independence.
- Widows, the childless, or independent healers were the usual targets.
- Superstition is often consciously engineered by power and property — not spontaneous.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -87

At the Quarter's Gate

टोलाक द्वारपर *Tolāk Dvārpar*

"A torch can reach the gate, but the name won't burn inside — a quarter awake keeps its wall higher than the fire."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Directly after -88 — the torch-mob at the gate, and the women who decide to stop being silent

A living wall, and a snuffed torch

At the Quarter's Gate • टोलाक द्वारपर — card 1 of 1

"Don't come late for me." Gaurī at the pīpal: "You came late for Hulāsā, Jīvantī, Sukhdev — don't come late for me tonight." Būṛhbā cannot touch a body or quench a torch, and will not lie: "But the truth in this quarter tonight is stronger than me or you. It needs only a place to come out — many mouths, long silent."

The women at the gate. The torch-mob arrives; but Phulesarī comes first, then ten, then twenty women — a living wall holding lamps and children between the mob and the quarter. Then Kamalā Devī, Pratāpsen's own wife, runs barefoot from the haveli: "Your son, whom you watched dying, lives today by the hand you would burn." "This is men's business!" "No — this is truth's business, and truth does not listen only to men's ears."

The testimony, and the light. One by one, women of every caste step out — breech births, snakebite, deathbed vigils given free — each testimony pulling a brick from Yaśpati's mountain of lies. As he makes his last stand, his torch snuffs itself out — no wind, no water — as if blown from within. Yaśpati is displaced, not punished; in his eyes Gaurī reads a colder patience, a new plot already taking shape.

● Collective witness

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A folk form of Vācaspati's śabda-pramāṇa (–96): speaker's intent, hearer's trust, the truth of the moment.
- A lone woman's word can be doubted; many consistent testimonies break the doubt — modern law agrees.
- No illusion of complete justice: injustice does not end in one night or one victory.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -86

The Crocodile of Time

समयक गोहि *Samayak Gohi*

"Time too is a crocodile — it swallows generation on generation — but the name the village keeps, even time cannot swallow."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Būṛhbā's sight breaks its own bounds — the structural key to the whole ten-volume design

Three visions across time

The Crocodile of Time • समयक गोहि — card 1 of 2

Būṛhbā unmoored. After Yaśpati leaves for the Darbhanga court, Būṛhbā flickers between water and shadow, "in many places at once," his voice arriving broken, "filtered through many voices." He is seeing what his known world cannot contain.

1885, a dried field, a night grove. First: a port in 1885 — migrants pressing thumbprints on papers they cannot read, black water waiting below like a crocodile. Second: a rally crushed by lathis, an old land-deed trampled in the dust — "not Sukhdev's, another Sukhdev, the same story rewritten." Third: the Channā grove at night, a kabaddī played by the non-living, an ancient figure on a branch with a worn conch, feet an inch off the ground.

"That figure is me." "That figure on the branch — it is me! But I am here, before you. How am I in two places at once?" Around it stand a handless woman, a wet-haired figure, a four-faced figure, a half-open-mouthed figure, and small creatures throwing silver light — the dead of Vol-0, gathered.

● *Vol-0's dead, seen ahead*

THE FIGURES IN THE GROVE

- The ancient referee with the conch — Būṛhbā himself
- A handless woman · a wet-haired figure
- A four-faced figure · a half-open-mouthed figure
- Small creatures throwing silver light ("Rākas")
- Living children, watching, breath held

Time is a crocodile, not a river

The Crocodile of Time • समयक गोहि — card 2 of 2

The revelation. "I thought time a river I watch flow. Now I think time is a crocodile — it lives in the river but ignores its current, going back, forward, in two places at once. It eats the body, the era, the year — but it cannot eat the name. A name slips even from the crocodile's mouth and lives again on another shore."

The children are ours. The grove's children are future children who received the names — Hulāsā, Jīvantī, Sukhdev, Ratnā, Mālatī — by some unknown road. "Perhaps someone, far ahead, in an unknown tongue, will gather all these stories. Perhaps we live now for that gathering."

He sees Gaurī too. Honestly, he admits he saw Gaurī herself — in another time, another calamity, another eye like hers. The story and the vow will not end with her; they return with more names, more faces, until no name is left for the crocodile to eat, because each is already safe.

● *Why time bends here*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Deliberate non-linearity: 1885, 1934, 1977 and now leap in one kabaddī turn.
- Not mere style — the structural form of the novel's claim that injustice and witness recur.
- The reader is meant to read Vol-0 (past) and Vol-1-2 (present) in one moment.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -85

The Amil's Order

आमिलक आदेश *Āmilak Ādeś*

"The officer's order is on paper, the village's justice on the leaf — an order can be erased; a folk-verse cannot."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Yaśpati returns with the state — this time the witness-tree itself is the target

The axe, and the voice that stops it

The Amil's Order • आमिलक आदेश — card 1 of 2

The proclamation. Amil Jaysingh arrives on elephant with ten soldiers and Yaśpati. The pīpal "witness-tree" is declared a center of tantric superstition: it will be inspected, and if no supernatural power is found, felled and replaced by a royal granary. Yaśpati gloats: "You survived by women's sentiment; today I bring science and the power of the state."

The trap, either way. Jaysingh, neutral, almost kind: "If there is truly a power, my axe won't harm it. If not, you are freed of a lie." Phulesarī whispers it is a trap — lose and the tree falls, win and the burden of proof is theirs. The first axe strikes the root.

"Stop." A voice rises — neither man's nor woman's, as if from a thousand throats — and Būṛhbā's form appears, clear in daylight for the first time. "I keep the names your court's records never held. Fell this tree and you prove the state can cut down whatever it cannot understand — a proof as dangerous to your king as any superstition." Jaysingh orders the axe down.

● The state at the root

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

- Amil Jaysingh — a genuine inquirer, neither villain nor savior
- Yaśpati — returned with the state's power
- Būṛhbā — the witness, seen at last in daylight
- Gaurī — with her daughter Sāvitrī, the next sensitive heir

Yaśpati vanishes, and a new fear

The Amil's Order • आमिलक आदेश — card 2 of 2

The real motive exposed. Jaysingh sees Yaśpati's true aim was the quarter's land, not the tree, and is displeased. Both his weapons — superstition and administrative logic — collapse. Yaśpati flees into the dark forest and vanishes; the frightened soldiers do not stop him.

The power named. Humbled, Jaysingh pledges royal protection for Gaurī's land, tree and rights, and asks what power lives in the tree. Gaurī: "No tantra, no god — only this: if a person, from love, decides never to forget anyone's name, that decision can become stronger than time." His report is later found in no archive — erased, like a witness's name.

The blind spot. But Būṛhbā, alone with Gaurī, voices a fear she has never heard: "I could not see Yaśpati's end. My sight, which now reaches beyond time, stops where he entered the forest. This is unusual. This frightens me."

● Reform vs. local tradition

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "Superstition-eradication" has often destroyed marginalized communities' autonomous traditions.
- Their real functions — memory, justice, healthcare — go unseen.
- No simple answer: the state's inquirer turns from destruction to acceptance.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -84

The Silence of the Forest

जंगलक मौन *Jaṅgalak Maun*

"The forest stays silent, yet hears everything — one who reads the silence, even the forest speaks to."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The search for Yaśpati — an ending that leaves more questions than answers

A track that ends at the water

The Silence of the Forest • जंगलक मौन — card 1 of 1

The blind fog. A search party enters the dense, shunned forest where the Kamalā-Balān meets a nameless river — water unfathomably deep, home to crocodiles older and larger than the pond's. Būṛhbā is uneasy: "My sight, which now reaches beyond time, blurs at a certain part of that forest. For the first time I know there are things I, with all my witness-power, cannot see."

The vanishing prints. They find a torn piece of Yaśpati's costly silk, then footprints — clear, running, then blurring — that stop at the river's edge: no sign of entering the water, no struggle, no body. Only a half-sunk shoe, and beside it a huge mark, as of a large heavy creature lately slipping into the water. "A crocodile — no ordinary crocodile."

Sorrow cannot save a name. The village receives the news with mixed feeling — even grief, for the man Yaśpati once might have been. Būṛhbā: "His name I cannot save, for saving a name needs love, and for him I have only sorrow. One who shares, receives; one who steals names, his own name is finally safe in no hand." Far off, across the nameless river, something neither Gaurī nor Būṛhbā could ever see slowly opens its eyes and begins to wait.

● The unanswered thread

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Yaśpati's fate is deliberately left open — neither shown dead nor alive.
- Būṛhbā's witness-power is never complete; there is always a corner he cannot see.
- This limit keeps the story realist — no witness is omniscient.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -83

Sonmā the Fisherwoman

सोनमा माझिन *Sonmā Mājhin*

"The net is her hand, the river her mother — the fisherwoman catches fish, but lets the name go free."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A third memory-tradition enters — the fisherfolk's, and the concept of the "Mūl Gohi"

The primal crocodile, and forgetting as nature

Sonmā the Fisherwoman · सोनमा माझिन — card 1 of 1

The hunger reawakened. A month after Yaśpati vanishes, livestock vanish from the pond's edge — no sound, no blood, only a huge drag-mark toward the water. Būṛhbā fears what took Yaśpati has awakened, with a hunger older than his witness-power, and recalls a name the old fishermen once whispered: "Mūl Gohi" — the primal crocodile.

Sonmā's tradition. He sends Gaurī to Sonmā the fisherwoman — blind, serene, whom death itself forgot for her patience. Her ancestors, of no caste the scriptures name, held that water is a living being whose oldest, hungriest child is forgetting itself. They did not fight it: each full moon they offered flowers, fruit, milk — "I do not deny you, but I ask you for patience" — and it slept.

The offering silenced, the hunger stirring. When the new castes came, they called the offering "tantric superstition" — exactly as Yaśpati called Gaurī's herbs. The offerings stopped; the hunger grew slowly, for centuries. Sonmā's message: witness and acceptance are two different acts. To try to stop forgetting entirely is to deny that everything returns to it. The real work is that before forgetting, each name receives its due honour — kept by balance, not by war.

● A third road

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A fisher/water folk-tradition — neither Brahminical nor the Camār herbal one.
- The crocodile belongs to no sect: a deep, multi-layered folk memory.
- Witness-mode (Būṛhbā) and acceptance-mode (Sonmā) are both needed, not opposites.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT • PIVOT

Chapter -82

The First Kabaddī

पहिल कबड्डी *Pahil Kabaddī*

"Go in one breath, return in one breath, touch and come back — kabaddī teaches presence, not capture."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The birth of the name-saving ritual the reader already met in Vol-1-2's Channā grove

Witness and offering, joined in one game

The First Kabaddī • पहिल कबड्डी — card 1 of 1

Sāvitṛī's synthesis. Three years on, Sāvitṛī (16, sharper than her mother) unites two things: Būṛhbā's name-saving and Sonmā's offering. A kabaddī where each raid into the opponent's ground must carry a forgotten name — cross the line with the name and the raid is "won." Not mere play: each raid a small offering, showing the Mūl Gohi that names are brought willingly, with honour, not stolen unwilling.

The first raid. On the new-moon night she raids: "Subhāgī, who found no name in the flood, I bring your name!" Then "Yaśpati — what you became was your choice, but who you once might have been, I too won't forget." The water surges; she stands: "This is fear, not attack. It is listening."

The pact. Third, calming it: "Mūl Gohi, I do not deny you — I ask for patience, as my ancestors did. Each new moon I bring names, willingly; in return, do not steal, only accept." The water stills, as of a vast tired creature breathing easy at last. From that night the ritual becomes a sacred remembrance — and, far ahead, the Channā grove's immortal kabaddī of the dead.

● A central pivot of Vol-0

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The Vol-1–2 "name-saving kabaddī" is born here, in its first form.
- Synthesis of witness + offering + children's play into one ritual.
- Truth and justice are cumulative, inter-generational — no one tradition's property.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -81

The Shadow of Invasion

आक्रमणक छाया *Ākramaṇak Chāyā*

"A shadow grown large is not a larger fear — one steady in his name does not fear his own shadow."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The Turk army at the border — and the ritual that shields the living, not only the dead

Children at play turn an army aside

The Shadow of Invasion • आक्रमणक छाया — card 1 of 1

The army. Twenty years on, the new-moon kabaddī is woven into village life. Then a dust-cloud at the border: a Turk army advancing, Simraongarh's king fled, villages burning. Būṛhbā's sight cannot read human war clearly, but he counsels: hide the old, sick and young; an army after cities won't linger over a poor village unless it is in the way.

Kabaddī, out of season. Late that night, strayed soldiers come to loot. Indumatī hears Būṛhbā: "Play kabaddī tonight, though it is not new moon." The soldiers reach the edge and see children by lamplight, fearlessly shouting "kabaddī-kabaddī" — so ordinary and unafraid that they judge the village mad or empty, for no one in real danger plays so calmly. The captain moves on; the village is untouched.

Firmness violence cannot read. Būṛhbā: "My work was never only saving the dead. One who stands firm on his name and memory, without fear, shows a confidence violence often cannot understand, and so leaves alone." But relief is brief — Simraongarh has fallen; Mithilā's old royal order, the shadow under which every tale from Keśava to Jaysingh unfolded, is over.

● History as backdrop

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Early-14th-c. Mithilā: the Karnāṭa dynasty falls; Delhi-Sultanate raids on Tirhut.
- Local traditions keep their meaning — and sometimes their use — amid upheaval.
- Vol-0's story now enters a new historical age.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -80

The First Line of the Song

गीतक पहिल पाँति *Gītak Pahil Pānti*

"One throat lifts the song's first line, the village takes up the rest — the author is not one; the village is the maker."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The Oinwar age of Maithili letters — and the tale's first attempt to leave the oral and reach paper

The tale first set on paper — in plain speech

The First Line of the Song • गीतक पहिल पाँति — card 1 of 1

A new age of letters. The Oinwar dynasty brings stability and a new enthusiasm for literature; Maithili rises from a home-and-field language to a language of court and poetry. A wandering poet-collector, Haripati, roams gathering folk-tales, believing Maithili's real power lies in ordinary mouths, not the court's Sanskrit-laced verse.

Būṛhbā's condition. He hears the sākṣī-vṛkṣa and kabaddī story and wants to make it an epic. Būṛhbā's condition: if written, not for honour, not in the court's ornate language — that would repeat the injustice these lives suffered — but in plain village speech, as they actually spoke. Haripati agrees, and writes his first line at the root: "There was a tree, a pond, and a servant who saved names..."

Kept for a later world. He will not show it at court ("the court won't understand it"); he keeps it for a disciple, to preserve but never publish until the world can both hear and understand it. Būṛhbā: "A tale once honestly set on paper never wholly dies, however many centuries go unread." That first line will be rewritten far ahead — another age, a computer screen — under the title गोहि सभक बीच जलसमाधि.

● The novel's own question

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Oinwar rule (14th–15th c.): the golden age of Maithili literature.
- Can folk-tales of the marginalized be "high literature"? — the novel's own question.
- And the founding question of Videha and the Parallel Literature Movement.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -79

The Raid of Forgiveness

क्षमाक पारी *Kṣamāk Pārī*

"Whom you touch in kabaddī, you give a turn to return — forgiveness too is a raid, not revenge."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The kabaddī played, for the first time, for a living man's old family crime

A grandson returns what was taken

The Raid of Forgiveness • क्षमाक पारी — card 1 of 1

The burden of an inherited crime. Forty-five years on, the ritual has passed Indumatī → Śāradā → Vasundharā. An old man in torn but costly clothes comes to the quarter's gate: Raghuvīr, grandson of Pratāpsen Ṭhākur, come to seek forgiveness before dying — carrying his grandfather's sin, though "the crime was not mine."

A new kind of raid. Būṛhbā: saving names is not only keeping the dead's memory — it is giving the living a chance to set their story right while alive. That new moon, Vasundharā tells Raghuvīr: today you won't take a name, you'll be one — "Raghuvīr, who came to acknowledge his family's crime" — and we'll remember it as we do Sukhdev's and Hulāsā's. He weeps, and returns a piece of land his grandfather wrongly took.

"A step toward truth." "This cannot buy forgiveness," he says, "but it is a step toward truth." Būṛhbā comes down from the root and, for the first time, tries to lay a hand on a living man's head (staying a finger above): "Your grandfather's name I hold with sorrow; yours, from today, with respect. The difference seems small, but it holds the whole value." The village calls him not "Ṭhākur-criminal" but "Raghuvīr, who returned."

● Inherited guilt, careful mercy

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Is a descendant answerable for an ancestor's crime?
The story gives no fixed answer.
- The land-return is "a step toward truth," deliberately left incomplete.
- The ritual now has a role for the living, repentant — keeping acceptance distinct from forgiveness.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -78

Outside the Panjī

पंजीक बाहर *Panjik Bāhar*

"One whose name is not in the register is not outside the village — whom paper abandoned, the earth took as its own."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Mithilā's genealogical register enters the tale — and the question of whose names it holds

A shadow-register for the names left out

Outside the Panjī • पंजीक बाहर — card 1 of 1

The register, and its boundary. Mithilā's ancient Panjī Prabandh records the lineages, marriages and status of Brahmin and Kārṇa-Kāyastha households — a pillar of social memory, but standing only for some. Camār, fisher and other marginalized communities' names never entered it, as if they lived beyond an invisible line.

The panjīkār's question. A young, dutiful register-keeper, Yādavānand Jhā, shelters in the village when his horse falls ill, and — by coincidence on a new-moon night — is taken to the pīpal. Watching Vasundharā attach a small story to each name (Ratnā, Somar, Mālatī, Hulāsā, Sukhdev, Subhāgī, Gaurī), he is stunned: "My whole life served a register of thousands of names — that holds not one of your quarter. I never asked what kind of justice that is."

Two registers. Būṛhbā opens his voice to the outsider: "Your panjī records lineage and status; my memory records truth and love. Both are needed — but if only the first stands, half of Mithilā's memory stays in darkness." At dawn Yādavānand takes out his personal notebook and records three hours of names — a "shadow-panjī," unofficial, perhaps forever, but safe on paper as long as he lives.

● Whose memory is recorded

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The Panjī Prabandh, admired for its scholarship, historically held mainly two communities.
- Most of Mithilā — Shudra, Dalit, Adivasi — stayed outside the official memory.
- The "shadow-panjī" is a fictional but pointed answer — the counter-canon in miniature.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -77

Būr̥hbā's Silence

बूढ़बाक मौन *Būr̥hbāk Maun*

"When Būr̥hbā is silent, he speaks the most — silence too is an answer."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The witness himself begins to break — and the village learns that a witness, too, needs to be witnessed

The witness who was never witnessed

Būṛhbā's Silence • बूढ़बाक मौन — card 1 of 1

The failing voice. Ten years on, the ritual passes to Kauśalyā. Būṛhbā's voice — once clear and ready — grows slow, tired, sometimes wholly silent. One new-moon he does not come. A faint voice: "Forgive me. I can't remember the names tonight... Hulāsā, or Hulāsī... Sukhdev, or Surendra... I fear I am forgetting. The very work I was born for is slipping from me."

The question never asked. Sonmā's descendant Godāvarī asks what no one had: "You asked Būṛhbā for thousands of names over the years. Did you ever speak his own name — Budhuā — with full honour? Did you ever mourn for him, sing for him, as he did for thousands?" The truth lands: Budhuā always gave, never received.

The raid for Būṛhbā. That night the whole village — every quarter, without distinction — gathers, and plays the kabaddī for Būṛhbā's own name. One by one they retell his story: his service, his water-burial, his helplessness in the first flood, his sorrow for Yaśpati. A steady light rises. "Being a witness is not a one-way act. One-way, it empties the witness. Flowing both ways, it can go on forever."

● Reciprocity

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A portrait of "compassion fatigue" — the one-way carrier is finally depleted.
- A new annual custom: the Phāgun-full-moon "Būṛhbā-smaraṇ," retelling his story.
- Witness, justice and memory can't rest on one person — the burden must be shared.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -76

The First Lesson on the Coconut Leaf

नारिकेल पातक पहिल पाठ *Nārikel Pātak Pahil Pāṭh*

"The first lesson on the leaf — how a name is written — the leaf that holds the name, the tree that holds the history."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The origin of the Nārikel-pāt Pāṭhaśālā — a Vol-1 institution born of scarcity

Writing their own story, at last

The First Lesson on the Coconut Leaf • नारिकेल पातक पहिल पाठ — card 1 of 1

A story in another's hand. Kauśalyā's daughter Mandākinī feels a discontent: the quarter's history is now safe on paper and in the shadow-panjī, but no one in the quarter can read the letters written for them. "Our story is in another's hand, not in our own eyes." The Brahmin school takes only upper-caste boys; paper and palm-leaf are costly.

The coconut leaf. Idly drawing on a dried coconut leaf, she finds the line shows clearly — the leaf's inner-green and outer-dry layers give a natural contrast that needs no ink. In Gaṛh Nārikel, coconut trees are the one thing never scarce. She and her friends begin first lessons in the quarter's open ground — boys and girls, no caste bar (even poor Brahmin families send children).

Both guardians. Būṛhbā: "This is the next step of our whole story — Hulāsā couldn't get her name on the copy; your children will write their own." But when Mandākinī asks if the ritual is now needed less, he answers: "Writing and witnessing are two acts. What is written can be burned or torn; what is remembered with love, mouth to mouth, is harder to destroy. You need both — as guardians of each other."

● Scarcity as parent of innovation

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Local free material (coconut leaf) makes education accessible — historically real.
- The Vol-1 institution "Nārikel-pāt Pāṭhaśālā" gets its origin here.
- Modern institutions are the continuity of old need, not sudden invention.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -75

The First Rebellion of Reason

तर्कक पहिल विद्रोह *Tarkak Pahil Vidroh*

"The one who asked did not defeat the teacher, but woke him — reason's first rebellion, knowledge's first dawn."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The school's own fruit — a literate generation now questions its oldest tradition

Doubt, and the mark by the water

The First Rebellion of Reason • तर्कक पहिल विद्रोह — card 1 of 1

The doubter. Educated at a town school in logic and mathematics, Mandākinī's great-grandson Viśvanāth returns full of questions. After a kabaddī he tells the guardian: "I no longer believe in this game. Būṛhbā, the Mūl Gohi — perhaps our ancestors' imagination, not the real reason we survived." The new-moon crowd shrinks for the first time in centuries.

Būṛhbā's patience. Būṛhbā is not saddened: "He is not wrong to ask — that is the very work Vācaspati, Udayana, Gaṅgeśa did. But I know one thing he does not yet." Months later, livestock vanish again from the nameless water while the ritual is weak. Viśvanāth goes to prove a natural cause — and finds the same huge, unexplainable mark by the water.

Respect without belief. He returns to the pīpal: "To reject a tradition that has kept the village safe for years — without an alternative safeguard — isn't wisdom, it's arrogance." Būṛhbā: "Accept honestly what you saw, then decide for yourself." Viśvanāth returns to the kabaddī: "I don't fully understand it, but I'll continue with respect until I find a better answer."

● Science and tradition

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A universal tension: education's rational outlook vs. experience-based folk-knowledge.
- Neither side wholly right — the doubt is valid, the forest's evidence undeniable.
- "Faith and respect aren't the same, but both can do the same work."



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -74

The Tree's Disease

गाछक रोग *Gāchak Rog*

"Tend one leaf's disease, or it spreads through the tree — a village's sickness too begins with one silence."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The witness-tree sickens — and Būṛhbā admits he too rests on a physical basis

All quarters heal the witness-tree

The Tree's Disease • गाछक रोग — card 1 of 1

The sickness. The centuries-old pīpal grows old; its northern branch yellows and dark wet spots mark the bark. Kedar (the ritual now given by merit to women and men alike) asks if it affects Būṛhbā. "Yes. I am bound to this tree as your body to your breath. Perhaps its life is now completing." The village panics: if the tree dies, who holds the names?

Old knowledge and new. Kedar — heir to both Viśvanāth's reason and his grandmothers' reverence — brings a town tree-doctor: pests are hollowing the bark, curable with patient care. Every quarter works together — Sonmā's line teaches the traditional root-treatment, the tree-doctor the modern method, and the coconut-leaf-school children keep a daily health-record of each branch. Month by month, the tree heals.

Fragility acknowledged. Būṛhbā: "I kept reminding you no body is immortal — but I forgot that I too am bound to a body, this tree. Being a witness is not immortality, only a long, fragile thread needing constant care." The village's new duty: reverence is not enough; the tree needs practical, continuous care. "To serve Būṛhbā is not only to save names, but to let the tree live."

● Caring for a living monument

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A living monument needs not only reverence but continuous, practical care.
- Best done by combining modern knowledge (tree science) and traditional (herbal).
- Immortality, however vast, is never fully burden-free.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -73

Mohan's Melody

मोहनक धुन *Mohanak Dhun*

"The flute's melody melts into the air, yet the ear keeps it — a tune that touches the heart is not forgotten."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Grief turned to art — the origin of the chapter-opening folk-song device of Vol-1

A name that becomes a sound

Mohan's Melody · मोहनक धुन — card 1 of 1

The loss. In Śīlāvatī's time the quarter's finest musician is Mohan (Somar's seventh-generation descendant). One winter his four-year-old daughter Rādhikā dies of fever, her small hand gripping his finger. For weeks his house is silent — no weeping, no music.

The melody. One evening he takes his drum to the pīpal and plays a faint, sorrowful rhythm — neither wholly dirge nor lullaby. "I want her name to be not just a word, but a sound, so that hearing it, a heart knows this name was full of love." Śīlāvatī asks him to tie melodies to the ritual: a small tune for each story — Hulāsā's tender and breaking mid-way, Sukhdev's slow then suddenly still, Ratnā's warm and motherly.

Transformation, not disrespect. "Is it disrespect to turn her grief into music?" Būṛhbā: "I saved names with words, you with melody — both give love a form that can cross time. Your grief was not disrespected; it was transformed — and transformation, for memory, is the opposite of disrespect." Rādhikā's melody opens each new-moon ritual — a reminder that the game is about love, not competition.

● Grief into folk-song

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Transforming personal grief into art — a common origin of folk-music.
- Far ahead this becomes the "adhyāyārambha lokgīt" — a song opening each chapter.
- This chapter is itself opened by such a song in the source — the device's own origin-tale.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -72

The Marriage Witness

विवाहक साक्षी *Vivāhak Sākṣī*

"In marriage the fire is witness, the village is witness, the name is witness — whose wedding the village saw, their vow is on the leaf."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A cross-caste marriage echoing Gaṅgeśa and Mālatī — but this time celebrated openly

A new hope, not a new tragedy

The Marriage Witness • विवाहक साक्षी — card 1 of 1

The echo of Gaṅgeśa and Mālatī. Śīlāvatī's granddaughter Anurādhā and a Brahmin-quarter youth, Gopīnāth — childhood friends from the coconut-leaf school — wish to marry. Anurādhā: "My ancestors know how Gaṅgeśa married Mālatī, and how society forgot that marriage, remembering only his scripture. I don't want my story forgotten like that."

The question the pandit can't answer. Gopīnāth's father, a respected pandit, first opposes it. At the pīpal Būṛhbā asks: "Every great tragedy of this village was tied to the line drawn between caste and class. Why raise that line again for your son, when he himself wants to break it?" "I fear what people will say." "What people say changes with time; the names I hold do not. Your choice — add a new tragedy to that list, or a new hope?"

The whole village celebrates. The pandit agrees; both quarters prepare together. At the pīpal, Mohan's descendants compose a festive melody without a shadow of sorrow — a first for the tradition. Būṛhbā: "I was witness to Gaṅgeśa and Mālatī though not present; today I witness yours directly, and vow your love-story will be held with the same honour — a tale not of sorrow but of joy."

● How change actually comes

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Social change in caste is never sudden — it is cumulative, inter-generational.
- Explicitly closes the circle opened by Gaṅgeśa and Mālatī (–91).
- What was once suppressed and forgotten can, at last, be accepted openly and with joy.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -71

The Night of the Epidemic

महामारीक राति *Mahāmārik Rāti*

"The epidemic took the body, not the song — the night the village stayed awake together saved the dawn."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- An epidemic overwhelms the old method — and forces a new way to remember the many

When the dead are too many to name one by one

The Night of the Epidemic • महामारीक राति — card 1 of 1

The plague. Ten years after Anurādhā and Gopīnāth's marriage, a disease comes from the east — high fever, black lumps, death within three days. Seventeen die in one week. Anurādhā's daughter Vimalā despairs: the kabaddī is monthly, but with so many names, how can each get its story, its melody, its time, when death comes so fast?

Two answers, old and new. The healer (the tree-doctor's disciple) brings measures he can't fully explain but whose effect shows — quarantine the sick, boil water, burn the dead's belongings. And Vimalā and Būṛhbā create "collective remembrance": each dawn the survivors call all the night's dead in one voice, without individual detail but with full honour.

Numbers are forgotten; names are not. As effective as the old way: "The depth of love is not measured by the number of words." A third of the village dies, from every quarter. Asked how many names she held, Vimalā wonders — thousands? Būṛhbā: "I never counted, and never will. If number matters, I become its slave and each name's uniqueness is lost. Numbers are forgotten; names are not."

● *A tradition that bends to survive*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The challenge every memory-tradition faces: too many dead for individual remembrance.
- "Collective remembrance" mirrors real mourning-forms after epidemics and disasters.
- A tradition survives by keeping its core feeling while making its form flexible.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT • KEYSTONE

Chapter -70

The Planting of the Channā Grove

चन्ना गाछीक रोपाई *Channā Gāchīk Ropāī*

"A newly planted tree gives no shade in a day — be patient; the root takes hold first, the leaves after."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The origin of the Channā grove — the central place of the whole novel

A living library of names

The Planting of the Channā Grove · चन्ना गाछीक रोपाई — card 1 of 1

A tree for every memory. After the epidemic, Vimalā begins a new tradition: for every great sorrow or hope, plant a tree — for the epidemic's dead, for Hulāsā and Jīvantī, Sukhdev and Ratnā, Gaṅgeśa and Mālatī — until a whole grove rings the pīpal. Būṛhbā asks: which tree? A travelled farmer suggests the Channā — fast-growing, deep-shading, its leaves rustling faintly even at night, "because its rustle never fully stills, just as memory never fully stills."

The grove grows. Tree by tree, year by year, each generation adds one for its new memory — even Yaśpati's (smallest, at the very edge, a mark of complex memory). A dense, shady grove forms, mysteriously alive at night as if each tree whispers its story. The village calls it "Channā gāchī," and it becomes a permanent part of the village's geography.

One tree, then a whole grove. Būṛhbā feels newly extended — bound now not to one tree but to every root. "A single tree can sicken or fall; a whole grove is never wholly destroyed — always some root survives. You have given me, unknowing, a body safer than one tree." The grove becomes the village's holiest place — the pīpal its heart, a living library read not by letters but by reverence and memory.

● Where the novel is rooted

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The origin of Vol-1-2's central site — the Channā gāchī.
- Memory-tree-planting is a real practice across many cultures.
- Memory concentrated in one place is fragile; distributed and collective, it endures.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -69

The Tale of the Elephant and the Crocodile

गज-ग्राहक कथा *Gaj-Grāhak Kathā*

"Elephant in the water, crocodile in the water — the fight lasts years — but the hand that calls the name brings deliverance."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Gajendra-mokṣa meets the local Mūl Gohi — the origin of the "gaj-grāh" motif

Prayer and effort, never one alone

The Tale of the Elephant and the Crocodile • गज-ग्राहक कथा — card 1 of 1

The grip. In Sūryanāth's time the temple elephant Gajarāj wades into the pond's deep part, and a huge crocodile — which had not touched an animal for ages, thanks to Sonmā's offering — grips his leg. The crowd freezes. An old pandit cries: "This is Gajendra-mokṣa! Gajendra struggled for ages and could not free himself by strength — only when he abandoned all ego and called on God was he saved. We must pray!"

Both, together. Būṛhbā: "The pandit is right — but prayer alone is not enough, just as logic alone is not enough. We need both." The village does two things at once — loud collective prayer (the Gajendra verse and the ritual's own call to the Mūl Gohi), while strong youths, with rope and bamboo, patiently work the gripped leg free from an angle, without directly challenging the crocodile.

The grip loosens. After long struggle the crocodile suddenly releases and vanishes into the deep, as if it knew this fight was not its own. Gajarāj reaches shore, weak but alive. Būṛhbā: "The ancient tale and my local tradition are one truth in two languages — freedom from a grip, of water or of mind, never comes alone."

● Strength and surrender

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Joins the Bhāgavata's Gajendra-mokṣa with the local Mūl Gohi tradition.
- Great classical and local oral traditions often speak one deep truth in two languages.
- "Gaj-grāh" — met in Vol-1 as a metaphor for modern grips — gets its literal origin here.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -68

The Court's First Hearing

अदालतक पहिल तारीख *Adālatak Pahil Tārikh*

"Date upon date, but justice is on the leaf — the court asks after the body; the village keeps the name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A formal court arrives — and with it the slow hunger that becomes the "court's ghost"

The injustice of the date

The Court's First Hearing · अदालतक पहिल तारीख — card 1 of 1

The new court. In Kamalinī's time a formal court — brick building, appointed judge, written law — replaces the old informal assembly. First welcomed, for written law gives all equal rights regardless of caste. But filing is easy and verdicts come slowly: a simple dispute that took a day now hangs for years, postponed on technicalities.

The hunger called "tārīkh." The poor farmer Bhola waits three years on "next date," wasting workdays. An old lawyer tells him: "This court has a hunger we call the date — made of paper, but it eats a person's time, patience, sometimes a whole life." Būṛhbā recalls Sukhdev dying in the water-clock queue: the court looks different, but the root problem is the same — time made an obstacle to justice, not its tool.

A new kind of ghost. Būṛhbā: "This system, for all its good intent, is birthing a ghost made not of one person's injustice but of the whole system's slowness — the very soul of delay." Kamalinī can't change the law, but resolves to give every villager caught in it help and company. Bhola wins after five years — his field long ruined, his children grown hungry.

● Justice delayed

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A contemporary problem in historical dress: procedural delay as denial of justice.
- Plants the seed of Vol-1-2's "court's ghost" — deemed worse than the crocodile.
- Institutional injustice can arise from structural failings, not personal malice.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -67

The Call of the Foreign Land

परदेशक पुकार *Pardeśak Pukār*

"The foreign land gives wealth and takes the name — one the village remembers is not lost even abroad."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The first recruiter at the gate — indenture, and memory across distance

How memory reaches beyond the grove

The Call of the Foreign Land • परदेशक पुकार — card 1 of 1

The recruiter. In Jānakī's time a recruiter comes to the gate — sweet tongue, shiny clothes, a bundle of papers: "Work abroad! Three-year contract, good wages, then home!" Bhola's grandson Rāmsevak, seeing his family's hardship, presses his thumbprint on a paper he cannot read.

A token at the root. His mother fears: thousands of miles away, how will his name be saved? Būṛhbā admits he does not know how far his witness reaches. Jānakī fills the gap: for everyone who leaves, a small stone or thread at the pīpal root, and each new-moon their name is called — alive or dead, news or none — so the name stays safe here, wherever the body is. The custom "pardeśak pukār" is born.

Only silence. Rāmsevak never returns; no letter, no message, only silence. His mother comes each new-moon to touch his token. "Is my son alive or dead?" Būṛhbā, honestly: "I don't know; I won't lie. But I vow to hold his name, alive or dead, returning or not. Distance cannot erase a name — only lengthen uncertainty." The tradition first learns to think beyond its own geography.

● *Memory across distance*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An early signal of colonial "girmitiya" indenture — many taken abroad, never to return.
- How can witness work across geographical distance? — the question raised.
- It echoes forward into Vol-1-2's migrant-worker and digital-scam strands.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -66

The Women's Night-Assembly

स्त्री सभक राति-सभा *Strī Sabhak Rāti-Sabhā*

"Where women's voices gather, the darkness thins — the night-assembly breaks the dark even without a lamp."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The chaunki-circle, informal for generations, at last takes a formal shape

Out of the chaunki's dark, into the light

The Women's Night-Assembly • स्त्री सभक राति-सभा — card 1 of 1

The court's blind spot. In Sulochanā's time the new court fails women — domestic disputes, dowry, inheritance, a husband's abuse go unheard, or are judged from far outside women's experience. Padmā, beaten for years, seeks justice; the judge waves it off: "A domestic matter — settle it outside court." She returns unheard.

Formalizing the circle. Būṛhbā recalls Ratnā, Gaurī, Phulesarī — women who gathered after dusk on the chaunki to share knowledge, justice, strategy, because the official assembly would not hear them. "That tradition never ended, only stayed informal. Perhaps now is the time to make it formal." Sulochanā founds the "women's night-assembly," parallel to the court.

One voice. In Padmā's case, every village woman testifies — the bruises seen, the weeping heard. The husband's family denies, but when the whole women's society speaks in one voice, they must yield: reform, or Padmā is free to leave with the village's support. Būṛhbā: "Women's knowledge and justice now step out of the chaunki's darkness into the village's light, standing with their own name."

● A parallel justice

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- When formal, male-dominated justice fails women, parallel women's systems arise.
- A strong, positive culmination of the chaunki-circle (the "seed of the witch," -91).
- What fear once called "ḍāin" becomes, at last, a recognized institution of justice.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -65

The Procession of the Fake Ghost

नकली भूतक जुलूस *Naklī Bhūtak Julūs*

"A fake ghost frightens only one who has forgotten his name — one steady in his name laughs at the ghost's procession."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The first misuse of Būṛhbā's name — and the test that separates a true witness from a fraud

"A true witness never asks for money"

The Procession of the Fake Ghost • नकली भूतक जुलूस — card 1 of 1

The imitation. The fame of the ritual has spread — and with fame comes imitation. A wandering man, Kālīcaran, tours nearby villages calling himself "Būṛhbā's real spirit," leading night processions with hired "ghosts" (cloth-wrapped, lamp-bearing assistants) and extorting money for a "special pūjā" to save names. A cheated family comes to meet the real Būṛhbā.

Not a failure of the tradition. Būṛhbā: "Whatever is true and valuable, someone opportunistic will find profit in imitating. This is not my tradition's failure — it is a sad byproduct of its success."

The simple test. "There is a clear line between a true witness and a false claim. A true witness never asks for money, never profits by selling fear. It asks only for a name, and gives love and memory in return — nothing else." Harinandan spreads the test; Kālīcaran's racket collapses and he vanishes. The tale survives as a warning: one who claims to witness but asks for money is a thief.

● A test against exploitation

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- When a respected tradition grows famous, opportunists arise to exploit the credulous.
- "A true witness never asks for money" — a practical, universal principle.
- The title appears directly in Vol-1; its origin is here.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -64

Sukhdev's Requital

सुखदेवक बदला *Sukhdevak Badlā*

"Revenge is a fire — it first burns your own hand — one who chose forgiveness saved the village."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The land-injustice begun with Sukhdev (-92) reaches its opposite outcome

Requital as justice, not revenge

Sukhdev's Requital • सुखदेवक बदला — card 1 of 1

History returns. Under a new land-survey, a zamindar, Raghubīr Singh, claims the Camār quarter's land — as Ugrasen once did in Sukhdev's time. But Campāvati does not panic: "I have a weapon Sukhdev's time did not."

Centuries of accumulated capacity. She goes to the archive for Yādavānand's "shadow-panjī" — recording the quarter's land-rights with dates and witnesses from Somar and Ratnā's time. The coconut-leaf-school's young lawyers prepare the case; the women's night-assembly unites the village in public support; Haripati's old book is entered as evidence. Raghubīr Singh, with no solid proof, loses. The judge: "Such a detailed, consistent record is proof of the village's own historical consciousness."

No single miracle. Būṛhbā: "Today I saw Sukhdev's requital — not as revenge, but as justice. It happened by generations of accumulated effort — Yādavānand's notebook, Haripati's book, Mandākinī's school, Sulochanā's night-assembly — all bearing fruit at once. No struggle is in vain, if its memory stays alive."

● The power of accumulated capacity

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The land-injustice opened by Sukhdev's tragedy (–92) reaches its opposite outcome.
- Literacy, documentation, legal knowledge, women's unity — built over centuries.
- Long-term social investment protects justice better than individual heroism.



The First Page of the Printing Press

छापाखानाक पहिल पन्ना *Chāpākhānāk Pahil Pannā*

"The first printed page — a name is now hard to erase — what is printed, the whole village will read."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Print arrives — and Būṛhbā decides the still-growing story must wait

The story that is not yet finished

The First Page of the Printing Press • छपाखानाक पहिल पन्ना — card 1 of 1

The marvel. A printing press opens in the nearby town, printing in Maithili and Hindi — a machine making hundreds of identical pages in a day. Haripati Gaṅgādhara (the poet's seventh-generation descendant), now a writer-publisher, has inherited the secret palm-leaf book of Būṛhbā's story and rushes to the village: "Now I can print it! It can never be lost, however many centuries pass!"

Būṛhbā's caution. After a long silence: "If printed today, it is still incomplete. Subhāgī, Yaśpati, Padmā, Rāmsevak — many names are still being added. To print now would close the story in a fixed form while it is still alive, still growing. Perhaps the time for its printing has not yet come."

Kept for the right time. Gaṅgādhara understands, and vows that he and his descendants will preserve the book until the story is truly complete — then some descendant will print it for the whole world. Meanwhile he prints the village's smaller books — the school's curriculum, the night-assembly's rules, the farming lore — but Būṛhbā's whole story stays oral, alive.

● A story aware of itself

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Print's arrival — a revolution for Indian-language literature.
- The story knows it is not yet complete, and chooses to keep growing.
- An early echo of the eventual publication of गोहि सभक बीच जलसमाधि itself.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -62

Waiting for Relief

राहतक प्रतीक्षा *Rāhatak Pratīkṣā*

"Eyes tire watching the road for relief, yet the village stands — where all watch together, even waiting is lighter."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A colonial-era famine — and the difference between waiting for aid and organizing oneself

Witness and waiting are two different things

Waiting for Relief • राहतक प्रतीक्षा — card 1 of 1

The famine. Under British rule the rains fail utterly. Officials announce relief — grain centers, work-for-grain, medical aid — but the nearest center is twenty kos away and registration so complex that starving families weaken before they can enrol. Sāvitrīdevī: "Help is coming, but it is twenty kos away, and our children are hungry today."

Organizing instead. Būṛhbā: "Waiting, without effort, is itself a kind of death." On the night-assembly's leadership, the village pools a shared grain-store by each family's capacity; the school's youth keep account for equal distribution; a communal kitchen runs by the Channā grove. Sonmā's line teaches new fishing; Ratnā's line identifies wild edible roots. When the relief team arrives three months later, not one life has been lost — while villages that waited suffered greatly.

The lesson proved. "We did not refuse your help," Sāvitrīdevī tells the officer, "we only refused to believe we were helpless without it." Būṛhbā: "To live in memory, I save names; but to live in life, you must act, not wait."

● Self-reliance and mutual aid

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Colonial famine-relief, orderly on paper, often failed through delay and distance.
- Centuries of accumulated social capital kept the community alive without outside aid.
- Waiting without effort is not justice — only delay.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -61

The Comet in the Sky

आकाशक पुच्छलतारा *Ākāśak Pucchaltārā*

"The comet comes and goes; the village stays in place — what shines above does not change the name below."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- An omen in the sky — and the calm alertness that sets up a three-fold crisis

The star is a sign, not a cause

The Comet in the Sky • आकाशक पुच्छलतारा — card 1 of 1

The omen. One autumn night an unprecedented long-tailed star creeps across the sky. Villagers, never having seen a comet, are afraid; an old astrologer cries that it foretells a king's death, war, famine, or epidemic. Rudranāth asks Būṛhbā what it means.

A balanced answer. "My sight is sometimes clear, sometimes fogged. Tonight I feel a vague dread of a hard time near. But the star itself brings no calamity — it moves by its own law, unaware of human fate. Any calamity will come from the earth's own causes — water, fire, or disease. The star is only a sign to stay alert, not a cause." Rudranāth orders every quarter to secure grain, keep water clean, report any illness.

Three forms at once. The comet fades after three weeks, but the air grows strangely heavy — as if unseen cloud, fire and water hover together. Būṛhbā, touching each tree of the grove, whispers to the Mūl Gohi: "A great cycle is turning again, as in Hulāsā's and Sukhdev's time — but this time, perhaps, all at once, in three forms."

● Superstition vs. dismissal

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The comet, read as ill omen across many cultures, sets up the story's next stage.
- A balanced path: the star is not guilty, but alertness is warranted.
- It opens a three-fold crisis — fire, flood, epidemic — the village's hardest test.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -60

The Night of Fire

अगिनक राति *Aginak Rāti*

"Fire took the house, not the name — from the ashes of the night that burned, a new hearth was lit."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The first of the three crises — and the grove itself in danger

Memory and organization against the flames

The Night of Fire • अग्निक राति — card 1 of 1

The blaze. A month after the comet, a wind-blown lamp falls on dry straw by the grain-store. Fierce wind carries the fire house to house, quarter to quarter — ten Brahmin-quarter houses, five Kāyastha, part of the temple. Worst, it moves toward the Channā grove.

The human chain. Indrāṇī runs to the grove. Būṛhbā, fear and firmness both: "My power is of memory, not fire. But I recall a way — the twin pond. Turn the water toward the grove." The night-assembly forms a human chain, pond to grove, buckets hand to hand. At the pīpal's root the fire slows — every leaf of the grove seeming to move together, confusing the flames, making them lose their way.

Whose work it was. By dawn the fire is out; a quarter of the houses burned, but the grove survives and the pīpal is unharmed. "Did you stop the fire yourself?" "No. I only knew where the water was. The rest was your hands, your organization, your courage. Memory and organization together can challenge even nature's most terrible power." The village rebuilds with new fire-safety rules.

● Collective action

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The human water-chain is a real, historically effective emergency technique.
- Būṛhbā gives direction; the real work is human collective effort.
- Witness-power is not a substitute for human action, but its complement.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -59

The Second Flood

दोसर बाढ़ि *Dosar Bāṛhi*

"The second flood knows the old path, yet gives a new wound — a village that has borne a flood learns to read the water."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The second of the comet's three crises — and the payoff of accumulated learning

The same flood, a village that learned to read water

The Second Flood • दोसर बाढ़ि — card 1 of 1

The angrier water. Three months after the fire, unrelenting rain bursts the Kamalā-Balān again. The brick embankment — strengthened since Sukhdev's time — trembles. Būṛhbā recalls the first flood in Gaurī's time, when seven died: "Today you are more prepared. But this water seems angrier."

The warning that came first. Indrāṇī reinforces weak sections with sandbags, moves the old and young to high ground beforehand, readies boats and ropes. When the embankment breaks south of the Camār quarter, the warning-system has already fired — bell, drum-melody, pre-arranged signals. Mohan's descendants play the "danger-melody" every villager has known from childhood; each family runs to its pre-assigned safe spot.

Zero deaths. By dawn the water recedes — houses washed away, fields ruined, but not a single life lost, for the first time in village memory in a great flood. Indrāṇī: "Today I repaid Gaurī's debt." Būṛhbā: "This is my greatest gift — to see my memory become, in your hands, a knowledge that saves lives, not only names."

● Early warning saves lives

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Early-warning systems and pre-set evacuation, however simple, cut disaster mortality sharply.
- Measured against the first flood (–89): seven dead then, none now.
- Clear, measurable proof of accumulated institutional learning.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -58

The Third Calamity

तेसर बिपत्ति *Tesar Bipatti*

"The first calamity teaches, the third ripens — one who has fallen thrice stands firm the fourth time."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The comet's third prophecy fulfilled — a water-borne disease closes the triad

Three knowledges against one disease

The Third Calamity • तेसर बिपत्ति — card 1 of 1

The disease. Stagnant pools remain after the flood, and within two weeks a new illness — stomach pain, severe diarrhea, rapid dehydration — spreads among children and elders. Indrāṇī, having fought fire and flood, faces the third test: "I fear whether my people can bear this much."

Modern, traditional, social. The healer (trained at the town's medical school) sees it spreads from dirty water: boil water, and make a salt-sugar solution against dehydration. Sonmā's and Ratnā's lines identify which herbs stop diarrhea and which sources are safe. The women's night-assembly enforces hygiene house to house. In three weeks the disease is controlled — some die, but not devastatingly.

The test, not the end. "I thought the comet came bringing our end." Būṛhbā: "It came bringing a test — to see how strong centuries of accumulated knowledge, organization, and love had become. So strong that three calamities together could not break it." Remembered as "the year of three calamities," with the refrain: "They died in calamity, but the village did not die."

● Multi-dimensional response

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Closes the comet's triad — fire, flood, and water-borne disease (epidemiologically accurate).
- Multi-layered disaster needs modern science, traditional knowledge, and organization together.
- A practical demonstration of Vol-O's message: witness and community action both.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -57

The Sahib's Notebook

साहेबक नोटबुक *Sāhebak Noṭbuk*

"What the sahib wrote is his account — what the village remembers is the village's truth."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A colonial scholar records the village — and gets it wrong

The story told from outside, and from within

The Sahib's Notebook • साहेबक नोटबुक — card 1 of 1

The ethnographer. An English scholar, Mr. Henry Thompson, hears of the famous "year of three calamities" and comes with notebook and pen, questioning every elder — who Būṛhbā is, what kabaddī means, the origin of the Channā grove. He leaves with a thick book, promising publication in England's scholarly society.

The distortion. A year later a copy reaches the village: Būṛhbā is "a relic of primitive superstition," the grove "backward villagers' ghost-worship," the kabaddī "barbaric custom," the night-assembly "local women's uncontrolled behavior." Nandkiśor is furious. Būṛhbā: "He heard my story, but his eye, his language, his viewpoint were not the village's — and in that lens, whatever is unfamiliar looks backward or barbaric."

Definition from within. "Protest, yes — but more important, preserve my own story, in my own language, from my own viewpoint. Stopping outsiders from misunderstanding is not in my hand; understanding ourselves rightly, and keeping our truth in our own words, is." Nandkiśor writes a firm letter (no reply comes) and more carefully compiles the village's own account of itself.

● Self-representation

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A real tendency of colonial ethnography — good intent, but portraying local ways as "primitive."
- A community must write its own story, in its own language and viewpoint.
- This principle is the founding inspiration of the Videha Parallel Literature Movement.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -56

The Call of Freedom

स्वाधीनताक पुकार *Svādhīnatāk Pukār*

"The call that reached village after village was not of one throat — freedom too is a shared song."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The freedom movement reaches the village — and its old arts of organization prove useful

A new kind of kabaddī

The Call of Freedom • स्वाधीनताक पुकार — card 1 of 1

The wave arrives. The freedom movement intensifies across India — salt-satyagraha, the foreign-cloth boycott, non-cooperation — and reaches Garh Nārikel by newspaper and traveller. A young freedom-fighter, Rāmāśray, calls the village to join. Lakṣmīdevī fears British reprisal after so many calamities.

Būṛhbā's counsel. "One who stands for his self-respect, his name — whether he wins or loses — is worth remembering." On the night-assembly's leadership, women burn foreign cloth; youth spin thread and weave khadi; elders carry the movement's word to every house with the kabaddī's discipline and patience.

Firm, nonviolent resistance. When a police squad comes to arrest the activists, the village mounts peaceful but firm resistance — by satyagraha, without violence or retreat. Rāmāśray and some youth are jailed, then freed and welcomed as heroes. Būṛhbā: "A new kind of kabaddī — every villager playing an invisible opponent for their self-respect, and without losing a name, saving all the names."

● Organization applied to politics

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Centuries of community organizing apply to a large political struggle.
- Gandhian satyagraha resonates with the village's own tradition (cf. facing Jaysingh, –85).
- Local and national struggles are driven by the same fundamental values.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -55

The Dawn of Freedom

स्वतंत्रताक भोर *Svatantratāk Bhor*

"Dawn came, but not at once to every courtyard — one whose name is free sees the dawn first."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- India becomes free — and the village enters a new age

Not the answer, but the right to ask

The Dawn of Freedom • स्वतंत्रताक भोर — card 1 of 1

The tricolor rises. On the morning of 15 August, a new sun rises over India and Gaṛh Nārikel. The tricolor is hoisted at the square for the first time; the school-taught children sing the anthem from every throat. Rāmāśray, once jailed and now the village's leader: "We are free, but freedom is only a beginning. The real work — making it meaningful — remains."

Centuries in one silence. Viśvambharnāth asks Būṛhbā what he feels, from Vācaspati's time to the end of British rule. "Each of hundreds of names asked a question — is justice possible? dignity? equality? Freedom's dawn is not the answer, but the recognition of the right to ask. A nation ready to hear its citizens' questions — that is what Hulāsā, Sukhdev, Ratnā never had."

A new hope, a new struggle. "Freedom is not the end of struggle but a new form of it. The roots of caste, gender, poverty do not uproot with the nation's freedom. My work is never complete. But today I feel a new hope whose name I never knew — freedom." That night the village gathers spontaneously to tell every lost name the news: "What you suffered was not in vain."

● *Freedom as a beginning*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Independence placed within the story-cycle, carefully, as a phase not an ending.
- Caste, gender, and poverty injustice do not end automatically with national freedom.
- No single victory, however historic, is the end of the whole tale.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -54

The End of Zamindari

जमींदारीक अन्त *Zamīndārik Ant*

"The land's owner changed, the soil did not — the field knows the name of the one who ploughs it."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Land reform closes the land-justice arc begun with Sukhdev (-92)

Sukhdev's requital, made permanent

The End of Zamindari · जमींदारीक अन्त — card 1 of 1

The law. The new government abolishes zamindari — the centuries-old system under whose shadow the tales from Ugrasen to Raghubīr Singh unfolded. The last zamindar family (Pratāpsen's descendants) surrenders most of its land, much of it distributed to landless and Camār-quarter families. Sukhdev's land, once seized by Ugrasen, returns to his descendants with permanent legal rights.

Just, if not universally welcome. Būrbhā: "Today Sukhdev's requital takes legal, permanent form — to see injustice, however old, corrected given enough generations, patience, and struggle, is the meaning of my whole existence." But Pratāpsen's descendants grow bitter; old land-based bonds strain. "The question is not whether change makes everyone happy, but whether it is just."

Roots, through change. The new generation, schooled, seeks work beyond land — jobs, business, the city. "The village has always changed; no moment was ever unchangeable. My work is not to stop change, but to remember the name and the cost tied to every change — so the village, however it changes, never wholly forgets its roots."

● Land reform

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Zamindari abolition — uneven and incomplete, which the chapter does not hide.
- It permanently affected land-relations and caste-based power in rural India.
- The final, legal culmination of the land-justice arc from -92 and -64.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -53

The First Electric Lamp

बिजलीक पहिल दीप *Bijlik Pahil Dīp*

"The electric lamp is lit, but don't forget the old lamp's oil — let new light come, but not erase the old name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Nehru-era development reaches the village — road, electricity, and new hope

New light, old wick

The First Electric Lamp • बिजलीक पहिल दीप — card 1 of 1

The wires arrive. Under the Five-Year Plan, a paved road and electric wires reach Gaṛh Nārikel for the first time. When the square's first bulb suddenly lights, the whole village freezes — its yellow glow quivering on the pond, on faces, on the coconut leaves. Some fold hands, some lift children to see, some quietly clutch the old clay lamp they have kept for years.

No light feels old. Harivaṃśa — of the generation holding the old cord in one hand and the new age in the other — asks if the electric light makes Būṛhbā's conch-lamp feel old. "No form of light feels old to me. What has not changed is bringing light into darkness, be it lamp or electricity."

Light that shows the name. "But as much light as a lamp gives, it casts that much shadow. If in this new light people forget their old names and faces, it is more dangerous than darkness. Good light is that which shows the name, not that which dazzles it away." Harivaṃśa keeps the old clay lamp in his bag, its oil never fully dry — for relighting a dried wick takes long.

● Modernization without erasure

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Development arrives — and with it the question of what it dazzles away.
- Progress is welcome; forgetting the old name in its glare is the danger.
- Keep the old lamp's oil from drying, even as the new light comes.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -52

The Border's Call

सीमाक पुकार *Sīmāk Pukār*

"Cannon sounded at the border, the sohar sounded in the village — a village that bore war did not let go of the name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The 1962 and 1965 wars call the village youth to the border

A name knows no border

The Border's Call • सीमाक पुकार — card 1 of 1

The youth depart. War-drums sound at distant borders — first from China, then Pakistan — reaching the village by radio and market talk. Youths whose hands were on plough and net now don uniform. Rāmāśray's grandson Vijaykumār joins the army; on his departure night his mother cannot hold back the farewell-lament that rises on its own from the throat.

The waiting courtyard. A deep silence settles in any house that sent a son — neither full fear nor full pride, only waiting. The night-assembly remembers those youths' names separately, and Būṛhbā keeps each name as if it stood, an invisible sentinel, on the distant front. In 1965 Vijaykumār is wounded and returns with a weakened arm.

The body falls, the name returns. "Those who didn't return, their names I hold with equal honour — on some Himalayan peak, some desert. A name knows no border: the body falls where the war is, but the name returns where there are people to remember it." Vijaykumār tells the children his border-tales, always ending with the name of the comrade who could not return — kept alive on the village's tongue.

● *The name outlasts the body*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The 1962 and 1965 wars enter the village through its sons.
- Būṛhbā holds every border-going name, returned or not, with equal honour.
- The crocodile can take the body, not the name — proved again, far from home.



The Seed of the Green Revolution

हरित क्रान्तिक बीया *Harit Krāntik Bīyā*

"New seed yields more, but old seed knows the soil — a seed that saves the village sows not hunger, but the name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- New seeds and chemical fertilizer transform the village's farming

Progress, and the seed kept back

The Seed of the Green Revolution • हरित क्रांतिक बीया — card 1 of 1

The heavy harvest. High-yield seeds and sacks of chemical fertilizer arrive; for the first time the rice-ears grow so heavy the stalks bend, and farmers' eyes gladden at the grain-heaps. But in that yield's shadow, Ratnā's descendants' knowledge quietly fades — which seed suits which soil, which rains, which herb stops which disease.

A seed is memory. Sunaynā asks if losing the old seed is good. Būṛhbā: "More grain is good, protection from hunger is good. But if the old seed is fully lost, you lose a future option. A seed is not just grain — in it sleeps the village's memory of which ancestor faced which famine. Keep the old seed for the day the new seed betrays."

The clay pot in the grove. Sunaynā recalls a lost rice variety that yielded less but would not rot even submerged room-deep in flood. With Ratnā's line she begins keeping the old seeds in a clay pot in a quiet corner of the Channā grove, planting a strip of old rice beside each new field — so the old root lives too, and any famine finds the village holding the seed that once saved its ancestors.

● *To progress without destroying*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The Green Revolution's real gain — and its quiet cost in lost heritage.
- "To progress without destroying knowledge is the real challenge."
- A village that saves its seed saves its future.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -50

The Darkness of the Emergency

आपातकालक अन्हार *Āpātkālak Anhār*

"A dark era does not last — but a lamp put out takes long to relight."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The 1975 Emergency casts a shadow over the assembly's freedom

Tending the inner light

The Darkness of the Emergency • आपातकालक अन्हार — card 1 of 1

The order. When the national Emergency of 1975 is declared, its shadow reaches the village square. Administrative eyes turn on the women's night-assembly; the police-station orders that no gathering meet without permission. The assembly that for years discussed justice by lamplight beside the Channā grove falls under suspicion.

Būṛhbā's counsel. "Your assembly is one of justice, not politics. Keep it going, secretly, carefully. A dark era is not permanent, but the light put out in it can take a long time to relight. When the outer light is dimmed, tend the inner light more carefully — a voice can be suppressed, but not the justice behind it. An assembly once fully closed takes a whole generation to reawaken."

Whispered justice. For two years the assembly runs in the grove's dense dark — no lamp, no voice, only whispers; women come one by one, completing the night's justice-talk by eye-signals and murmurs. No paper written, yet no name dropped — all kept in the village's mind. When the Emergency ends and the lamp is lit openly again, it is said the flame burned higher than before.

● Civil courage in a hard time

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- When public voice is suppressed, the inner light must be tended more carefully.
- A gathering kept barely alive survives; one fully closed takes a generation to revive.
- Dark eras are not permanent — the tended light returns.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -49

The Year of Drought

सूखाक बरख *Sūkhāk Barakh*

"A dry year dries the pond, not the name — a village that digs a well together finds water again."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A Bihar drought tests the village again — now knowledge and outside aid both work

The state and the village, together

The Year of Drought • सूखाक बरख — card 1 of 1

The empty sky. The monsoon fails again; the pond shrinks to mud, the fields crack with thirst. The village has seen this before — Ratnā's-era famine, Hulāsā's-era hunger, still alive in memory — but this time it has learned. Both the government relief system and the village's own organization activate in time.

No name dropped. Sunaynā's son Gopāl, the young pradhān, runs relief-distribution with the officials, keeping account of each household — who got grain, who was missed, who needs more — so relief reaches those who truly need it and no name is lost in the crowd. Būṛhbā: "The state and society working together — this is progress. A famine is also a test of memory: a village that forgets its old famines dies anew in each one."

Water by their own hand. Gopāl and the youth re-dig the old southern well, closed for years; when the first water shows from the depths, the light on the thirsty faces is worth no less than grain. Relief came from outside, but the village found water by its own hand. Gopāl records each household in his notebook, extending Yādavānand's shadow-panjī — this famine too preserved with its every name.

● Memory as preparedness

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- This time both accumulated knowledge and outside help work in time.
- A village keeping account of every famine stands ready for the next.
- Relief from outside, water by one's own hand — both.



The Voice of Radio and Television

रेडियो आ टेलीविजनक अवाज *Reḍiyo ā Ṭelivijanak Avāj*

"The machine's voice comes from afar, the village's song from within — one who hears the inner voice is not lost in the outer noise."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The first radio, then television, bring the world into the village courtyard

The inner voice amid the outer noise

The Voice of Radio and Television • रेडियो आ टेलीविजनक अवाज — card 1 of 1

The world arrives. The square's first radio brings Delhi's crackling voice into the courtyard; a year later the first television gathers children and elders before its quivering black-and-white picture. For the first time the world comes into the village. But with it comes a silence — children who came to the pīpal for tales now sit before the screen, and the women's embankment-songs fade under the new, loud sound.

Two kinds of voice. Kusum asks if this makes Būṛhbā's work easier. "The reverse is also true — the village's tale and name can be lost in the world's noise. There are two voices: one that comes from outside and fills the ear, one that rises from within and fills the mind. If the outer grows so loud the inner can't be heard, the village forgets its song — and forgets its name."

A new stage. When a distant flood appears on the television, the elders fall silent — it recalls their own old flood; the machine can bring the far near, but can also make the near far. Kusum does not turn it off — she makes it a new stage, telling the village's old tales in new form to the children before the screen, so new light and old memory burn together in one courtyard.

● *Media without losing the self*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Mass media brings the world in — and can drown the village's own voice.
- The task: protect the inner voice amid the new, loud noise.
- Kusum's answer — not rejecting the medium, but making it a stage for the old tales.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -47

The Gulf Market

खाड़ी देशक बजार *Khārī Deśak Bajār*

"The foreign market gives wealth, the home hearth gives a name — one who earns and forgets the name returns a stranger."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The Gulf labour boom turns the village youth toward abroad again

A new call of the foreign land

The Gulf Market • खाड़ी देशक बजार — card 1 of 1

The oil boom. In the 1980s the Gulf oil boom draws village youth to Dubai, Kuwait, and Saudi Arabia for construction work. Brokers come to the market, passport-and-visa talk fills the homes, and every few months a young son takes his tin trunk and leaves — a new chapter of the "call of the foreign land," different from Yaśpati's indenture yet essentially related.

Wealth from afar. Kusum's husband Rameś goes to Dubai on a three-year contract — but unlike Rāmsevak's era, he sends letters and money, and sometimes his voice reaches home by phone. Concrete roofs, dowered weddings, new goods come on that far-off money — yet many courtyards lie silent all year without their young sons.

Keep the name at home. Būṛhbā: "Distance remains, but communication is now possible — this is progress, though the sorrow of distance is as true. Abroad keeps the body in a market; if a person is not careful, he keeps his name there too. Rameś sends money — good; he keeps his name in the village — better." Kusum sets a new token at the pond-root — a lamp of waiting, so the call becomes a symbol of hope, not only grief.

● Migration and the name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The Gulf migration — a new form of the old "pardeśak pukār" (cf. -67).
- Communication softens distance, but the sorrow of the empty courtyard remains.
- One who forgets village, language, and name for wealth returns a stranger.



The Test of Harmony

सद्भावक परीक्षा *Sadbhāvak Parīkṣā*

"When the fire came, the village became one — harmony is tested not in festivals, but in calamity."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A wave of communal tension tests the village's pluralist tradition

Shared memory against imported division

The Test of Harmony • सद्भावक परीक्षा — card 1 of 1

The rumor. In the late 1980s a wave of communal tension rises in the region and reaches Gaṛh Nārikel as rumor. Outsiders try to turn the old Hindu-Muslim brotherhood into suspicion; whispers spread, and for a night or two an unfamiliar tension pervades the square.

Woven together for generations. But the village's Muslim families — whose ancestors drew from the same pond, worked the same fields, saved each other in the same floods — and its Hindu families stand together. An old maulvi and an old pandit stand at the square, reminding the village which house rescued whom in which flood, whose hearth fed whom in which famine. Before that shared memory, the imported rumor cannot stand.

Remember each other's names. Būṛhbā: "Your village has woven nyāya, tantra, bhakti together for centuries — this unity is your greatest strength. Division comes from outside, not within; it takes root only where people have forgotten each other. Remember each other's names — that is the greatest watch." From that night, Eid and Diwali alike are kept in the pīpal's shade, in both communities' presence.

● Pluralism as strength

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Lived interdependence and shared history resist externally-imported division.
- A village that knows each other's names cannot be made strangers by rumor.
- Harmony is tested not in festivals but in calamity — and here it held.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -45

The Wind of Liberalization

उदारीकरणक हवा *Udārīkaraṇak Havā*

"The new wind opened the door, but did not shake the root — a village joined to its root does not fly off in the wind."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The 1991 economic reforms bring new consumerism and new opportunity

Deepen the root against the fast wind

The Wind of Liberalization • उदारीकरणक हवा — card 1 of 1

New goods, new haste. After the 1991 reforms the market's face changes — colorful plastic, new cloth, the first cable television with dozens of channels. Things once out of reach come near, and desires grow with the market. Kusum's son Dines gets a city private-company job, once impossible; there is glamour in the new speed, but under it he misses the village's calm dusk.

The thinning square. New glamour brings new haste — people want more, run more; the pīpal's calm dusk, where the whole village once gathered, thins. Some youth leave for the city; some thresholds stay closed all year. Dines: "Market, television, jobs — all new."

Welcome the new, root deeper. Būṛhbā: "The village has always changed, but this change is fast, and in fast change the risk of losing slowly-learned lessons is greater. The wind opens the door — good; but if the root is weak, that same wind can uproot the tree. Welcome new things, but deepen your root — one who is rooted does not fly off in any wind." Dines takes his children to the pīpal, telling them the tales of tree, pond, and names.

● Openness with rootedness

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Liberalization opens the door to new light — and new haste.
- Fast change risks losing slowly-learned wisdom.
- Welcome the new, but deepen the root — the rooted are not blown away.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -44

The First Computer

पहिल कम्प्यूटर *Pahil Kampyutar*

"The new machine teaches counting, not names — a name the village keeps is bigger than the machine's number."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The first computer reaches the school — the seed of a digital archive

The medium changes; the soul must not

The First Computer • पहिल कम्प्यूटर — card 1 of 1

The grey machine. Under a government scheme, the first computer reaches the Nārikel-pāt Pāṭhaśālā — green letters flickering on a screen. Letters that took years to write by hand now appear in an instant. An old man whispers: "The machine can hold letters, but will it hold meaning?"

From coconut leaf to screen. Pratimā types the first line of the village's oldest folk-song; as it glows on screen she feels the old song stepping toward an unfamiliar home. Būṛhbā: "The medium keeps changing — paper, press, now this machine. But the story's soul — the village's language and viewpoint — must not change. If it keeps my story in my own words, I welcome it."

The newest sentinel. "The machine knows counting — letters, pages, years. But a name is bigger than counting. If it turns a name into mere number, it is more dangerous than the coconut leaf; if it keeps the name with its full meaning, it can become the village's newest sentinel." The students begin typing old songs — a small bridge that, years ahead, becomes a full digital archive in the village's own language.

● Digitizing without hollowing

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The medium evolves — coconut leaf, press, computer — the soul stays.
- A machine that keeps names as meaning, not mere number, guards the village.
- The small bridge from leaf to screen foreshadows a full digital archive.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -43

The Drying River

सुखल होइत धार *Sukhal Hoit Dhār*

"The river thinned, yet knows the old path — a dried river has not forgotten the flood."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The Kamalā-Balān falls — the village faces an age of environmental crisis

A new crocodile — of water, air, and soil

The Drying River • सुखल होइत धार — card 1 of 1

The falling river. The Kamalā-Balān's water-level falls year by year; the river that once touched both embankments now shows sandbars in summer. Forests are cut, distant factory pollution reaches the water, fish grow fewer. Water, once the village's greatest fear, becomes its greatest worry.

Not lack of offering. Satyanārāyaṇ: "The twin pond has shrunk. I fear nature itself is falling sick." Būṛhbā: "Sonmā said the Mūl Gohi needs patience and offering. But this crisis is not from lack of offering — it is nature's own injustice. You must plant trees and save water, just as you save names."

Save water like a name. "I taught you to save names, thinking the crocodile takes only the body. But a new crocodile has come — one drinking the water, dirtying the air, eating the soil. If you don't save water, forest and soil, one day the very village that keeps names won't survive." Satyanārāyaṇ plants trees around the grove, embanks the pond, digs check-dams, and starts planting a tree at each birth.

● The environmental crocodile

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Falling water tables, deforestation, and pollution as a slow new calamity.
- This crisis is nature's own injustice, not a lack of offering.
- Now, alongside names, save water, forest, and soil for the next generation.



The Miracle of the Handheld Phone

हाथक फोनक चमत्कार *Hāthak Phonak Camatkār*

"A machine in the hand made the far near — but don't forget to ask the name of the one sitting near."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The mobile phone completely changes village communication

The far comes near, the near must not go far

The Miracle of the Handheld Phone • हाथक फोनक चमत्कार — card 1 of 1

The little machine speaks. The first mobile phone reaches the village in the headman's hand; when a far-off city son's voice emerges, the whole courtyard gathers astonished — a voice that once took a month of waiting now reaches the ear in an instant. Soon phones reach many families: sons abroad talk instantly, and every news arrives in a moment.

The new blindness. But a new sight appears — people talking to someone far while forgetting someone sitting beside them. Añjali: "Now the call of the foreign land won't be so sad." Būṛhbā, smiling: "Good news. But as much as this machine connects, it can confuse. In it, someone far comes near — be careful someone near doesn't become far. One always immersed in far-off voices forgets to look at the parent beside them."

Old affection, new machine. An old woman, hearing her Gulf-son's voice, weeps: "It feels you're standing in the courtyard." Used rightly, the machine lightens the sorrow of distance; misused, it makes near people strangers. Añjali teaches the elders to use it — yet keeps saying the evening square, sitting face to face, can never be replaced, so the new machine runs with old affection and old caution.

● Connection and its illusion

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The mobile phone dissolves distance — and can dissolve nearness too.
- If it brings the name near, good; if it makes the near name far, it is the greatest illusion.
- Añjali's answer — the machine alongside the face-to-face square, not replacing it.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -41

The City Market

शहरक बजार *Śaharak Bajār*

"The city buys the body, the village does not sell the name — one who sold his name in the market returns empty-handed."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The IT boom draws the village's educated youth to the big cities

Go far from the root without cutting it

The City Market • शहरक बजार — card 1 of 1

The new flight. India's IT boom draws the village's educated youth to Bangalore, Hyderabad, and Delhi for software and other modern jobs. Children who once learned letters on the coconut leaf now learn the computer's language and earn good salaries in far cities. Every household is proud — but their festivals pass in the city, and many houses stay locked all year.

The ache of distance. Añjali's son Karuṇākar, back on holiday: "In the city I learned much, but sometimes I feel I'm cutting away from my roots." Būṛhbā: "Cutting the root and going far from it are two different things. However far you go, if once a year you come to the pīpal and remember your name and the village's tale, the root won't cut — it will only lengthen."

Rooted, a stranger nowhere. "As far as a tree's root spreads, that firmly it stands. Going far is not weakness; weakness is forgetting the root. Roam the world — but remember your name, your language. One who knows his root is a stranger nowhere." From that day, every returning youth keeps an unwritten tradition: however far you go, once a year, return to your root for an evening.

● Mobility with belonging

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The IT boom carries the schooled youth outward — with pride and with distance.
- Going far is not cutting the root; forgetting it is.
- One evening a year at the root keeps the far-flung a stranger nowhere.



The Right to Information

सूचनाक अधिकार *Sūcanāk Adhikār*

"One who has the right to know can ask — information is a lamp that shows the name in the dark."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The RTI Act lets the village demand its own records — the shadow made light

Shadow and light become one

The Right to Information • सूचनाक अधिकार — card 1 of 1

The law. The Right to Information Act gives ordinary citizens the right to demand their papers from government offices. For Garh Nārikel this is no ordinary news — for centuries it had preserved its history secretly as Yādavānand's shadow-panjī, and now that history could be openly demanded by legal right.

Proving each other. The youth demand the village's land and history papers from the archives; records once locked in officials' cabinets come into the village's hands. Vibhā finds the yellow, torn papers hold many names also in Yādavānand's panjī — each proving the other. Truth once kept only in village memory now stands legally, with a government seal.

The day awaited for centuries. Būṛhbā, deeply satisfied: "This is the day I've waited centuries for — when shadow and light become one, when secretly-kept truth can be openly demanded. Yādavānand wrote by night's lamp because openly speaking truth was dangerous then. Now the law says every citizen has the right to know his truth." Vibhā merges shadow-panjī and state records into a complete, legally-valid history no official can erase.

● The secret history, legalized

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- RTI turns the counter-canon from a secret survival into an official right.
- Village memory and state record, placed face to face, prove one another.
- The names saved so long in shadow can now stand openly in light.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -39

The Guarantee of Work

काजक गारंटी *Kājak Gāraṇṭī*

"One who has work stands with his hand raised — work gives a name, not alms."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The employment-guarantee scheme gives local work — and the watch it needs

A good law needs a constant watch

The Guarantee of Work • काजक गारंटी — card 1 of 1

Work at home. The rural employment-guarantee scheme gives every family a hundred guaranteed days of work in the village itself. Labourers who once fled to the city — whose forefathers suffered abroad and indenture like Rāmsevak and Bhola — now work on their own soil; families that once broke apart can stay together.

The seed and the tree. Sureś, the local coordinator: "This won't repeat the tale of Bhola, Sukhdev, and Rāmsevak." Būṛhbā: "However good on paper, a scheme's success depends on honest implementation. Bhola's court-tale taught me law and practice can be far apart. A law is a good seed; but a seed doesn't become a tree by itself — it needs honest hands and steady water."

Every name, every account. "If the money is lost midway, if a labourer's name is dropped from the attendance, this good law too can become a new injustice." When some wages got stuck, Sureś read every name and account openly before the village and demanded the dues until every hand got them. He keeps every account transparent — the real watch of the scheme.

● Implementation is everything

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Local guaranteed work ends the old compulsion to migrate for a livelihood.
- A good law is only a seed; honest hands make it a tree.
- Keeping every name and account clean is the scheme's real watch.



The Web of the Internet

इंटरनेटक जाल *Inṭarneṭak Jāl*

"The new web brings the far near, but turns the name into a number — one caught in it loses his own face."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Smartphones and the internet transform the village — for good and ill

Gaṅgeśa's four proofs, made a daily necessity

The Web of the Internet • इंटरनेटक जाल — card 1 of 1

The world in the palm. Smartphones and cheap internet reach the village; children who learned on the coconut leaf now hold the whole world in their palm. But with the new web come false news spreading like truth, discontent bred by others' glittering lives, and unknown people making unwanted contact with the young.

A new śaṅkha-rajata. Nīraj: "The internet holds much that can deceive us." Būṛhbā: "With every new power comes a new danger — from the śaṅkha-rajata illusion to today, this is the lesson of my whole tale. This web can become a new śaṅkha-rajata, where falsehood glitters like truth."

Ask, and you are not caught. "Gaṅgeśa taught the four means of proof — perception, inference, comparison, testimony. That was scripture then; today it is a necessity of life. Whatever you see, ask: where did it come from? who said it? what is the proof?" Nīraj forms a group that traces a viral falsehood to its root and disproves it — learning, like Gaṅgeśa's four proofs, to separate truth from illusion.

● Epistemology as survival

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The internet is a new śaṅkha-rajata — falsehood that glitters like truth (cf. –100, –97).
- Gaṅgeśa's four pramāṇas become a daily test, not just scripture.
- Only a questioning eye tells truth from illusion in the new web.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -37

The First Shadow of the Screen

स्क्रीनक पहिल छाया *Skrīnak Pahil Chāyā*

"A face shines on the screen, the name dark behind it — one who hides to frighten is weak in the light."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Social media brings a new kind of ghost — hidden behind the screen's light

The ghost of darkness cannot stand in light

The First Shadow of the Screen • स्क्रीनक पहिल छाया — card 1 of 1

The screen's shadow. Facebook and WhatsApp reach every hand — distant relatives near, old friends met again. But the screen that connects also brings rumor, fraud, and online harassment. The ghost that once dwelt in the Channā grove's darkness now dwells behind the screen's light, hiding name and face.

Speak, and stand together. Sapnā: an unknown person is threatening a village girl with her photo. Būṛhbā, voice trembling: "A power that works in darkness by frightening someone grows weak in the light. This ghost's greatest power is its silence — it wants the victim silent and alone. Its greatest answer is to speak, to stand together. What is spoken openly, its shame shifts from the victim onto the swindler."

The digital night-assembly. At the first digital night-assembly the threatened girl speaks openly; when twenty women stand with her, the hidden hand's threat grows weak, and her smile returns. Sapnā gives the old women's night-assembly a new form — a "digital night-assembly" where online harassment is shared and confronted, so fear grown in darkness weakens in the light, together.

● *Breaking the silence*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Online abuse's power is the victim's isolation and shame.
- Spoken openly, the shame shifts from victim to perpetrator.
- The women's night-assembly (-66) reborn for the digital age.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -36

The First Footfall of the Unseen Swindler

अनदेखल ठगक पहिल आहट *Andekhal Thagak Pahil Āhaṭ*

"The swindler you cannot see is the greatest — hear the footfall, ask the name, trust the eye, not the paper."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A serious digital fraud shakes the village — a new, faceless hunger

A crocodile with no body, no water

The First Footfall of the Unseen Swindler • अनदेखल ठगक पहिल आहट — card 1 of 1

The vanishing company. A village youth, lured by a job scam, loses his entire savings to a fake online company — website, office photos, an officer's voice, all of which vanish in one night. The scam is run from a distant land by an unseen hand; a police report is filed, but how do you catch what you cannot even see? The village faces an enemy with no face, no address.

A new kind of crocodile. Sapnā: "This is more terrible than the Mūl Gohi — that one I could see and make offerings to; this one I cannot even see." Būṛhbā, long silent: "You are right. This is a new crocodile — no body, no water, only a hunger dwelling within wires and screens. I don't know how my old knowledge will fight it. But the name it eats, I too will hold."

Awareness is the only defence. "The old crocodile I fought with offering, patience, name. This one asks no offering — it swindles trust. There is only one way to defeat it: awareness. A village that stays alert, warns each other, and doesn't blindly trust any glittering offer keeps this new crocodile hungry." Sapnā warns every family — knowing the coming tale will be far more complex and dangerous.

● *The faceless hunger*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Digital fraud — a crocodile with no body, no water, no address.
- It asks no offering; it swindles trust — and awareness is the only defence.
- This footfall seeds the contemporary crime strands the novel will pursue.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -35

The Market of Bodies Opens

देहक बजार खुजैत अछि *Dehak Bajār Khujait Achi*

"Where the body is sold, the name is cheap — but a village that keeps the name won't let the body become a market."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The job scam becomes human trafficking — the darkest chapter's footfall

The question is the only weapon

The Market of Bodies Opens • देहक बजार खुजैत अछि — card 1 of 1

From money to people. The job-scam takes a more terrible form: earlier the swindler took only money; now he takes people. Youth lured by promises of "good work" abroad are taken by brokers to distant lands, their passports seized, forced to work — the tale reaching the village piece by piece. In one house, a son who left on a "good work" promise vanishes for years; his mother's eyes stay on the road every evening.

The dark chapter's footfall. Rājiv: "This is more terrible than indenture — there was at least a contract, a date. Now people become captives." Būṛhbā, grave: "This is the dark chapter whose footfall I heard long ago. The hunger that dwelt within the screen has reached the market of bodies. We must warn every family, as we warned of flood, fire, and disease."

A new school. "The weapon to defeat this crocodile is not the sword, but the question. Where a promise seems too good, too quick, ask — who is calling? which company? which paper? who guarantees it?" Rājiv teaches every youth to scrutinize foreign job offers — a new school, not on the coconut leaf but as necessary, to save the village's children from the market's dark hand.

● Awareness as protection

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The scam escalates from stealing money to trafficking people.
- Verification — who, which company, which paper, who guarantees — is the defence.
- Saving names is now not only memory's work, but life's work.



The Vision of Ujjwal

उज्ज्वलक स्वप्न *Ujjwalak Svapna*

"The dream is large, but the root is in the soil — a dream that forgets the name wakes alone."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The figure of a vision Būṛhbā had long ago is born in reality — Ujjwal Jhā

A name held from the first night

The Vision of Ujjwal • उज्ज्वलक स्वप्न — card 1 of 1

The restless witness. A child is born in a poor village family — sohar sung, jaggery shared, the child named Ujjwal Jhā. But on the birth-night Būṛhbā, always glad at a new birth, grows strangely restless, as if an old memory has come alive; a deep worry sits in his eyes as he keeps looking toward that poor house.

The vision recalled. Dīpālī asks why. Būṛhbā: "Long ago, in a flash, I saw a youth who would drown not in the river but in the screen — under lost money, interest, threats. Today that child is born. His name is Ujjwal Jhā. I don't know if I can save him, but I hold his name from today."

Not alone in the dark. "The name I hold from today will not be alone. When that darkness comes before him, the village will know him, remember his name — and perhaps, by that one thing, he will not be alone even in the darkness." The village keeps an unspoken watch on little Ujjwal; Dīpālī marks his name specially in her notebook, knowing its story will matter greatly.

● The protagonist arrives

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Ujjwal Jhā — the central contemporary figure — is born here.
- Būṛhbā's long-ago vision of a "drowning in the screen" takes a name.
- A name held early means one is never wholly alone in the dark to come.



The Shadow of the Lawyer's Coat

वकीलक कोटक छाया *Vakīlak Koṭak Chāyā*

"In the court's shadow justice hides, in the village it speaks — the lawyer reads the statute, the village reads the name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A village youth studies law — and his path turns toward the "court's ghost"

No one is born guilty

The Shadow of the Lawyer's Coat • वकीलक कोटक छाया — card 1 of 1

The bright boy. Baṭuknāth, once sharpest at the coconut-leaf school, studies law and practices in the city. The village is proud, hoping he'll fight for the poor — and at first he does, taking the weak's side. But with powerful clients, the taste of winning, the glitter of money, and the intoxication of power turn him, step by step, off his path: the law he studied to save the poor, he learns to twist to save the powerful.

The seed of -68 flowers. Dīpālī: "He takes date after date in every case, however poor the other side — he behaves like the court's ghost." Būṛhbā, sadly: "The seed sown in chapter -68 now flowers in a human body. He was not born guilty — the system's slowness, temptation, and the taste of power turned him. I'll hold his name in hope that he changes his path again."

Held with hope, not a curse. "The seed falls in one place, the flower blooms in another. He is the fruit of a system that made justice a thing to be sold. I hold his name not with a curse but with hope — for one who can change his path, his name is never wholly killed." When a poor village widow stands before him, the old village flashes in his eyes for a moment — the honest Baṭuknāth not fully dead, only hidden in the dark.

● *A fallen figure, held in hope*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The "court's ghost" seed (-68) flowers into a living antagonist.
- No one is born guilty — a corrupt system shapes the corrupt person.
- His name is held with hope, not a curse — the path can still be changed.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -32

The Shadow from Across the Sea

समुद्रपारक साये *Samudrapārak Sāye*

"A shadow can come from across seven seas, but cannot carry the name away — one who cheats from afar still leaves a mark on the leaf."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- An unseen power in a Hong Kong glass-tower appears on the horizon — Lau Kin-hang

The crocodile changes water, remains the crocodile

The Shadow from Across the Sea • समुद्रपारक साये — card 1 of 1

The wire crosses the sea. Through global trade and digital finance, the village's scam-tales now reach across the sea. Money swindled from a poor hand passes, wire by wire, across countries into an unseen hand. Abhinav reads a report with a photo of a tall glass tower in a distant city, and a recurring name that plants an unfamiliar dread.

A name heard long ago. "The paper says many scam-nets are run from Hong Kong — one name keeps recurring, Lau Kin-hang." Būṛhbā, in a voice never heard before: "I too heard this name long ago, in a flash — a shadow in a glass tower. I don't know his relation to my Ujjwal and my Baṭuknāth. But all these tales, even from far, will one day return to Gaṛh Nārikel."

The same rule. "The crocodile changes water but remains the crocodile — first the pond, then the screen, now across the sea in a glass tower. The rule holds: it can take the body, not the name. If the village keeps its name and warns each other, this distant shadow too will weaken before the village's light." The shadow on the newspaper page will one day stand, directly, in the village's own tale.

● The trans-national antagonist

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Lau Kin-hang — the glass-tower shadow — enters the story's horizon.
- Digital fraud is global: the same hunger, now across the sea.
- The old rule still holds — it takes the body, not the name.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -31

Satyavrat's Silence

सत्यव्रतक मौन *Satyavratak Maun*

"One long silent, his single word is heaviest — Satyavrat's silence, too, was a testimony."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A silent bank clerk sways between duty and conscience — and starts a notebook

When silence becomes injustice

Satyavrat's Silence • सत्यव्रतक मौन — card 1 of 1

The suspicious accounts. Satyavrat Mehta — quiet, honest, who speaks little but sees everything — gets a city bank job. He begins seeing suspicious accounts: lakhs arriving, instantly splitting into other accounts and vanishing. He understands it is a thread of some large hidden net — but he is only a small clerk. Who would listen, and what danger in speaking?

The moment to speak. Būṛhbā: "Silence is sometimes protection, sometimes injustice. I can't decide for you — that's your conscience. Staying silent when the moment hasn't come is patience; but if the moment has come and one stays silent, that silence becomes injustice. Recognizing that moment is conscience. And if it comes, have proof, not just words — what you see, write down."

The waiting testimony. Satyavrat neither speaks nor stays wholly silent — he quietly records in his notebook the date and detail of each suspicious transaction, waiting for the moment when this silence could become testimony. He does not yet know how important this notebook will one day become.

● The whistleblower's discipline

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Silence can be patience or injustice — the conscience must tell the moment.
- When the moment comes, evidence matters more than words: write what you see.
- The quiet notebook becomes a testimony held in waiting.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -30

Gop Kumar's Document

गोप कुमारक दस्तावेज *Gop Kumārak Dastāvej*

"What is kept in writing outlasts time — a document saves not the body, but the name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A youth devotes his life to the record — the witness, perhaps author, of the final chapter

A bridge across the centuries

Gop Kumar's Document • गोप कुमारक दस्तावेज — card 1 of 1

Joining the threads. Gop Kumar, extending Yādavānand's and Vibhā's tradition, gives his life to documentation — joining old maps, old panjī, and new digital records, thread by thread. The names Yādavānand wrote in night's darkness, the papers Vibhā brought by RTI, the records now made on screen — all matched together. People say: "this youth wants to make the village's memory immortal."

Not yet complete. "Has the time come to compile your whole tale?" Būṛhbā: "Haripati asked me this, and I said — not until the tale is complete. One final chapter remains, whose footfall I've heard year by year. It will be the hardest — in it will be Ujjwal, Baṭuknāth, that distant shadow. When they all come to one place, then you will write."

Witness, not decoration. "Compiling the tale is not decoration, it is being a witness — one who writes must bear its every joy, sorrow, and injustice within." Finding a flood-lost name beside Yādavānand's note, Gop Kumar realizes he is building a bridge across centuries, on which every lost name could return — and keeps every thread for the day the whole tale stands in one hand.

● The witness-author

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Gop Kumar — the in-story archivist who may write the whole tale.
- The compilation is itself an act of witness, not mere arrangement.
- The final chapter — Ujjwal, Baṭuknāth, the glass-tower shadow — is still to come.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -29

Chandrapāl's Dream

चन्द्रपालक सपना *Chandrapālak Sapnā*

"A dream in the eye, a deception at the foot — one who signed without understanding was caught in the net."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A youth born far from the village — and Būṛhbā's watch crosses the boundary

The watch that leaves the village bounds

Chandrapāl's Dream • चन्द्रपालक सपना — card 1 of 1

A distant birth. In a distant relative-family long settled in Meerut — connected to the village now only by an old name and an occasional letter — a child is born: Chandrapāl Batra. Yet on the birth-night Būṛhbā feels a strange restlessness, and the village is puzzled: why be restless for a child born hundreds of miles away in an unknown city?

A wider witness. Būṛhbā: "My witness-sense has grown wider than the village's bounds — like your digital record, Gop Kumar, which now connects even far-flung relations. This child will, in time, become part of my tale, though he may never see the village. I hold his name — Chandrapāl."

The net knows no boundary. "The new crocodile, dwelling in wires and screens, knows no village boundary — it can swindle someone in Meerut as easily as in Gaṛh Nārikel. So my watch too must go beyond the village." Gop Kumar adds a new section, "Distant Connections," with Chandrapāl its first entry — realizing the tale is now that of every name that could, anywhere, fall into the new crocodile's net.

● The watch expands

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- As the digital net spreads, Būṛhbā's witness reaches beyond village soil.
- A name that can fall into the net, wherever born, is now held.
- The tale becomes not Gaṛh Nārikel's alone, but every vulnerable name's.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -28

Rāghav's Code

राघवक कोड *Rāghavak Koḍ*

"The language the machine understands, the village does not — but inside the code too a name lies hidden."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A gifted young programmer whose skill could guard thousands — or swindle them

A sword is neither good nor bad

Rāghav's Code • राघवक कोड — card 1 of 1

The prodigy. In a branch of the family, in the town, Rāghav is born with a mind extraordinary for code — grasping in play the logic that takes big engineers years. In his teens he astonishes people, fixing complex machines, catching hidden errors. Wise elders quietly note: such power in good hands can save thousands; in wrong hands, swindle as many.

Būṛhbā's question-mark. "Extraordinary power can go both ways — protection or destruction. A sword is neither good nor bad; the mind of the one who holds it makes it so. Rāghav's skill is a sword. If he remembers his name, village, conscience, it will guard thousands; if he runs only after power, this same skill can become a new crocodile."

An empty space for time to fill. Once, Rāghav fixes a poor family's stuck papers in minutes, and they get their due — his power, well used, could make him the village's greatest guardian. But Būṛhbā's question-mark stays firm beside the name. Gop Kumar writes Rāghav's name with a question-mark — an empty space to be filled by his own future choice, on which much of the village's fate may rest.

● Power awaiting a choice

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Extraordinary skill is a tool that can guard or destroy.
- The wielder's mind — remembering the root — decides which.
- Rāghav's name is held with a question-mark: his choice is still to come.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -27

Āruṇi's Construction

आरुणिक निर्माण *Āruṇik Nirmāṇ*

"One who builds must first shape himself — Āruṇi shaped his own eye before the sluice."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- An engineer gives the village's old embankment a modern form

Building is not enough — keeping alive is

Āruṇi's Construction • आरुणिक निर्माण — card 1 of 1

Old knowledge, new form. Āruṇi, an engineer, takes up bridge and embankment work, never forgetting the childhood floods and Indrāṇī's warning-system. He gives the old earthen embankment a new form — brick, and instruments for flood-forecast — but knows it is incomplete without the old knowledge: the elders who read the river's nature, the women who read the water's rise, no less than any machine.

Tended each generation. Būṛhbā: "No construction, however strong, lasts without care, just as my grove weakens without care. An embankment, a village, a memory — all must be tended anew each generation. A bridge strong today can weaken under the next generation's neglect. Not only building, but keeping the built thing alive, is real construction."

Whose victory it was. When a great flood tests Āruṇi's new embankment, the village keeps watch all night with lamps — and it holds. But Āruṇi knows the victory belongs not only to the stone but to the hands that stayed awake: any embankment holds by the labour and care of a village that calls it its own. He adds a long-term care-plan to every project — shaping not only stone, but the future of that stone.

● Maintenance as construction

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Modern engineering joined to the elders' and women's water-knowledge.
- What is built weakens without care in every generation.
- An embankment holds by the labour of a village that owns it.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -26

Devikā's Song

देविकाक गीत *Devikāk Gīt*

"A song in her throat, justice in her voice — the name called in the song echoed through the village."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A young woman devotes her life to carrying the folk-song tradition forward

A name dwells in a song

Devikā's Song · देविकाक गीत — card 1 of 1

Recording the last voices. Devikā, extending Mohan's melody-tradition, records every old folk-song — Hulāsā's, Jīvantī's, Gaṅgeśa's — with new tunes and instruments. Songs that lived only on the embankment, the water-ghat, the threshing-floor now become permanent. She sits with the old women, records their flood-songs, sohars, and dirges exactly, then reshapes them for the new generation.

Saving songs is saving names. Būṛhbā, glad: "You are completing Mohan's dream. A melody, however old, if it lives in a new throat, never dies. Saving names and saving songs are one work — for a name dwells in a song. When Hulāsā's song is sung, Hulāsā, in that moment, lives again."

The last refrain saved. The oldest woman sings a famine-refrain no one else knows; days later she is gone, but her voice and the names within it are safe forever. Devikā opens a music branch of the Nārikel-pāt Pāṭhaśālā, where every child learns an old song before learning letters — so the village's melody, and its names, never break in any generation.

● Cultural memory

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The folk-song tradition (from Mohan, -73) carried to the digital present.
- A name lives in its song — to keep the song is to keep the name.
- The last voices are recorded before they are lost forever.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -25

Mīrā's Privacy

मीराक निजता *Mīrāk Nijatā*

"Whose the story, theirs the consent — a name is no sample; Mīrā's story is Mīrā's own."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A young woman raises her voice for the right to digital privacy

The right to privacy is the right to the name

Mīrā's Privacy • मीराक निजता — card 1 of 1

A crocodile that eats the name. Mīrā, working on digital privacy and women's safety, extends Sapnā's "digital night-assembly" with legal aid — so women who suffer online injustice get concrete help, not only sympathy. She sees new injustices: a woman's photo stolen, her information sold, her name used without consent. The crocodile that ate the body now eats women's privacy, dignity, name.

Heir of Sulochanā and Padmā. Būṛhbā: "You are the modern heir of Sulochanā and Padmā's tale. The right to privacy is, finally, the right to the name — that no one uses your name or image without your consent. This new crocodile wants to eat the name too. Whose the name, theirs the consent — that is the greatest watch."

Into the light. When a young woman's stolen photo is used to defame her, Mīrā, with legal help, brings the hidden hand into the light, and the woman stands again with her head high. The fight for privacy is, finally, the fight for dignity. Mīrā teaches every woman the right to digital security — the fight only begun, but no woman now alone in it.

● Privacy as dignity

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The women's assembly (-66) and digital night-assembly (-37) grow a legal arm.
- Privacy is the right to one's own name and image — consent is the watch.
- The fight for privacy is, at root, the fight for dignity.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -24

Niśānt's Bank

निशांतक बैंक *Niśāntak Baiṅk*

"Whose account is clean, whose mind is steady — but one who sold the name in the ledger lost in the reckoning."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A young banker takes up financial inclusion, in the people's own language

Sharing knowledge is real inclusion

Nisānt's Bank • निशांतक बैंक — card 1 of 1

The old net's new form. Nisānt takes up rural financial inclusion — a bank account, insurance, and loans for every family. He had heard how the village poor, caught in the moneylender's compound interest, lost field, home, and honour. But he sees the bank's papers and language are as unfamiliar to the illiterate farmer as the moneylender's ledger once was.

Injustice where one side understands. Būṛhbā: "Injustice is born where one side understands and the other doesn't. The moneylender cheated the poor because they didn't understand accounts. If the bank stays as complex, it becomes only the moneylender's new form. But explain every scheme in the farmer's own speech, and he takes his rights into his own hands. Sharing knowledge is real inclusion."

Confidence in one's rights. An old farmer who always feared the thumbprint opens, after Nisānt's simple explanation, his first account; when his first insurance money arrives, tears come to his eyes. The bank's real work is not keeping money but giving the poor confidence in their rights. Nisānt explains every scheme in simple Maithili at the square — and no family is cheated by the bank's complex language again.

● Financial inclusion

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A complex bank, unexplained, becomes only the moneylender's new form.
- Translating the scheme into the people's speech is the real work.
- The bank's true task is confidence in one's rights, not merely keeping money.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT • KEYSTONE

Chapter -23

The Birth of Nand

नन्दक जन्म *Nandak Janma*

"One who is born brings a new name — Nand's birth gave the village a new witness."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The child whose tale, far ahead, becomes the beginning of the novel — Nand Āruṇi

The village's next witness

The Birth of Nand • नन्दक जन्म — card 1 of 1

The still tree. In Āruṇi's home a son is born, named Nand. On the birth-night the pīpal witness-tree is unusually still, as if awaiting this birth; the elders say they have rarely seen such stillness — as if something great were about to happen. Those who know Būṛhbā notice he gives this birth a special, deep attention, as if seeing what no one else can.

A name that carries a whole tale. Būṛhbā, tender: "I hold this child's name with special affection. Some names carry not one life but a whole tale on their shoulders. Nand's is such. He will be witness to the day my whole tale — from śaṅkha and rajata to today — comes to one place and finds its final form. Shape him well; he is the village's next witness."

The last page in a small hand. Āruṇi sits long under the tree, vowing to shape Nand with the eye that sees name and account above body and paper. The pīpal's leaves rustle faintly though the air is still — as if the whole grove welcomes the new name. And Būṛhbā gazes at Nand's tiny hand, as if seeing in it the last page of his tale.

● The novel's beginning is born

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Nand Āruṇi — whose tale opens गोहि सभक बीच जलसमाधि — is born here.
- Some names carry a whole tale, not one life.
- Būṛhbā names him the village's next witness, for the final chapter to come.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -22

Near Twelve Hundred

बारह सयक निकट *Bārah Sayak Nikaṭ*

"Twelve hundred years did not pass in one breath — a village that bore so much stands near the end."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Būṛhbā, counting his age, nears a startling round number

A number, and the tale behind it

Near Twelve Hundred • बारह सयक निकट — card 1 of 1

Adding up the centuries. Gop Kumar sits to add Būṛhbā's whole timeline — from Vācaspati Mīśra to today — generation by generation, name by name. Among hundreds of names, one stands firm in every generation: Būṛhbā's. He realizes he is joining not one life's account but a whole civilization's memory. "By my count, your water-burial is now nearly twelve hundred years old!"

Būṛhbā's laugh. Būṛhbā laughs softly — the rare, unforgettable "Būṛhbā's laugh." "I gave up counting my age long ago. But a number is only a mark, not the tale. Twelve hundred years is not what matters; what matters is how many names were saved, how many lost, how many are still held."

Humanity's will to survive. In that number are many floods, famines, wars, epidemics — and in each the village broke, rose, broke, rose again. Gop Kumar feels this is not one village's tale but humanity's own will to survive. He marks the calculation specially, not knowing this round number would one day, in another language, become like the title of the whole tale, written again.

● The twelve-hundred-year witness

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The "twelve hundred years" folk-time (from the keystone -90) is confirmed.
- The number is only a mark; the tale is the names saved, lost, and still held.
- A village that rose after every death embodies humanity's will to survive.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -21

Ananyā's Question

अनन्याक प्रश्न *Ananyāk Praśna*

"A small question cracks a great dome — one who asked saved the name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A young teacher teaches the children to question — Gaṅgeśa's method, reborn

The weapon Nand will need

Ananyā's Question • अनन्याक प्रश्न — card 1 of 1

Praise for the question. Ananyā comes to teach at the school's modern branch — teaching children not to memorize answers but to ask questions. In her class no question is foolish; the child who asks the most is praised the most. The rote-schooled elders are surprised, then see her children accept nothing blindly — they ask, test, reason. And Nand asks the most, as if an old curiosity has come alive in him.

Gaṅgeśa in simple speech. Ananyā: "I want to teach Gaṅgeśa's epistemology — perception, inference, testimony, comparison — in simple language." Būṛhbā, deeply satisfied: "My greatest hope is that Gaṅgeśa's question never falls silent, but rises again from every generation's child. A village that stops asking is the first to be cheated. You are shaping the village's next watch."

The conch and the question. When Ananyā tells the śaṅkha-rajata tale, Nand alone raises his hand: "If that man had asked whether it was really silver, he wouldn't have been cheated?" — and in that small question she sees the whole knowledge Gaṅgeśa taught. The habit of questioning becomes Nand's greatest weapon, for the day a crocodile comes that only a question can defeat.

● Questioning as defence

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Gaṅgeśa's four pramāṇas (–97, –38) taught to children in plain speech.
- Every new crocodile succeeds on those who do not ask.
- Nand's habit of questioning is explicitly the weapon for the climax to come.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -20

The First Reckoning of the Plunge

छपाकक पहिल हिसाब *Chapākak Pahil Hisāb*

"The first plunge — the first name in the water — one who kept the account made the crocodile a witness."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Nand, on a bridge site, sees a vanished laborer with no account — and starts his diary

The bridge of the name

The First Reckoning of the Plunge • छुपाकक पहिल हिसाब — card 1 of 1

The vanished laborer. Nand, now an engineer carrying Āruṇi's tradition, works at a bridge site — but never forgot Ananyā's questioning. He sees the laborers' broken huts, low wages, lack of safety, and hears a tale that shakes him: a laborer who vanished one night, his name struck from the contractor's papers as if he had never existed.

The witness of his blood. Būṛhbā: "This reminds me of Sukhdev Mahto — laborers whose names appear in no official account. You are an engineer, but within you is also a witness, of my blood. Find that laborer's name, and hold it. A bridge joins two sides — but there is another bridge to build, between the name and the account, which the system breaks."

The diary begins. "A vanished laborer's body may not be found; but his name, if you hold it, will not be wholly lost. This is your real legacy — not the bridge of stone, but the bridge of the name." That night Nand writes his first diary line — "the crocodile eats the body, not the name." With that page, the diary he calls "the reckoning of the plunge" begins, and Nand becomes the village's next witness.

● *The witness takes up the pen*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The vanished laborer echoes Sukhdev (-92) — names outside the official account.
- The real legacy is the bridge of the name, not the bridge of stone.
- Nand's diary — the "reckoning of the plunge" — begins, tying to the title's jalsamādhi.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -19

Satyavrat's Decision

सत्यव्रतक निर्णय *Satyavratak Nirṇay*

"A decision that came late is the steadiest — Satyavrat stayed silent, but stood, at last, for the name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The years of quiet evidence form a pattern — and the moment to speak arrives

The evidence must speak

Satyavrat's Decision • सत्यव्रतक निर्णय — card 1 of 1

The pattern. Now a senior official, Satyavrat reopens his old notebook; the dates and accounts recorded quietly for years, placed together, show a terrifying pattern — as if scattered dots finally made a picture. Money passes account to account and finally to a distant overseas account; some names recur. It is no ordinary embezzlement, but a large, organized net whose threads spread far beyond the village.

The moment near. Būṛhbā: "You gathered evidence for years; now it is time for the evidence to speak. But be careful — the power you challenge can be merciless. Such power is defeated not by accusation but by proof. Don't fight alone — find those who can stand with you, an honest official, a witness. This fight of the name is the whole village's, not one man's."

No turning back. Returning, Satyavrat knows the net's threads perhaps reach the glass tower Abhinav once spoke of. But Būṛhbā's words — "silence that becomes injustice" — echo in his ears, and he understands there is no turning back. He keeps the notebook safe and waits for the right moment, knowing truth comes with solid proof, and that he is not alone.

● *Breaking the silence*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Patient evidence, gathered over years, finally reveals the pattern.
- Great power is defeated by proof, and with allies — not alone.
- The net's threads reach the glass tower (Lau Kin-hang, -32) — the strands converge.



The Meeting of Ananyā and Nand

अनन्या आ नन्दक भेंट *Ananyā ā Nandak Bheṇṭ*

"Two roads met in one place, a new journey began — those whose purpose is one walk in step."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The teacher and the engineer meet in a shared project — two paths, one journey

Question and construction, joined

The Meeting of Ananyā and Nand • अनन्या आनन्दक भेंट — card 1 of 1

The shared project. Nand returns and works with Ananyā to modernize the Nārikel-pāt Pāṭhaśālā — preserving the village's heritage digitally. The teacher who taught him to question and the engineer who sees name and account as a bridge come together for the first time. Ananyā knows every old tale, song, and panjī; Nand knows how to keep them permanently — their work completing each other, extending Gop Kumar's compilation.

One direction. Working together, they notice how their values match — both want to save names, hold truth, make the village's memory immortal. Two paths that began separately now flow in one direction. Būṛhbā, glad: "You are carrying Gop Kumar's work forward. The final chapter I've awaited is now near."

Two shoulders for the burden. "Some work isn't done alone. Being a witness is a burden, and two shoulders make it lighter. Question and construction, memory and technology, complete each other. The final chapter will be so hard that not one person, but two standing together, can bear it." The shared journey they begin will, ahead, bind not only the village's tale but their own lives to each other.

● The two witnesses converge

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Memory (Ananyā) and technology (Nand) join to carry the record forward.
- The witness-burden is lighter borne by two — the final chapter needs both.
- Their shared journey will bind the village's tale and their own lives together.



The Net of the Glass Tower

शीशाक मीनारक जाल *Śīsāk Mīnārak Jāl*

"The glass tower glitters from afar, a net within — one dazzled by the glitter is bound in the net."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Lau Kin-hang's scam-net, in its full extent, reaches near the village

The most terrible crocodile joins many at once

The Net of the Glass Tower • शीशाक मीनारक जाल — card 1 of 1

Three crocodiles, one net. News keeps coming of a vast Hong Kong-run digital net tied to Lau Kin-hang — no ordinary fraud, but job-scams, investment fraud, and human trafficking joined together, its threads across dozens of countries. It is built so no one sees its full form: a "good job" to one youth, "double your money" to one investor, captivity abroad to one poor person — each thread separate, all returning to one glass tower.

Already here. As Ananyā and Nand grasp its extent, a deep dread settles. Ananyā: "I fear it could reach Gaṛh Nārikel." Būṛhbā: "I fear it has already reached — as Ujjwal's dream, as Baṭuknāth's fall. It will one day touch a village name directly. I don't know which, but I feel it."

Awareness and the name. "I've seen many crocodiles — of water, of time, of the screen. But this net is most terrible, for it joins many at once: it eats the body, the money, and the name. My one weapon — awareness, and the name. If the village stays alert and holds its every name, this net can't take root within." Ananyā warns every youth anew, feeling the day is not far.

● The convergent threat

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The net unifies three crocodiles — job-scam, investment fraud, trafficking.
- It eats body, money, and name together — the most terrible yet.
- Awareness and the held name are the only defence against it.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -16

Baṭuknāth's Final Turn

बटुकनाथक अंतिम मोड़ *Baṭuknāthak Antim Moṛ*

"A wrong road too asks for a turn at its end — Baṭuknāth, at the last, turned back toward his name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Baṭuknāth gives his legal skill fully to the dark power's service

The witness holds the guilty name too, in truth

Baṭuknāth's Final Turn • बटुकनाथक अंतिम मोड़ — card 1 of 1

Justice's weapon turned. Baṭuknāth now works in the defence of big scam-cases — taking date after date, tiring witnesses, tangling evidence, delaying justice until the victim, exhausted, falls silent. Counted among the lawyers whom big offenders seek, he wins, grows rich, gains prestige — but behind each victory hides some poor person's defeat. The skill he learned for justice has become injustice's greatest weapon.

Held, yet a sorrow. Nand: "He has fully turned to darkness. I grieve." Būṛhbā, sadly: "I hold his name, hoping he'll change. But some names, even held, remain a source of sorrow. My work is not to change his decision, but to keep his tale in truth."

Neither curse nor erasure. "Being a witness is a hard dharma — it holds not only good names but guilty ones, in truth. I neither curse Baṭuknāth nor hide his fault; I keep his tale as it is. For if I erase his fall, the lesson from that truth is erased too." Nand records the whole journey without hatred or pardon — so someone may learn that no one is born guilty: system, temptation, and choice shape him together.

● The ethic of the witness

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The bright boy's fall completes — his skill now delay and defeat of the poor.
- A witness records the guilty name too, without curse or erasure.
- Truth, however painful, must be saved — the fall is itself the lesson.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -15

Chandrapāl's Account

चन्द्रपालक खाता *Chandrapālak Khātā*

"An account not understood makes even a signature heavy — ignorance too is a knot in the net."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Chandrapāl, drowned in betting debt, becomes a "mule account" for the net

Each thread isolated, only Būṛhbā sees the whole

Chandrapāl's Account • चन्द्रपालक खाता — card 1 of 1

"Commission work." Chandrapāl, caught in heavy betting debt, lets the net use his bank account — money passing hand to hand through it. He doesn't fully understand: told it is only "commission work," he keeps a share, not grasping that in each transaction some poor person's swindled money flows. In the greed for debt-relief, he becomes a knot in the net.

The threads bind. Satyavrat sees every transaction of that account — a small but important thread of the vast net. The name in Ujjwal's dream, in Baṭuknāth's fall, now joins in Chandrapāl's account. Būṛhbā: "I held his name not knowing which way his tale would turn. Ujjwal, Baṭuknāth, Chandrapāl, and that glass-tower shadow — all are being woven into one net."

Only I see the thread. "The net is woven so each is unknown to the other — Ujjwal doesn't know Baṭuknāth, Baṭuknāth doesn't know Chandrapāl. But I, from afar, see all these names bound in one thread. When they come to one place, that final chapter completes — the village's hardest." Satyavrat gathers his evidence more carefully, waiting for silence to become testimony.

● The knot of ignorance

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A mule account: ignorance is no shield — it is itself a knot in the net.
- The net keeps each participant isolated and unknowing.
- Only the witness, from afar, sees the whole thread binding the names.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -14

The Building of the Bridge

पुलक निर्माण *Pulak Nirmāṇ*

"A bridge joins two sides, but does not forget the water — one who built it kept the flood in mind."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Nand is posted at a new bridge site — where the coming story's seed is sown

Build the bridge, but keep the watch

The Building of the Bridge • पुलक निर्माण — card 1 of 1

The village joined to the world. Nand is posted at a new bridge over the Kamalā-Balān that will connect the village directly to the city. But his questioning eye sees the laborers' lack of safety, work at heights without helmets, a contractor treating laborers as numbers, not names — and he recalls the laborer who vanished from a bridge, his account unkept. Unfamiliar brokers and unclear faces come and go from the city.

The same road brings the crocodile. Būṛhbā: "What you see reminds me of Sukhdev again — the laborers' names and safety are your responsibility, not only the bridge's strength. A bridge connects — good — but the route that brings the world to the village can bring that new crocodile too. Build the bridge, but keep the watch."

The name that builds. "Hold the name of every laborer who builds it with his sweat — the name that builds should be first in the account." Nand writes each name in his diary, asks their condition, fights the contractor for their safety — not knowing this very bridge, this very site, would become the stage of the final chapter whose footfall Būṛhbā has heard so long.

● The stage is set

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The bridge to the world is also the road the new crocodile can take.
- The witness-ethic applied to labour: hold every builder's name and safety.
- This site, unknown to Nand, is the coming climax's stage.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -13

Gop Kumar's Compilation

गोप कुमारक संकलन *Gop Kumārak Saṅkalan*

"One who joined name to name made a history — a compilation saves not the body, but the memory."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Gop Kumar nears giving his lifelong documentation a complete form

A lamp for the dark moment to come

Gop Kumar's Compilation · गोप कुमारक संकलन — card 1 of 1

The threads come together. Gop Kumar, now old, hand trembling and eyes weak, sits to place his lifelong compilation in one place — from Yādavānand's shadow-panjī and Haripati's book to the modern digital record. As he joins pages, all the threads come together: the śaṅkha-rajata illusion, Hulāsā's water-burial, Sukhdev's unnamed death, Baṭuknāth's fall, Ujjwal's dream, Chandrapāl's account — tales once separate now forming one picture.

The footsteps, now clear. Būṛhbā: "That final chapter is near, very near. Nand's bridge, Chandrapāl's account, Baṭuknāth's court, and that unseen glass tower — all are about to meet in one place, at one time. Your compilation completes at just the right time — the coming chapter's witness needs the whole prior tale ready in hand."

The empty space. Seeing his whole compilation at once, Gop Kumar realizes he has revived every person who ever made the village's tale — yet an empty space remains: the final chapter, awaited year by year. He works faster, knowing his lifework will be the foundation on which Nand stands to face the village's greatest test.

● The foundation laid

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The whole counter-history, from śaṅkha-rajata to today, joined into one picture.
- The compilation completes just as the final chapter approaches.
- It becomes the lamp and foundation for Nand's coming ordeal.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -12

The Trembling of the Channā Grove

चन्ना गाछीक कँपकँपी *Channā Gāchīk Kāpkāpī*

"The grove trembled, the village heard — something is about to happen; when the grove speaks, the village understands."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Būṛhbā, one with the whole grove, feels the tremble of an imminent event

The witness-grove gives its warning

The Trembling of the Channā Grove • चन्ना गाछीक कँपकँपी — card 1 of 1

A still-air tremble. One evening, without clear cause, every tree of the Channā grove — from the pīpal to every channā tree — trembles faintly together, though the air is still. No wind, no leaf stirring; yet for a moment the whole grove, as if drawing a deep breath, trembles at once. The villagers, feeling it, gather afraid at the pīpal.

One with the grove. Nand and Ananyā run up. Būṛhbā, unsteady: "I don't know what it is, but some big event is near — my whole existence, from every root, feels it. After my water-burial, my memory settled in these trees, these roots. When the grove trembles, I myself tremble — and only when something is coming that can shake every name in the village. This tremble is a warning."

The omen recalled. The oldest woman, over ninety, recalls seeing this tremble once in childhood — after which came the great flood that washed away half the village. The village grows more alert: if the grove trembled so hard, the coming event will be as big. That night they gather at the grove, lamps burning, awaiting the unknown thing whose footfall the whole grove is giving.

● *The omen of the climax*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Būṛhbā and the grove are one — the tremble is his own foreboding.
- Such a tremble has preceded only the village's greatest turning-points.
- An omen (echoing the comet of -61) that the final chapter is imminent.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -11

Būṛhbā's Last Blessing

बूढ़बाक अन्तिम आशीर्वाद *Būṛhbāk Antim Āśīrvād*

"A blessing gives not the body but the name — Būṛhbā's last words became the seed of the next generation."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Būṛhbā gives Nand a blessing and warning for the role that is coming

You will not be alone

Būṛhbā's Last Blessing · बूढ़बाक अन्तिम आशीर्वाद — card 1 of 1

The handing-over. The night after the grove trembled, Būṛhbā calls Nand alone to the pīpal, one lamp burning, his face graver than Nand has ever seen. "You are my descendant, Āruṇi's grandson, and I feel a great test is coming in your life." To Nand it feels not like a tale but a farewell — as if Būṛhbā were placing his centuries' burden on his shoulders.

The ancestors' courage. "When that time comes, listen to your heart. Within you is the courage of Hulāsā, Sukhdev, Gaurī, Sunaynā — all our ancestors. You won't be alone. I, and our whole tale, will be with you, whether you see me or not."

Remember the names. "When the dark moment comes, you'll think you're alone — but that's an illusion. Every name I've held will stand behind you. The courage of those who didn't fear the flood, didn't bow in famine, didn't stay silent before injustice, dwells in your every breath. When fear comes, remember your name, and all the names that brought you here." Nand's heart, without saying no, accepts the burden.

● The witness-role passes to Nand

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Būṛhbā hands his centuries' burden of witness to Nand.
- In the dark moment, the isolation will be an illusion — the held names stand behind.
- "You will not be alone" becomes Nand's support for the ordeal to come.



The First Plunge on the Bridge

पुलपर पहिल छपाक *Pulpar Pahil Chapāk*

"The first plunge on the bridge — the first name in the water — the one who drowned, his name too rose on the leaf."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- At the bridge site, the accident finally happens whose footfall was long heard

He must not die twice

The First Plunge on the Bridge • पुलपर पहिल छपाक — card 1 of 1

The plunge. One moonless night, the river at full force after rain, the tired laborers work in the dark without full light or safety. Suddenly a laborer — his name still unclear — falls into the river. The sound of "chapāk" (the plunge) reaches the nearest hamlet — that same sound echoing through the village's tale year by year. Nand jumps in, but in the dark and current cannot save him; he reaches for the hand, calls the name — and gets neither.

Not your fault. Nand returns weeping, river-water and tears become one. Būṛhbā, gently: "This is the moment whose footfall I heard year by year. It is not your fault, but the fault of that darkness, that current, and a system that sees a laborer as a number, not a name. You couldn't save his body; but his name you can save."

The reckoning of the plunge. "If no one holds his name, that man dies twice — once in the water, once in the village's memory." Nand gives his life to finding that name and others like it — the search becoming the diary "the reckoning of the plunge," written every night, on whose first page he again writes: "the crocodile eats the body, not the name."

● The title-event arrives

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The jalsamādhi / "chapāk" of the title occurs — a nameless laborer drowns.
- The system that counts numbers, not names, is the true culprit.
- Nand's diary "छपाकक हिसाब" is formalized — to save names from a second death.



The Beginning of the Investigation

जाँचक आरम्भ *Jācak Ārambha*

"Investigation is like digging a well — first the mud, then the water; one who begins to dig will reach the truth."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- After the death, Nand and Satyavrat meet — the name-thread and the money-thread

Two threads of one net

The Beginning of the Investigation • जाँचक आरम्भ — card 1 of 1

The fake name. Nand digs for the laborer's name — the contractor's papers, the attendance-register, the man's companions. But the deeper he digs, the darker it grows: the laborer worked under a fake name and fake age; no one knew the real one, as if the man had lost his name while alive. The company's papers are unclear, its money moving somewhere far by hidden routes — a thread of a large, unseen net.

Name and money. Satyavrat, watching the company's banking, meets Nand: "I have investigated this company's suspicious transactions for years. You seek the laborers' names, I the money's route — perhaps our searches will meet." Būṛhbā: "Work together. One thread — the name — in your hand; the other — the money — in Satyavrat's. When both come together, the net will show its full form."

The net's two ends. From that day they investigate together — Nand by the name, Satyavrat by the money — matching evidence, and as they join the threads the vast net's form slowly clears: the drowned laborer of Gaṛh Nārikel on one side, and far away, the unseen glass tower on the other. "A net this vast has a hand behind it as powerful and merciless."

● The investigators unite

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Nand's name-thread and Satyavrat's money-thread are one net.
- The village's drowned laborer connects directly to Lau Kin-hang's tower.
- Patience in the digging — first the mud, then the clear water of truth.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -8

The Evidence Comes to Light

प्रमाणक बाहर आएब *Pramāṇak Bāhar Āeb*

"Evidence hidden in the dark will one day see the dawn — truth stays at the water's bed, but surely rises."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Satyavrat's years-old evidence finally reaches the court and the media

Truth is a lamp, not a sun

The Evidence Comes to Light • प्रमाणक बाहर आएब — card 1 of 1

The notebook speaks. Satyavrat, with Gop Kumar's help, gets his notebook's whole evidence to a trustworthy journalist and an honest agency. The dates, accounts, and transactions once locked in one silent man's notebook now come to light — and the net's form clears: Ujjwal's debt, Baṭuknāth's legal aid, Chandrapāl's mule account, and Lau Kin-hang's Hong Kong operation form one terrifying picture.

A lamp, not a sun. Nand fears the truth is too vast to be fully found. Būṛhbā: "The whole truth never comes at once. Truth is not a sun but a lamp — it doesn't erase all darkness, it gives only enough light to see the next step. Those who wait for the whole truth never speak; those who bring out their piece weaken the darkness, one lamp at a time."

Grief with a name. When the net's tale is first printed, villagers see names once whispered in courtyards now on the newspaper page. Some families who lost sons understand, for the first time, that their grief had a name and a cause — and in that knowledge, along with grief, a faint peace. A lamp once lit cannot easily be put out; darkness, for the first time, begins to retreat.

● *The reckoning made public*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The silent notebook's evidence reaches court and media; the net is exposed.
- Truth is a lamp — each piece weakens the dark, not a single blaze.
- Naming the loss gives the grieving families a fragile peace.



The Experience of the Half-Ghost

आधा-भूतक अनुभव *Ādhā-Bhūtak Anubhav*

"Half-truth and half-ghost — both frighten; one who knows the full name fears no half-ghost."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Amid the investigation and grief, Nand first senses Būṛhbā with his own eyes

One foot in the present, one among the names

The Experience of the Half-Ghost • आधा-भूतक अनुभव — card 1 of 1

The tender gaze. One night, tired and grieving, Nand sleeps by the pīpal's root, head on the witness-tree, and descends where the line between dream and truth grows thin. In the dream he sees Būṛhbā somewhat clearly — an old figure between smoke and light, his eyes holding a tenderness that gives Nand peace. Būṛhbā says nothing, only looks, as if saying: "you are on the right path."

The half-ghost. His grandmother smiles at the dream: "You've become a half-ghost. One who prepares to be a witness becomes somewhat like that. Būṛhbā is no ghost to frighten — he is the memory that has saved the village. One who holds names dwells in both worlds — one foot in the present, one among all the names that have passed. You stand on that threshold."

The voice that separates. Nand asks her the old tales — the śaṅkha-rajata, Hulāsā's water-burial, Sukhdev's nameless death — and feels them becoming his own, as if Būṛhbā's twelve hundred years and his few years slowly dissolve together. From that day he hears Būṛhbā's voice clearer — in the wind, the leaves, the inner voice that separates right from wrong; real or imagined, it keeps him on the path.

● Crossing the threshold

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Nand becomes a "half-ghost" — the witness-liminality (echoing Būṛhbā, -89).
- Holding names means dwelling in two worlds — present and remembered.
- Būṛhbā's tale and Nand's life begin to merge into one.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -6

Gop Kumar's Last Page

गोप कुमारक अन्तिम पन्ना *Gop Kumārak Antim Pannā*

"The last page in whose hand, he bears the tale's burden — Gop Kumar, handing over the name, grew light."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Gop Kumar completes his lifelong compilation and hands it to Nand and Ananyā

The witness changes, the tale does not break

Gop Kumar's Last Page • गोप कुमारक अन्तिम पन्ना — card 1 of 1

The last name. Gop Kumar, very old, completes the last page of his lifelong compilation — Būṛhbā's whole tale from Vācaspati Miśra to today. When he writes the last name, a peace comes to his face that only one who has fulfilled his life's purpose finds. Centuries of memory — śaṅkha-rajata, Hulāsā's water-burial, Sukhdev's nameless death, Yādavānand's panjī, Gaṅgādhār's press, the digital record — woven in one thread: the village's soul, preserved.

Into the next hands. He hands it to Nand and Ananyā: "This is my lifework. Now it is yours. Būṛhbā said the final chapter still remains — perhaps you will write it." Būṛhbā: "In every generation one tends memory. Yādavānand was such, Vibhā was such, you are such. What your hand joined is hundreds of lives' tale. Now the burden passes — but your name, in every page, will live forever."

The grove's farewell. What Nand and Ananyā receive from his trembling hand is not paper but a vow to fulfill with their lives. Some months later Gop Kumar passes peacefully — his compilation safe in their hands. That night, it is said, a faint rustle rose from every root of the grove, as if Būṛhbā and all the names bade a respectful farewell to one old, tired, but complete witness.

● The torch passes

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The whole counter-history is completed and handed to Nand and Ananyā.
- The witness changes each generation; the tale itself does not break.
- Gop Kumar dies fulfilled — the grove's rustle is the ancestors' farewell.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -5

The Net Exposed

जालक उजागर होएब *Jālak Ujāgar Hoeb*

"When the net was uncovered, not the fish but the fisher was caught — one who saw the net recognized the crocodile."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Nand and Satyavrat's evidence exposes the net — at least locally

An incomplete victory is still a step

The Net Exposed • जालक उजागर होएब — card 1 of 1

Into the light. Months of investigation bring the net's local form to light: Baṭuknāth's participation and Chandrapāl's mule account both stand exposed. Baṭuknāth — the reputed lawyer — must for the first time stand in the dock; Chandrapāl faces hard investigation, for one caught in the net, even unknowingly, bears his share before the law. But one name stays beyond reach: the shadow in the glass tower, Lau Kin-hang.

The seed of the next fight. Nand: "Our victory is incomplete." Būṛhbā: "In chapter -84, Yaśpati's end too was incomplete. Some darkness is never fully uncovered, only weakened — this too is progress. Every incomplete victory leaves a seed for the next generation. Lau Kin-hang may escape today, but the evidence you leave, someone will one day take up."

The net trembles. When Baṭuknāth stands in the dock, the elders who knew him as a boy watch — with less satisfaction of justice than grief for a lost dream. Nand sees the incomplete victory not as defeat but as a step, keeping every proof safe for the day someone brings the surviving shadow into the light too. The net did not fully break — but for the first time, it trembled.

● Partial justice

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The local net is exposed; the trans-national head (Lau Kin-hang) still escapes.
- Some darkness is only weakened, not erased — and that is still progress.
- Every incomplete victory leaves a seed and a proof for the next generation.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -4

The Final List of Names

नामक अन्तिम सूची *Nāmak Antim Sūcī*

"The name that was left out was joined at the last — the list complete, the crocodile's reckoning was done."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Nand completes, in his diary, the real names of every bridge-accident victim

Numbers made names again

The Final List of Names • नामक अन्तिम सूची — card 1 of 1

The search. After months, Nand recovers the real name of every laborer who died at the bridge site — going village to village, family to family, matching the contractor's struck-out papers with the laborers' forgotten addresses, until each man the system had made a mere number became a name again.

Thirty names. Thirty names, tied to a toll the official account had forgotten. Nand records all thirty in his "reckoning of the plunge" diary — beside each, the village, the family, the story. Those lost in three places at once — in water, in paper, and in memory — now live again, at least in one: the diary. Būṛhbā: "You are my most worthy descendant; your diary will become the next chapter of my whole tale."

A mother's tears. Among the thirty is a youth whose mother had watched the road every evening for years. When Nand shows her the son's name recorded in his diary, she weeps for the first time in long — for now, at least, she knows his name will never be lost. Nand feels himself a link in the long chain from śaṅkha-rajata to now, carrying Būṛhbā's twelve-hundred-year vow into his own generation.

● Restoring the erased

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The diary recovers the real names the system reduced to numbers.
- A name held is a body that no longer dies a second death.
- Nand carries the twelve-hundred-year vow into his own generation.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -3

The Completion of Twelve Hundred Years

बारह सय बरखक पूर्णता *Bārah Say Barakhak Pūrṇatā*

"The circle of twelve hundred years was completed — a new-moon night; what began, stood again at the end."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- On a new-moon night, the whole village calls the names — the circle closes

The burden shared by a thousand breaths

The Completion of Twelve Hundred Years • बारह सय बरखक पूर्णता — card 1 of 1

Nand joins the play. On a new-moon night the whole village gathers at the Channā grove for kabaddī — the old tradition where a player, in one breath, calls the ancestors' names, so the lost live again in the game's breath. This time Nand, so long only a witness, joins the play; when his turn comes the village falls silent, knowing Būṛhbā's next witness is raising his voice for the first time.

Collective remembrance. Nand runs, calling: "Hulāsā! Sukhdev! Ratnā! Gaṅgeśa! Gaurī! Sāvitri!" — and the elders join, adding their own ancestors, a lost brother who went abroad and never returned. The kabaddī turns into a collective remembrance, the whole village in one voice reviving every name of centuries in the dark.

The vow becomes the village's. Būṛhbā, from every root of the grove: "Twelve hundred years, Nand — and today, for the first time, the burden feels not mine alone but yours, all of you. The vow that wearied one breath is now shared by a thousand — this is my greatest reward." The grove trembles with the names, and for the first time in twelve hundred years, Būṛhbā feels a little lighter.

● The circle closes

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The kabaddī of names (from -82) becomes a whole-village collective remembrance.
- The witness-burden passes from one breath to a thousand.
- Beginning and end stand together — Būṛhbā's twelve-hundred-year vow is fulfilled.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT

Chapter -2

The Vow of the Next Generation

अगिला पीढ़ीक वचन *Agilā Pīrhīk Vacan*

"The vow the next generation takes saves the village — holding the name is not rescue; hearing it is release."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Nand, Ananyā, and the youth vow to carry the witness-tradition forward

Every skill joined in one vow

The Vow of the Next Generation • अगिला पीढ़ीक वचन — card 1 of 1

A new pledge. After the kabaddī, as the new-moon dark thins, Nand and Ananyā gather the youth and take a new pledge at the pīpal, the just-called names still echoing. The new generation stands to lift their ancestors' vow onto their own shoulders — the children who learned to question in Ananyā's school, the youth who joined records with Nand, all in one voice.

Coconut-leaf to digital. Nand: "We vow to carry forward Būṛhbā's tale, Gop Kumar's compilation, and every name." Ananyā: "We will use every tool, from the coconut-leaf school to the digital archive, so this tale is never lost." Būṛhbā accepts the vow with a calm, steady light, as if the tale were now in safe hands.

No one alone. Some of the youth know code, some folk-song and panjī, some law and accounts — and that night they join their skills in one vow. The inheritance Būṛhbā began with śaṅkha-rajata now passes, twelve hundred years on, into a whole generation's hands. In that light the village feels Būṛhbā say: "I am not alone — and now, you are not alone either."

● The inheritance passes on

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The witness-burden becomes a whole generation's, not one person's.
- Code, song, panjī, and law joined in a single shared vow.
- Nand and Ananyā move toward the final chapter, now very near.



VOL-0 • PRE-HISTORY • NOVEL EXCERPT • VOL-0 FINALE

Chapter -1

The Final Witness

अन्तिम साक्षी *Antim Sākṣī*

"The final witness who spoke turned the tale to another hand — the crocodile eats the body, not the name: the village's last refrain."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The last chapter of Vol-0 — Būṛhbā tells Nand the final secret of his tale

The tale folds into its own telling

The Final Witness · अन्तिम साक्षी — card 1 of 1

The secret. One last evening, Būṛhbā calls Nand alone to the pīpal: "I want to tell you something I've felt for years but never fully understood — I feel that my tale, in some form, far ahead, someone will write. Some writer I will never see, who will put my every name, every tear, every hope, onto paper."

Near enough to speak. Nand, stunned: "How do you know this?" Būṛhbā, smiling for the last time: "I don't know, Nand. I only feel it. And now I feel that writer is very near — perhaps near enough that I am speaking with you, in this very moment."

The curtain's edge. Nand stayed silent. That night, in the pīpal's shade, Būṛhbā's voice seemed to come from beyond the stage — and at that moment, from the far side of the stage, the sūtradhāra stepped out one last time from beside the curtain, stood before the reader, and spoke. So Vol-0 ends by folding into the act of its own telling, opening onto the नाट्य (theatre) that follows.

● The metafictional close of Vol-0

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Būṛhbā foresees the author (a mirror of Gajendra himself) who will write his tale.
- The fourth wall breaks: the sūtradhāra steps out to address the reader.
- Vol-0's refrain — "the crocodile eats the body, not the name" — becomes its last word.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER • PROLOGUE

Chapter 0

Garh Nārikel: A Brief Folk-Prologue

गढ़ नारिकेल: संक्षिप्त लोक-प्रस्तावना *Garh Nārikel: Saṅkṣipt Lok-Prastāvanā*

"The living geography of soil, water, labour, memory, and name. Hear the village before you hear the tale."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The village narrates itself — the cultural grammar in which the whole novel takes root

The village as a living geography

Garh Nārikel: A Brief Folk-Prologue · गढ़ नारिकेल: संक्षिप्त लोक-प्रस्तावना — card 1 of 4

Culture as lived discipline. Garh Nārikel is no mere dot on a map. It makes its body from soil, breathes through water, keeps its memory in trees and leaves, floats its grief in song, and guards its justice through tale, proverb, and collective testimony. Its folk-culture is not written statute but a lived discipline — the people do not read it, they do it; do not memorize it, they live it.

The collective, re-authored song. No song has a single author — the people are its makers. One mouth lifts the first line, a second takes the refrain, a third changes a word to fit the moment, a fourth folds a new event into an old verse. The same event lives one way in a grandmother's mouth, another in a boatman's, a third in a working woman's, a fourth in a child's play — yet one shared pulse beats through them all.

Water's two faces. The Kamalā-Balān and the Ganga's long memory make the village's water-map. Water is both blessing and peril — it irrigates the field and gives fish, yet can wash away homes, cut fields, and swallow bodies. From this duality the folk-songs carry water's double voice: on one side life and tenderness, on the other fear and jalsamādhi (water-burial).

● The cultural key

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The village is a body of soil, water, labour, memory, and name.
- Folk-culture is a lived discipline, not a written code.
- Its core seed: "the crocodile eats the body, not the name."

Who keeps the memory

Garh Nārikel: A Brief Folk-Prologue • गढ़ नारिकेल: संक्षिप्त लोक-प्रस्तावना — card 2 of 4

Women as the chief archive. The village's most continuous record lives in women's voices and hands — the sweeping of the courtyard, the aripan, the vrat-
tales, the birth-sohar and wedding songs, the planting and pounding of grain. A
daughter married into another village carries not only cloth and ornament but a
whole world of tune, tale, remedy, and speech. Bā reads a shoe, a gamchā, a leaf, a
threshold, a smell before she reads any paper.

Work-songs as knowledge. Each craft's song is a vessel of its knowledge —
the fisher's song holds the net's cast and the water's depth; the planting-song holds
the paddy's kind and the row's spacing; the carpenter's, the boatman's, the potter's
each bind skill to feeling so it is easily remembered. The song is not entertainment
but the very safety and success of the labour.

Inequality, told honestly. The prologue refuses to sanitize: one wall is thick,
another's hut thin; one courtyard high, another sunk in the first flood; caste
distance and historical injustice are real. Folk-culture does not merely mask this
unevenness — through song, satire, proverb, and collective resistance it voices it.
Folk-justice (the Channā grove's court) hears the name and the victim, where the
official register erases them.

● The keepers

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Women hold the deepest, most continuous archive of the village.
- Work-songs carry craft-knowledge, not just feeling.
- Caste and inequality are told honestly — folk-justice hears the erased.

The tales-and-songs: a cultural map

Garh Nārikel: A Brief Folk-Prologue • गढ़ नारिकेल: संक्षिप्त लोक-प्रस्तावना — card 3 of 4

Objects that testify. A cycle of twenty-four khissā-and-gīt (tale-and-song) pieces maps the whole novel's motifs. Objects bear witness where paper fails: the Ḍakahī pond's leaf-lamp lit whenever a name is unjustly struck; the witness-stone that warms to truth and cools to a lie; the leaf that opens on the stump only when a full name is written; the shoe, gamchā, and bangle that make the absent present.

Memory, justice, and care. The tales rehearse the village's ethics: the shared hearth in a lean year ("the quarter's true boundary is where the shared smoke reaches"); saving next year's seed over today's price; remembering the dead not with praise alone but by finishing their unfinished work; the kabaddī where a lost name must be carried back across the line.

Dignity and the new dangers. The cycle also breaks silences and meets new threats: welcoming a daughter's birth with the same sohar as a son's; erasing caste and gender lines in children's play; breaking silence on domestic violence; the nirguṇ song's "all breath is one"; the name-watch children keep; the warning against the "crocodile of the glass screen" (digital fraud); and planting a tree for every newborn — saving breath for the next generation, not only old things.

● The 24 tales-and-songs

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Each place has a story; objects testify where paper fails.
- The cycle encodes the whole novel's motifs of memory and justice.
- It meets new dangers — digital fraud, and the environmental watch.

The dedication and the book's own voice

Garh Nārikel: A Brief Folk-Prologue • गढ़ नारिकेल: संक्षिप्त लोक-प्रस्तावना — card 4 of 4

To the nameless. The prologue closes with a समर्पण (dedication) — to the nameless whose names were never carved in stone but whose voice still flows in water, leaf, and paper; and to the informants and whistleblowers whose faces are recorded nowhere, but whose truth cuts through stone: "whose families were terrorized, whose jobs and lives were both lost, whose homes were burned — and who spoke anyway."

Truth as a seed. The aphorisms give the moral spine: "Truth is a seed — however heavy the stone it is buried under, one day it sprouts." "One who sees the truth and stays silent dies twice — once in body, once in soul." "A village that forgets its history — there the coconut tree stops bearing fruit."

From the mouth of the book. Seven closing folk-aphorisms speak in the village's own voice: water speaks, the tree listens, the leaf writes the name — but the stone stays silent; the one who drowned spoke, the one who survived forgot, and the river kept both in its belly; without a name a ghost cannot last in the game, and without a name a person cannot last in history.

● The moral spine

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Dedicated to the nameless and to whistleblowers "who spoke anyway."
- Truth is a seed that sprouts through stone; silence is a double death.
- This prologue is the ground in which the whole novel takes root.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 1

The Kabaddī of the Channā Grove

चन्ना गाछीक कबड्डी *Channā Gāchik Kabaḍḍī*

"Where the living stay silent, the ghosts fight their lawsuit through kabaddī."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The novel's true opening — the ghosts play a lawsuit, and the first plunge falls

A lawsuit played by the dead

The Kabaddī of the Channā Grove · चन्ना गाछीक कबड्डी — card 1 of 4

The ghost-kabaddī. At the Channā grove the ghosts — bhūt, pret, rākṣas, the spectator loth, the drowned-woman paniḍubbī, the four-faced pīpal-Brahmā, the handless Hulāsī, and Būṛhbā the twelve-hundred-year judge — play a kabaddī that no one can tell from a lawsuit. A human touches the earth; a ghost touches the earth's memory. A human crosses a line; a ghost crosses time.

Across time, not space. A ghost who enters the opposing court touches 1885, exits in 1934, steps on 1977, brushes a 2026 mobile-tower's red light, and returns — so it cannot be caught, for its body is everywhere at once. The game is no longer nightly; it begins whenever someone falls on the bridge, a court-date passes, or a name is struck from a file. The ghosts call it "the name-saving kabaddī."

Carry the name back. The rule: a ghost who crosses into the opposing court must carry one name back across the line. One caught has his name go dim; one who touches the boundary and returns has his name sprout like a bud on a coconut leaf. The dead do not cheer — in the dead's game there is no victory, only remembrance.

● *The frame of the novel*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The ghost-kabaddī is a trial the dead play across time (1885–2026).
- It triggers at each fall, court-date, or struck name.
- To win is to carry a lost name home, not to score.

The bridge and the first plunge

The Kabaddi of the Channā Grove • चन्ना गाछीक कबड्डी — card 2 of 4

Names never in the register. "Asia's biggest road-bridge" rises on the Ganga. The laborers' names never fully enter the contractor's register — Ram written "Ram," Mangal written "Mangalā," a father's name gone, a village changed, an age of nineteen made forty-five. "On paper a man changes; in the river he does not — the river knows the drowned by their true names."

Bisesar falls. Bisesar Pāswān climbs the pier, basket of gravel on his head. Nand shouts, "wear the safety-belt." Bisesar turns and laughs, as if to say — "babu, does a belt fill the belly?" His foot slips; he falls spinning. The people's eyes see a body enter the water; the crocodiles' eyes see a name go under. The register writes: "left work, absent."

"Development with dignity." The foreign site-head Edward Broom's photos hang everywhere — smiling, patting an Indian child's head, captioned "development with human dignity." In Delhi he reports "deaths in controlled numbers," and plans to lecture at Harvard on ethics using this bridge. Nand's reports are gutted in red pencil — "underage," "corpse," "liability" struck out, leaving only "worker absent."

● The title-event opens the novel

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Workers' names are falsified in the register from the first page.
- Bisesar Pāswān's plunge — "does a belt fill the belly?"
- Broom's "dignity" and "controlled numbers" — the record is doctored.

Nand the witness; the names surface

The Kabaddi of the Channā Grove • चन्ना गाछीक कबड्डी — card 3 of 4

The far-seeing heir. Nand Āruṇi is a junior engineer but really "a troubled witness," descendant of the far-seeing Kalit. He foresees a future he cannot yet name — a digital-arrest warrant, a mule account, Hong Kong — though he carries only a small diary, no mobile. A second death follows: Chhotū, underage but registered as twenty-eight, whose mother waits by the river calling his name.

The crocodile's teeth. The boatman Fakīrā Sāhnī tells him: "The crocodile cleans the river; but man wants to give it his crime too — thinking that if the crocodile eats the body, the crime is gone. But the crocodile eats the body, not the name. The name sticks in its teeth." Nand writes the line in his diary.

Number, or name. Nand becomes a half-ghost — his shadow slips at midday to the grove, and returns with the grove's dry leaf caught on his foot. He memorizes the workers' names one by one until "his memory became a register." On the water, crocodiles bear numbers on their backs — "thirty," "three hundred," "three thousand" — and a voice comes from the water: "not the number — the name."

● *The witness awakens*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Nand foresees the coming digital crime, carrying only a diary.
- "The crocodile eats the body, not the name — it sticks in its teeth."
- The water insists: not the number (30/300/3000), but the name.

The crocodiles wear suits

The Kabaddi of the Channā Grove • चन्ना गाछीक कबड्डी — card 4 of 4

Not only in the river. Nand realizes the crocodiles are not only in the water: "some wear suits, some a lawyer's coat, some a professor's gown, some a minister's kurta, some a smile on the ethics stage." The pīpal-Brahmā prophesies the chain: this bridge's money becomes medicine, the medicine's money weapons, the weapons' money gambling, the gambling's money court-dates — and under those dates, names are buried again.

Numbers where names were. Būṛhbā decrees that the kabaddī will now save even future victims' names. In the sky over the grove appear not stars but bank-account numbers — some flowing toward the Hong Kong glass tower, some stuck on a Meerut law college's wall, some entering a bar-council affidavit, some landing in a village youth's mobile. The ghosts, for the first time, fear: saving a name was easy — but where is the name behind a number?

The name reaches home. A third worker falls in the night; Nand cannot save him, but grasps the torn corner of his gamchā — of a colour like wet paper on which a name has been struck. Bā finds that corner on her threshold. And on Nand's blank fourth diary page, the word surfaces letter by letter — जलसमाधि — as he grasps that the bridge is on the Ganga, but the crime's root reaches his own village.

● The modern crocodile

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The crocodile wears suits, gowns, and kurtas — the fraud is human.
- Future victims (Ujjwal, Baṭuknāth, Lau Kin-hang) already appear in the game.
- "जलसमाधि" surfaces on the diary — the crime reaches the village itself.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 2

The Village on the Right Side

दहिन कातक गाम *Dahin Kātak Gām*

"The river cuts the field-boundary with its current; paper cuts the village with a court-date."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Bā reads the gamchā, and the family's origin opens from an old coconut leaf

The leaf that holds the family's origin

The Village on the Right Side • दहिन कातक गाम — card 1 of 3

The smell of the hand. Bā takes the torn gamchā inside. It smells not of water or silt, but of the hand that carries cement all day, dreams frightened dreams at night, and is written "absent" in the register before dawn. In Gaṛh Nārikel nothing exists without a lineage — trees, stones, wells, even a broken sickle have a kula (line).

The box opens at a breath. She opens the room where old papers, threads, keys, and old insults are kept together, and a brass-latch box whose lock, unopened for years, opens at her breath — as if the ancestors within had been waiting. The first voice from the box is not paper but a leaf: the coconut leaf Lattaṛ Ṭhākur dried by hand when Kalit was born, still stained with turmeric.

Place him among the ancestors. Bā sets the gamchā-corner beneath that leaf, knowing: "whose name is not found, place him among the ancestors; some leaf will stir." And through that leaf, the village opens — small on the map, but in memory large enough for many rivers to flow.

● Reading the object

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Bā reads a smell and a leaf before she reads any paper.
- Everything in the village has a lineage — even a broken sickle.
- The coconut leaf from Kalit's birth opens the family's whole story.

Kalit's story — paper against soil

The Village on the Right Side • देहिन कातक गाम — card 2 of 3

The child who reads the tree. In 1885 Kalit is born to Lattaṛ Ṭhākur — the child who "understands the tree's language" and leaps like a frog. As English rule spreads, Lattaṛ sees that what the soil says is not heard in court; the court hears only what paper says. He brings a Bengali tutor so Kalit can learn the paper's language and save the land — and Kalit learns that "one who writes the letter can change the owner of the ploughed field."

The name that will not hold still. The name-game enters the house: Lattaṛ, Lattar, Laṭdhar — one spelling in the land-record, another in the rent-slip, a third in the school. "Save my name," Lattaṛ begs the coconut tree. At Darbhanga, Kalit first hears "tārīkh" — a man whose field the river had eaten while the court kept granting dates: "the river eats today; the court hears next month."

Smell the wet paper. By the river Lattaṛ warns Kalit: "One day a paper will come to our house wet. Smell it before you read it — if it smells of soil, trust it; if it smells of money, do not sign." That warning flows in Nand's blood generations later: reading the death-list, he smells money in the numbers and silt on the page-corner, and knows — "this is not a list, it is the crocodile's mouth."

● *The inherited warning*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Kalit learns that paper, not soil, rules the courts.
- A name will not hold still across registers — the instability is the danger.
- "Smell the wet paper" — the warning surfaces in Nand's blood.

Nand's first testimony

The Village on the Right Side • दहिन कातक गाम — card 3 of 3

Not a lawsuit — a testimony. Bā carries the gamchā and Kalit's old court-slip to the Channā grove. Būṛhbā reads "Lattaṛ Ṭhākur and unknown boundary," then declares: "This is not Lattaṛ's lawsuit. This is Nand's first testimony." When the river eats land and paper won't accept it, the boundary is unknown; when the state eats the body and won't accept the death, the name is unknown; when the court gives dates and life stops, justice is unknown.

Start from the village. Nand writes: "Death does not happen the day the body stops; death happens the day the name is removed." On his diary, beneath "जलसमाधि," a line appears in ant-fine script he did not write — "start from Gaṛh Nārikel." He understands: the testimony begins not from the river but from the village — for one without a home has no name that holds.

The application and the date. Bā tells the child Āruṇi: "paper can hold a lie; the mind cannot for long," and "a name sometimes waits five generations." The loth names it — "the crocodile of paper." Nand files an application — the full list of the dead, verification of names written "absent," a search for the bodies, notice to families, a safety audit. It is stamped "received," and a tāṛikh is assigned — the date that can be either the name's enemy or its boat.

● The witness begins

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Būṛhbā names the gamchā "Nand's first testimony."
- Death is the removal of the name — the witness starts from the village.
- The application is filed; the tāṛikh can be the name's enemy or its boat.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 3

The Reckoning of the Plunge

छपाकक हिसाब *Chapākak Hisāb*

"The splash of a stone in a well comes late — but it never stops demanding a reckoning."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Nand's application meets the office wall — and his diary is formally named

Footprint, splash, and silence

The Reckoning of the Plunge • छपाकक हिसाब — card 1 of 3

The sated stamp. Nand's application lies open on the project-office desk, the purple government stamp "received" sitting on it "like a fat crocodile sunning itself — sated, awaiting its next turn." A foreign-company plaque reads "human safety is our first pledge" — Devanagari letters with a foreign gait, "a sentence whose soul lives in another country, only its shadow hung here."

The clerk who weighs. Chief clerk Diwakar Lal does not smell the paper — he weighs it, calculating how many files will open. "This language has become harsh." "Death is harsh," Nand replies. "Many leave the site without permission." Nand: "One who leaves has footprints; one who falls has a splash; one whose name is cut has silence — telling these three apart is the office's job."

The teeth of the date. "Send it up." "Up to whom?" "There is much 'up' in government; the more you send up, the more time to come down." In that laugh Nand sees the real teeth of the tārikh — a small serpent already out of its egg, unseen, but its hiss fully stored.

● *The bureaucratic wall*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The "received" stamp is itself a crocodile — the process devours.
- Footprint, splash, silence — the office must distinguish the three.
- The tārikh's teeth are already growing inside the office.

The record that erases the living

The Reckoning of the Plunge • छपाकक हिसाब — card 2 of 3

Language wears the bone. At the inspection meeting the foreign consultant Victor Halden's English is softened by the interpreter: "casualties are manageable" becomes "situation under control"; "keep the list limited" becomes "records should be clean." "Language, flowing, wears away the bone of meaning." Nand: "The record is clean only when it is complete." The interpreter renders his line merely as "some local concern."

"Local?" Nand shakes: is the Ganga local, the death local — the company's profit global, but the fallen body local? "Where the pier is filled with a laborer, that is not construction." "You are being emotional; an emotional engineer cannot build a bridge." Nand: "Without being emotional, you cannot tell what is inside the pier." He becomes an inconvenient witness.

Erased before death. At the worker-tola, Bisesar's wife shows his torn shoes — "whose shoe is here, his foot is in the river" — though the register says "left work." And the women whose names merge into their husbands' in the register: "the killing begins before the death, from the first page of paper, where a living woman is erased without even being given the chance to die."

● *The doctored record*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Translation softens "limit the list" into "keep records clean."
- The fallen body is called "local" while the profit is global.
- Women workers are erased into their husbands' names before death.

The lights in the water

The Reckoning of the Plunge • छपाकक हिसाब — card 3 of 3

Three nights of light. The chowkidar Bholaram shows Nand lights rising in the water: "whoever falls makes a light for three nights; the fourth night the crocodile eats him; then no light." A universal face surfaces and says: "Name." "You must listen before you write the name." Nand begins the practice of hearing names from the river.

The smell of money. The safety-book's beautiful lies (helmets distributed, ropes checked, no night work) contradict the reality outside. The project head offers a bribe envelope; Nand smells it — "the smell of money" — and refuses: "my elders told me, if wet paper smells of money, do not sign." A threat note appears on his bed; he pastes it in his diary: "Threat received — meaning the name goes in the right direction."

The diary named. Another rain-night collapse takes a worker whose voice gives the name "Sarayu" — a woman the office will call non-existent. Nand tears the government notice for the first time and opens a new diary page titled "छपाकक हिसाब" (The Reckoning of the Plunge): Bisesar Pāswān; Chhotū (real name to be found); Sarayu (officially non-existent). The pages fill themselves.

● The witness's ledger

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The drowned make three nights of light before the crocodile eats them.
- Nand refuses the bribe — "if it smells of money, do not sign."
- The diary "छपाकक हिसाब" is formally named — the reckoning begins.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 4

Thirty Names, Three Hundred Corpses

तीस नाम, तीन सय लाश *Tīs Nām, Tīn Say Lās*

"Thirty names in the register, three hundred bodies in the soil — the dead always carry the weight of the deficit."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The official list stops at thirty; the village carries the count to three hundred

The object testifies

Thirty Names, Three Hundred Corpses • तीस नाम, तीन सय लाश — card 1 of 3

A government miracle. Sarayu wasn't in the register — she carried sacks in her dead husband's name: "she earned the wage, her husband ate the name; when she died, the office said the husband had already left." "Dead men live on paper, and living women stay dead on paper — a miracle needing not a mantra but a stamp; and the stamp is crueler, for it never asks a question, only demands a signature."

Presence as proof. Nand counts not names but objects: Bisesar's shoes, Chhotū's torn gamchā, Sarayu's silver bangle, a child's broken slate, a brass bowl. "When the name is cut, the object testifies — the object does not lie, for it has no language, only presence, and presence is the most solid evidence." The office scoffs: "a shoe as evidence?" — "whose foot is not found, his shoe is evidence."

Thirty, or three hundred. A telegram: "keep the list limited; control rumours; do not obstruct progress" — "in government language a dead man's name first becomes 'rumour,' then 'obstruction,' then 'anti-development' — three shells, one corpse inside." In the grove the ghosts count, and the count does not stop at thirty: "the office says thirty; the river says three hundred."

● *Objects as evidence*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A stamp is crueler than a mantra — it demands a signature, asks nothing.
- When the name is cut, the object testifies by its mere presence.
- "The office says thirty; the river says three hundred."

The beauty that kills

Thirty Names, Three Hundred Corpses • तीस नाम, तीन सय लाश — card 2 of 3

Clean columns. The official list: thirty names typed on clean paper, in neat columns and clean font. "Government paper does not kill the dead — it beautifies them, and in that beauty is the greatest violence: a violence with no blood, only well-ordered columns." Bisesar is listed with his father's name wrong; Chhotū, Sarayu, Muniya, Dhanesari are not there at all.

Construction or tomb. Nand: "Where the pier is filled with corpses, that is not construction but a tomb." "You are crossing your limit." "When the boundary itself has drowned in the water, how is there a rule against crossing it?" His file is locked in a separate cupboard — from which, at night, a sound comes: "rats," says the office; "names," says Nand.

A squint made a smile. At the staged compensation distribution, Bisesar's wife asks, "where is Chhotū? where is Sarayu?" — "where the dead's family stands, there the court begins." The press photo catches her squinting in the sun, captioned as a grateful smile: "in the newspaper world even a squint becomes a smile; telling grief from light is no longer the editor's job." Then Nand's transfer order arrives — "for administrative reasons."

● *The violence of the clean list*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The neat list is a violence with no blood — only ordered columns.
- "Where the family of the dead stands, the court begins."
- The press turns a grieving squint into a smile; Nand is transferred.

The village counts to three hundred

Thirty Names, Three Hundred Corpses • तीस नाम, तीन सय लाश — card 3 of 3

The shoe that returns. Bisesar's wife gives Nand the shoes: "if I keep them, the police call it theft; if you keep them, they become paper." Bā, seeing them, knows: "to understand the village-people you need no paper — if a shoe returns alone, know a whole crowd stands behind it." The night-assembly restores the true names — Chhotū is "Bholaṭun," from a village the flood cut two years ago; Muniya was pregnant; Dhanesari carried sacks after putting her child to sleep.

A folk-song of names. Nand teaches the village children to recite the names — Bisesar, Sarayu, Muniya, Bholaṭun — until they become "a folk-song born without a singer, without an author, only on the strength of need." "The government list stopped at thirty; the village children carried the count to three hundred" — Nand's first victory, not in court but in the village's memory.

The date's crocodile waits. The petition is filed — list-revision, independent inquiry, recognition of the women, compensation-fraud, safety-negligence — but the tārikhs multiply (records not brought, judge on leave, file "accidentally" misfiled). The loth names what waits: "the crocodile of the tārikh lives in the court." The bridge is inaugurated to cheers, its red ribbon like blood — but a voice grows: "not thirty. Three hundred."

● *The first victory — in memory*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A returned shoe carries a whole crowd behind it.
- The children's recitation carries the count from thirty to three hundred.
- The first victory is won in memory, as the court's crocodile waits.



The Crocodile of the Date

तारीखक गोहि *Tārīkhak Gohi*

"The ghat's water is visible, so people are saved; the date's water is unseen, so people drown."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- In court the crocodile is invisible — it becomes the tāṛīkh itself

The court as a stagnant pond

The Crocodile of the Date • तारीखक गोहि — card 1 of 3

Rope that entangles. Nand enters the district court "not a building, but an old pond" — dust like moss, files bound in red tape "like the paniḍubbī's hair dried into rope, rope that does not bind, only entangles." In the petition the three hundred names shrink to twelve lines — "other unknown dead" — Sarayu, Muniya, Dhanesari, Bholatun all become "other." "The court fears a thick file, but the government does not fear a thick pile of corpses."

A pause at the shoe. The junior government advocate Satyavrat Mehta rises to read "death toll thirty; petition exaggerated" — but his eye falls on Bisesar's shoe, and instead of dismissing, he asks for the state record. "That small sentence hung in the court's air like the worker's gamchā caught on the pier — small, but not to be taken down."

Teeth, not raindrops. The tārikhs multiply — the file is in the project office, the inquiry committee, the copy illegible, the chief engineer on leave, the judge transferred. "The tārikhs were not raindrops that wet the earth; they were the crocodile's teeth, cutting a little flesh off the name each time — so slowly the pain comes late, but the loss is complete." The families thin at each date.

● *The invisible crocodile*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The three hundred names shrink to "other unknown dead."
- Satyavrat pauses at the shoe and asks for the record — a small refusal.
- The tārikh cuts the name a little at a time — loss so slow it is missed.

The lawyers of delay

The Crocodile of the Date • तारीखक गोहि — card 2 of 3

The broker. Chandrapāl Batra appears — Meerut LLB, dealing in papers, bail, and affidavits: "I can reach up to Delhi." Nand: "I don't need reach, I need names." Batra: "Names? Names are made on paper. What is not on paper is not in court." In his eyes is not a river but a reckoning.

The art of delay. Baṭuknāth Hariharan appears — famed senior advocate, the foreign company's "legal-propriety advisor." "He does not stop justice; he slows its pace so much that the litigant grows old on the road — an art so subtle no court can call it a crime." To Batra he murmurs of a "signal" instead of a percentage — the word from which, years later, Chandrapāl's whole digital crime will run.

A thumbprint kept. Satyavrat sees the women workers filed as "family helpers," and realizes "government language proves not truth but convenience." He keeps a copy of Sarayu's thumbprint in his private diary — his first lesson in law: "a law that cannot read a woman's thumbprint is mere language, not justice." "The court's crocodile is more patient than the river's — the river eats at once; the court eats generation by generation."

● *Delay as a weapon*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Batra: "what is not on paper is not in court."
- Baṭuknāth's art — slow the case till the litigant grows old.
- Satyavrat keeps Sarayu's thumbprint — his first lesson in real justice.

Memory outlasts the date

The Crocodile of the Date • तारीखक गोहि — card 3 of 3

The half-victory. The objects are admitted to the record — the dead enter the court register as objects. "Even a half-victory is a victory." Then the office is broken into: Bisesar's shoe-photo gone, Sarayu's thumbprint page swapped. But Nand kept a second copy at Bā's — "the river does not keep one copy; if one channel breaks, another." Baṭuknāth realizes Nand is "not an emotional engineer, but an engineer armed with memory — a danger to the system."

The counsel in the corridor. Satyavrat quietly counsels him: "make many copies; do not trust the court alone. I am the government's lawyer, not the government's servant — and the state's soul, if it survives, lives outside the file." The years pass; judges and clerks change, but the red tape does not; Nand's hair whitens, Bā's cough deepens.

The dripping evidence. A flood enters the evidence-room; Bisesar's shoe drips — छपाक — and the clerk who called it rubbish steps back afraid: "worn-out evidence does not speak words, it drips water." Nand writes: "In court the crocodile is invisible — it becomes the tārikh, it chews the file's corner, it eats a person's age; but when the paper gets wet, the dead speak again." Būṛhbā decrees: "whoever has memory, the tārikh cannot eat."

● *The unbreakable diary*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Objects enter the record — a half-victory that still counts.
- Memory makes copies — "if one channel breaks, another."
- "Whoever has memory, the tārikh cannot eat."



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 6

Harvard's Ethics

हार्वर्डक एथिक्स *Hārvarḍak Ethiks*

"Before you wipe the shoe of ethics that climbed the stage, look — whose blood is on its sole."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The crime goes global — and a great-granddaughter carries the name across the ocean

The ethics stage and the leaking water

Harvard's Ethics • हार्वर्डक एथिक्स — card 1 of 3

The great-granddaughter. At Harvard's auditorium, snow outside, warm light within, every neck bears an identity-card — "but no card said how many stains are on its owner's soul; that absence was itself a language." Ira Āruṇi, Nand's great-granddaughter born abroad, sits at the back — she who has heard "chapak" since childhood in Bā's phone-tales, though the foreign-born "trust footnotes, not metaphors."

The company changes, not the values. Edward Broom takes the stage — the same name across many companies: "the company changes, not the values." Ira recalls the village saying: "the river changes, not the current." His slides: an African hospital, flood-relief, pandemic medicine, and a bridge captioned "1978: a model community project in India."

Water for the dead. As Broom says "standards" and "ethics," drops of water fall from his mouth — carrying fine sand that curves into Devanagari-like shapes, "as if a language had come to this far land for its proof." "Broom's speech was for the auditorium's ears; his water was for the dead."

● The crime, laundered

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Ira Āruṇi — the next-generation witness, born abroad — is introduced.
- One group's many companies launder a single hunger.
- The dead's evidence surfaces even on the ethics stage.

Four cities, one thread

Harvard's Ethics • हार्वर्डक एथिक्स — card 2 of 3

The question and the deflection. Ira rises: "how many workers died in the 1978 Indian bridge project?" Broom: "we don't retain the complete memory of every project — respect for local records." "And if the local record is a lie?" Prof. Elina Graves deflects to "the broader question of institutional responsibility" — "the broad view always saves the specific crime."

The coordinators. In the corner, Rāghav "Signal" Somānī messages Chandrapāl Batra: "foreign-born girl, question on the bridge, find out about her." Batra — his law degree a lock-picking tool — opens two folders, old (bridge, compensation, workers) and new (gaming-app, mule-accounts, digital-arrest), "the same ink, the same hunger." Baṭuknāth Hariharan's reply: "trust the process" — his favourite weapon.

The erased names. In Delhi, Satyavrat reads "death toll not above thirty" and finds, on an old attachment, hand-written names half-cut by ink "as if the government pen were performing the dead's last rites." He writes "original list to be obtained," then "if available" — the "if" shaming him.

● The braided plot

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "The broad view always saves the specific crime."
- Rāghav, Batra, and Baṭuknāth coordinate the cover-up by message.
- Satyavrat's small refusal — "the original list to be obtained."

The name crosses the ocean

Harvard's Ethics • हार्वर्डक एथिक्स — card 3 of 3

Nand's page. In the library Ira opens an old family email from Bā — Nand's scanned page: "death toll differs from the government register; no address for the woman worker named Sarayu." A grain of wet sand beside her question-mark forms a thin crocodile-line, "as if the village's river had sent a small part of itself across the sea."

A death without a river. In the grove a new soul arrives — no basket, but a mobile with an ever-dark screen: "There was no river. There was a game, a debt, a man who spoke as police on the phone, the fear of the home's honour." Būṛhbā: "Now the crocodile is not only in the water."

Percentage is hunger. Ira emails the ethics center three lines asking for a public question; hearing Bā's voice — "one killed on paper returns through paper" — she presses send. Rāghav's deleted message's echo reaches the grove, where the dead youth's mobile flashes one word: "percentage." Hulāsī: "This is not a name. This is hunger."

● The witness, renewed

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Ira finds Nand's own record — the family's witness passes to her.
- The crocodile is now global and digital, not only riverine.
- "Percentage" is the new hunger; the name is what it erases.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 7

The Price of Breath

श्वासक भाव *Śvāsak Bhāv*

"When the market prices breath, even the ghosts leave their game and turn to look at the living."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- When breath itself is priced, the auditor Gop Kumar finds the thread

When breath is priced

The Price of Breath • श्वासक भाव — card 1 of 3

An invisible death. In the spring of 2020 the world locks indoors — empty roads, trains like dead iron beasts, clear skies but clouded chests. This death is invisible: "it doesn't touch the body, it catches the breath first." Būṛhbā: "when man piles up much sin, water and air demand their reckoning — water sends the crocodile, air stops the breath."

The family's curse. Bā counsels Āruṇi Nandan by phone: "keep writing names — died of disease, at the hospital, without oxygen, without medicine — write each separately; later they all become 'other.'" "'Other' was this family's curse": the bridge-worker became "other," the court-woman became "other," now the patient stands in the "other" queue.

The death market. Hospital beds are priced; oxygen cylinders change price every evening, "as if not a stock market but a death market had opened." A broker whispers, "deposit advance, paper later" — and Āruṇi recalls the court: then paper came first, body later; now the body is at the door, and paper sleeps inside as a bed.

● The pandemic crocodile

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The new death catches the breath before it touches the body.
- "Other" — the family's recurring curse — swallows the counted dead.
- The market prices breath itself; the object of care becomes a bill.

Gop Kumar, the auditor

The Price of Breath • श्वासक भाव — card 2 of 3

A quiet man among the sheets. Gop Kumar enters the story — "not a hero with a sword, but a quiet man among Excel sheets," an internal auditor at a pandemic-supply company. "In the ad, humanity; in the bill, percentage." He finds one oxygen cylinder billed to three districts on one day, a closed hospital credited with five hundred regulators, lakhs billed on a dead distributor's signature.

The code NR-77. A recurring code — "NR-77" — carries the note "old bridge project—liability adjustment." Why is the water-burial's shadow in a breath-cylinder ledger? At the bottom stands "Broom-Calder Global" — the same group whose Edward Broom lectures on human dignity abroad, its Indian affiliate showing empty cylinders as filled.

Thirty again. A line reads "corpse-management kit: quantity 3000; receipt-proof 30." Thirty again — "the number cut into Gop, bleeding not blood but memory. On the bridge, thirty names; in the pandemic, thirty receipts; the rest 'other,' 'adjusted,' 'natural loss.' The language changed, not the sin."

● The audit as witness

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Gop reads bills, not ads — "in the ad humanity, in the bill percentage."
- Code NR-77 ties the pandemic fraud back to the old bridge.
- "3000 kits, 30 receipts" — the thirty recurs; the sin is unchanged.

The paper that breathes

The Price of Breath • श्वासक भाव — card 3 of 3

The shadowless informer. A contact reaches Gop from a grey circle with no number — Ishān Datt, the "shadowless informer" who is officially dead and moves among the living's lies: "one who has died on paper does not speak by name." His counsel: split the paper in three — "one to keep watching, one to keep listening to the water, one to hold the dead."

The name at the bottom. A hidden folder appears — donations routed to a foreign ethics center, and the last line: "Lau Kin-hang — consultation: percentage secured," the money running Singapore–Hong Kong–Dubai–Gurgaon–Meerut. A medical bill flowing into a Meerut legal consultation; a vaccine-awareness fund into a gaming company.

One reckoning. Gop's access is cut, his password changed — but he had already copied, "one with mother, one with water, one with air," the lesson Nand's blood taught him unseen. He writes the chapter's first line: "the reckoning of breath is not separate from the reckoning of the water-burial." Far off, the paniḍubbī kisses an empty vial, and a drop falls — chapak.

● The threads converge

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Ishān Datt, the shadowless informer, teaches: keep three copies.
- Lau Kin-hang's name surfaces; the money is transnational.
- Breath's reckoning and the water-burial's are revealed as one.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 8

The Crocodile of the Screen

स्क्रीनक गोहि *Skrīnak Gohi*

"There is no body in the screen — but there is water enough to drown a body."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The screen-crocodile eats the future — Ujjwal Jhā's water-burial

The crocodile that eats the future

The Crocodile of the Screen • स्क्रीनक गोहि — card 1 of 3

A footless shadow. At the grove a new shadow appears — not bhūt or pret, but footless, flickering like a mobile screen "whose light wakes the eye but never touches the heart." Paniḍubbī: "this one drowned not in water but in the eye." Būṛhbā: "the river's crocodile ate the body; this screen's crocodile eats the future."

Licking the finger. In Gaṛh Nārikel, Ujjwal Jhā — jobless after school — is drawn to the app "Rājā-Rāti" ("play, win, instant withdrawal"). He bets 200 and wins 500, bets 500 and wins 2000: "the crocodile never eats the whole body the first day; it licks the finger first."

The warning. His cousin Devika Sah: "this is not a game, it is a net." "If it were a net, why would it let me win first?" She cannot say "algorithm," but her sense knows: "what gives first, surely asks later." The chapter's own folk-song is a plea — say the name to your mother; your life is bigger than any lost sum; do not bear the shame alone.

● The lure

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The screen-crocodile eats the future — the drowning is of the eye.
- The early wins are bait: "it licks the finger first."
- The novel's warning: it is a net, not a game — speak, do not hide.

The net tightens

The Crocodile of the Screen • स्क्रीनक गोहि — card 2 of 3

The mule accounts. From Meerut, Batra scripts the trap: "lengthen the rope of trust; day five raise the limit; day seven a bonus; day ten the debt-line." Mule accounts are opened in jobless youths' names (Munna Pāswān and others, 5000 each) — Munna, told it is "mobile-company work," gives his mother the note; she keeps it, and water-sounds begin from the box.

The debt-line. Ujjwal sinks — win, loss, double stake, debt; "the special-player loan-line opens," 10,000, 20,000, 50,000. "The screen's crocodile chews not with the tongue but with calculation." Then a fake "digital-arrest" call: "illegal money in your account; cooperate or the police come."

Family fear, the biggest bank. "Digital arrest — a new word, an old method: once dacoits surrounded the house at night; now the screen does, with a fake stamp, uniform, notice." Batra trains a caller: "first fear, then shame, then the solution — always money. If he cries, good — he has a family, and the fear of family is the biggest bank."

● *The mechanics of the fraud*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Trust is engineered, then the debt-line springs the trap.
- Innocent youths are made unwitting mule accounts.
- The "digital arrest" scam weaponizes fear, shame, and family honour.

"I am not a thief"

The Crocodile of the Screen • स्क्रीनक गोहि — card 3 of 3

Left to die. Terrified and ashamed, Ujjwal gives away the family's gold and savings; the money runs through Munna's mule account to Hong Kong, recorded as "digital health awareness." He looks to Devika but cannot speak — "to whom one should speak most, the words die first" — and he does not return; the little water of the Balān is enough, "for one already drowned inside."

"He was killed." The village says "gambling"; the police write "suicide"; the bank, "suspicious transaction"; the app, "user violation"; Batra, "legal risk low." Only Devika says: "he was killed — he was frightened, robbed, left to die." In the grove his soul shows only numbers — debt, stake, interest — until Hulāsī says "leave the numbers, say the name," and he manages: "Ujjwal."

The last message. Devika sends his broken phone to Gop, hidden in a book; it lights of itself on his last words — "I am not a thief." Gop writes: "Ujjwal Jhā: the water-burial of the screen," and prints the linked names — Ujjwal, Munna, Devika, Batra, Rāghav, Lau Kin-hang. Satyavrat, hearing the same "it is voluntary" defence used for the bridge, writes: "voluntariness is false when the algorithm weaves a net by measuring fear and greed."

● The victim is not the criminal

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The novel names it a killing, not a failing — the fraud is the crime.
- "I am not a thief" — the victim's name, and dignity, must be restored.
- Satyavrat: consent is false when an algorithm engineers fear and greed.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 9

The Market of the Body

देहक बाजार *Dehak Bāzār*

"A folder named 'guest-service' always holds, inside it, the price of someone's daughter."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A trafficking front — and a girl who reclaims her name

The fear of the body is sold

The Market of the Body • देहक बाजार — card 1 of 3

A new market. The kabaddī stops; Būṛhbā cannot say the word. "A new market has opened — where the body is not sold; the fear of the body is sold." Hulāsī: the new thing is that a woman's shame, photo, mobile, bank, ticket, and passport are all tied with one rope. "This time people drown not in water but in their own image."

The criminal's language. Gop finds a charity front — "Sūrya-Āśray Sevā Samiti" (girls'-education and widow-rehab on paper, "guest-service" payments in the ledger). Rmaiyya warns him about words: a woman pushed by deception, debt, police-fear, passport-bondage, photo-threat, or hunger — "calling it 'trade' is the criminal's language. The market did not make her; the market surrounded her."

The guilt renamed. Būṛhbā decrees: "change the name of guilt. The body is not guilty — the market is. Hunger is not guilty — the hunger-seller is. Shame is not guilty — the one who makes shame a rope is." Ishān's program recovers the net's auto-deleted messages, mapping Delhi–Meerut–Patna–the border–Dubai–Hong Kong.

● *The reframing of guilt*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The trafficking net sells the fear of the body, not the body.
- "Trade" is the criminal's word — the victim was surrounded, not made.
- The guilt belongs to the market, the hunger-seller, the rope-maker.

"My name is Phūlmati"

The Market of the Body · देहक बाजार — card 2 of 3

The false promise. Phūlmati — filed only as "F.M.," a "trainee" on paper — was lured from a Madhubani bus-stand with a false job (old-age care, 15,000 a month): first month 5,000 sent home, second month her phone seized, third month "pay the debt." Her grandmother was from a hamlet near the Channā grove; she hears dogs at night, where none are allowed.

The refusal. Ordered to a room and handed a "voluntary service contract" she cannot read, she is taught: "wherever they ask your name, put your thumbprint." In the door's glass she sees her dead grandmother's face: "no thumbprint." She stops her hand — "a whole rebellion in that small refusal."

The name, not the initials. When the family-photo is used to coerce her — "the body caged in the city, the fear tied in the village" — she does not scream; she says only: "My name is Phūlmati. Not F.M." The voice does not reach the auditorium below, but it reaches the grove, where the handless Hulāsī rises to carry a living woman's name into the game.

● *Reclaiming the name*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The trafficking mechanism: a false job, seized phone, engineered debt.
- Consent under fear is no consent — she refuses the thumbprint.
- "My name is Phūlmati, not F.M." — the person behind the initials.

The name returns

The Market of the Body • देहक बाजार — card 3 of 3

Witness, not victim. The researcher Saumya Ramanathan, invited to speak on "women's dignity," abandons her prepared speech: "Dignity is not a gift; it is what no one can take. When the body is demanded in the name of a job, and silence bought in the name of help, the institution is not service — it is a market." Alerted by Gop, she goes upstairs and calls the journalists: "Go live."

The power of the name. What becomes a court-date, a thana settlement, or an institution's confidentiality becomes, on live broadcast, an instant face. Phūlmati emerges — trembling, but with her name. Devika sees the video: "the name is returning again."

One net. Satyavrat, reviewing the "voluntary contract," writes: "voluntariness is not possible under fear" and "the court questions structure, not character." Gop titles the file "देहक बाजार" with three columns — Fear, Payment, Protection — and, apart, Satyavrat's name with a question-mark. The four crimes — bridge, breath, screen, body — are now one net.

● *The allies gather*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Saumya speaks of dignity beyond the door, not on the stage.
- The public name breaks what the court-date would have buried.
- Fear, payment, protection — the four crimes revealed as one net.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 10

The Blackmail of Privacy

निजताक ब्लैकमेल *Nijatāk Blaikmel*

"The body is sold once; privacy is sold again and again."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Private life weaponized to silence a witness — and a name that will not be silenced

The weapon of privacy

The Blackmail of Privacy • निजताक ब्लैकमेल — card 1 of 2

A different lever for each. Mīrā (Mṛṇālinī Āryā), a data-rights advisor of the line, and her partner Aditi find their private messages and photos turned "not into proof of love, but into blackmail-material" to stop Mīrā testifying. The machine runs on woman, queer, poor, widow, worker, student alike — "each with a different lever: someone's photo, debt, caste, love, bank account." Rmaiyya: "the crocodiles taste each body differently, but keep the same teeth."

The structure, not the person. Mīrā's condition to Gop: "do not make this about my private life; the issue is the attack on privacy, fear over consent, and the criminal net." Gop: "right — not the person, the structure." What the register once did to the dead ("absent") the blackmailer does to the living — replacing the person with a "character."

The court's true duty. Satyavrat, reading the threat-copies, writes: "where a witness's privacy is made an object of blackmail, the court's first duty is to protect the witness's dignity," and "the law's duty is not to judge love, but to identify the source of fear." He feels himself becoming something other than the state's lawyer.

● *Silencing the witness*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Private life is weaponized to stop testimony — a lever for each group.
- The issue is the attack on privacy, not the private life itself.
- The court's first duty is the witness's dignity and the source of fear.

The name that will not be silenced

The Blackmail of Privacy • निजताक ब्लैकमेल — card 2 of 2

Aditi's courage. Aditi refuses to be erased: "those who turn love's proof into crime's paper are the biggest cowards. I am the owner of my life, not a criminal." She insists her own name stay in the statement — "half the blackmail's force breaks there."

"I will not stay silent." Mīrā records: "I am Mṛṇālinī Āryā. My private life is mine. It was stolen and used to frighten me, because I am going to testify to a crime-net. To silence me, my love was made a weapon. I will not stay silent." Devika adds: "Ujjwal Jhā's death was not a gambling loss, but the push of fear."

Fear before money. Gop redraws his map: crime's first stream starts not with money but with fear — three circles, Fear, Data, Money, with the person in the middle and the crocodile outside. Rmaiyya: "add the next circle — the law": a river that saves who crosses and drowns who is stuck. The money-stream will next turn toward weapons; but this night, Mīrā saved her name — "and whose name survives, history can be rewritten from."

● Speaking as a witness

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Naming oneself and one's partner breaks the blackmail's force.
- Mīrā speaks as a witness, not a victim — "I will not stay silent."
- Crime begins with fear, not money; the saved name rewrites history.



The Black River of Money

धनक कारी नदी *Dhanak Kārī Nadī*

"A ghost has no breath, yet it tires — the tiredness is not of the body, but of bearing witness."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- All the crimes feed one black river — and the master-evidence reaches Satyavrat

Water, fire, and crocodile

The Black River of Money • धनक कारी नदी — card 1 of 3

Money that flows black. The grove's soil grows wet — not water, but a black underworld-current. Būṛhbā: "this is money flowing; when money grows very black, it flows like water, burns like fire, and cuts like a crocodile." The kabaddī-field turns into a ledger; boats appear labelled "medicine" (inside: drugs), "farm-equipment" (inside: weapons), "relief-material" (inside: fear).

Accounts named after rivers. Ishān's second device holds "the journey of money." The net names its accounts after rivers — Kamalā, Balān, Ganga, Mekong, Pearl: "when money leaves India it says 'the water receded'; when crime-money returns it says 'the flood came.'"

Metal, dust, prayer. The timeline unites all four crimes — the bridge payments, the pandemic supply, the gambling accounts — flowing into new columns: "Metal," "Dust," "Route," "Prayer." "Prayer" is the code for terror-finance: "those who sell fear steal even language, giving sin holy names so the auditor's soul tires."

● *The laundering architecture*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The four crimes feed one black river of money.
- Accounts wear river-names to disguise the flow in and out.
- It flows on toward weapons, drugs, and terror-finance.

One owner of the fear

The Black River of Money • धनक कारी नदी — card 2 of 3

India as a mine. Ishān names the real kingpin — Lau Kin-hang, who will not come on stage: "for him India is not a market but a mine — of bodies, fear, data, and vulnerable youth. He says greed is cheap in a poor country. But he does not understand that in a poor country, memory is expensive."

The polished front. Batra's signed opinion-letters drape "a white cloth over crime's body"; Baṭuknāth Hariharan, the bar-council chairman, protects him; Rāghav "Signal" leaves no voice, paper, or face. Ishān: "the more one tries to erase traces, the more one makes — the act of erasing is itself evidence."

"He was pushed." Ujjwal's money, traced, was split into thirty-five small accounts of students, rickshaw-drivers, and widows. Devika: "so my brother did not kill himself — he was pushed." Saumya insists they publish evidence, not method: "we need proof, not the route" — and Gop agrees the reckoning will show how crime is built, never how to repeat it.

● *The kingpin and the front*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Lau Kin-hang treats India as a mine — but memory is its costly ore.
- The polished lawyers launder the crime; erasing leaves traces.
- The reckoning gives evidence, never method — light in the right place.

The evidence reaches Satyavrat

The Black River of Money · धनक कारी नदी — card 3 of 3

The wet envelope. A wet envelope reaches Satyavrat's desk with no name, only the coconut-leaf mark, and three lines: "Not thirty names, three hundred. / Not debt, a push. / Not trade, a black river," with a memory-device. "Touching this small thing, his post, prestige, friendships, and sleep would all be tested."

Three copies. Gop makes three copies of the device — one for Satyavrat, one for Ira Āruṇi abroad, and one for the old pīpal's hollow in the grove: "if all servers close, all courts turn away, all countries drape their flags over lies — then at least the ghosts of Gaṛh Nārikel will know where the river of money flowed from."

Green memory. Satyavrat, by the window, watches the ashoka leaf stir without wind, then opens the first folder — "Names that were not absent" — and all his years of legal practice grow old in a moment. On the coconut leaf the dew-numbers turn green: "the black river of money fears green memory, for a village that remembers cannot be wholly sold."

● The reckoning delivered

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The master-evidence reaches the one lawyer who might use it.
- Copies to court, to the diaspora, and to the grove — memory made safe.
- "A village that remembers cannot be wholly sold."



The Coconut Leaf on the Dark Web

डार्क-जालपर नारिकेल पात *Ḍārk-Jālpar Nārikel Pāt*

"On the black river a coconut leaf neither drowns nor floats away — it shows the road."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The evidence is placed beyond reach — and truth steps onto the road

The leaf on the dark web

The Coconut Leaf on the Dark Web • डार्क-जालपर नारिकेल पात — card 1 of 2

Four directions. The evidence is placed in four directions at once: a copy to Satyavrat's court, one to Ira Āruṇi in the diaspora, one buried in the pīpal's hollow in the grove, and a last "lamp-black" copy on the dark web — "to rise only the day all other light is sold off." The pīpal-Brahmā's four mouths give not mantras but cautions: save truth, do not become crime's recipe, keep names safe, release evidence only as much as justice needs.

The oldest server. Rmaiyya: "so the backup is supernatural." Mīrā: "not supernatural — folk-memory, the oldest server there is." The rules of disclosure hold: never the criminal's route, only the existence of truth; no victim's name without permission; the victim's dignity first. Ishān: "truth does not mean telling everything; it means shining light in the right place."

The world comes in. The pīpal-leaf's veins knit into a map — Kamalā-Balān, the bridge, the Delhi court, the Harvard hall, the Hong Kong glass-palace, and a poor home where Ujjwal's mother still cleans his room. Brahmā: "now the tale has not gone out of the village; the world has come into the village."

● Making memory safe

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The evidence is split four ways — court, diaspora, grove, dark web.
- Folk-memory is "the oldest server"; disclosure protects the victim.
- The world has come into the village, not the tale out of it.

Truth on the road

The Coconut Leaf on the Dark Web • डार्क-जालपर नारिकेल पात — card 2 of 2

Shame, not anger. Satyavrat opens the device — no thriller, just a dry table of names, dates, payments, deaths, revised copies, missing pages: "a safety inspection 'complete' the very day Sarayu's husband drowned; the family 'unavailable.'" He feels not anger but shame — "anger throws a person outward; shame pulls them inward." That night he is pulled inward.

A documented question. Ira, in the library, receives the file "The Name of Gaṛh Nārikel" and, for the first time, sees her family-name not as a burden but as proof. She drafts her question — ten pages, then five, then one line: "Dr. Broom, where in your dignity-doctrine is the place of the undeclared dead worker?" — attaching documents, for "an emotional question the stage can laugh off; a documented one dries the mouth."

A name that cannot be stopped. Baṭuknāth's fear grows: "in India, stopping money is not hard; stopping a name is — once a name becomes a folk-song, no order can stop it." Batra scoffs, then Ujjwal's photo flashes on his phone from no source, with the line "not debt, a push." For the first time, a coconut leaf floats on the black river and does not sink.

● The witness resolves

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Satyavrat feels shame, not anger — and is pulled toward the truth.
- Ira turns her family-name into a documented, un-laughable question.
- A name become a folk-song cannot be stopped by any order.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 13

The Sealed Cover

सीलबन्द आवरण *Sīlband Āvaraṇ*

"The brighter the seal shines, the deeper the darkness inside the cover."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The first hearing — the record is completed, and the names are read aloud

The date that releases water

The Sealed Cover • सीलबन्द आवरण — card 1 of 3

Everything right but the truth. At dawn Satyavrat reads the government affidavit "like a physician examining a wound" — language perfect, grammar flawless, "everything right except the truth; death absent from it." He takes out his old typewriter — "a computer's text changes instantly; a typewriter's blow sinks into the paper" — and writes that he is bound to tell the court the record is incomplete, then bows to the frightened man in the mirror: "fear, the soul's last warning."

Seven doors. In court, Baṭuknāth opens with the art of delay — shutting seven doors in one breath: admissibility, limitation, locus, privacy, national security, arbitration, official secrecy. The judge: "you have shut seven doors in one breath." Saumya, to Gop: "not convenience — a swamp."

Not amend — complete. Satyavrat rises: "if the State stands on an incomplete record, it stands not on record but on falsehood." The judge: "do you wish to amend your affidavit?" "Not amend, Your Honour — to complete." He produces the material: grave discrepancies in the death-toll, compensation, and financial flows; the State asks not for time but for the protection of the record, the witnesses, and the victims' dignity.

● The witness in the State

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The affidavit is flawless in everything but the truth.
- Baṭuknāth's seven procedural doors — delay as a swamp.
- Satyavrat moves not to amend but to complete the record.

Not a record, a falsehood

The Sealed Cover • सीलबन्द आवरण — card 2 of 3

The Preamble is politics too. Baṭuknāth: "this is politics." Satyavrat, calm: "if a dead worker's name is politics, then the Constitution's Preamble is politics too." The line "stood in the room, as if an unseen person had come and stood among them."

The grave of truth. The judge orders the material into a sealed cover — and Satyavrat's inner war wakes: "a sealed cover protects, but sometimes becomes truth's grave." He asks that sensitive names stay sealed, but the death-list, the payment discrepancy, and the record-preservation order stay open: "truth kept in total darkness returns to the hands of those it is being saved from."

Records preserved. The judge agrees — private details sealed, but the preliminary list, death-status, and preservation order given to the other side; the State will not destroy records; the contractor and banks are put on notice; the next date is soon. Baṭuknāth hears it as "not a defeat, but the first crack — from a crack air enters, air lights a lamp, a lamp shows a shadow."

● *The first crack*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "If a dead worker's name is politics, so is the Preamble."
- A sealed cover can protect — or bury the truth it holds.
- Records preserved, notice issued — the first crack opens.

The names are read

The Sealed Cover • सीलबन्द आवरण — card 3 of 3

"May the names be read." Satyavrat requests the dead's names be read. Baṭuknāth objects — "emotional theatre." Satyavrat: "no — it is the first act of correcting the record; many names are missing from the government pages; let them be heard once, so they are not absent." The judge allows the first list.

Chapak. As the names are read, the fan slows, the window fogs, Ujjwal's photo in Devika's āñcal wets, water gathers under Baṭuknāth's shoe. The names circle "like a stone thrown in the Ganga — chapak, chapak, chapak." Satyavrat's voice breaks at the fifteenth; Devika rises — "my brother's name is on this list" — and Gop reads the rest, each name followed by a pause "like a cremation."

The silence like applause. After the reading, no applause — "only a silence heavier than any word; in court there is no applause, but that day the silence echoed like applause." Batra's phone flashes one word — "नाम" — and sweat beads his brow. Ishān, in the corridor: "the name was read? Then the first water-burial broke. Justice is across the river; the name is the boat; today the boat entered the water."

● The boat enters the water

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Reading the names aloud is the first act of correcting the record.
- Devika stands for her brother; Gop reads the rest, name by name.
- "The name is the boat; today the boat entered the water."



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 14

The Road Home

घर घुरबाक रस्ता *Ghar Ghurbāk Rastā*

"When a name comes home, even the soil wakes from its sleep."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Between hearings, the witnesses return to the village — and the names are planted

The name comes home

The Road Home • घर घुरबाक रस्ता — card 1 of 2

Satyavrat walks. Leaving court — no rain, but water on every shoe, smelling of cement, gravel, and sweat-soaked gamchā, "not the building's water." Satyavrat comes out last, the file gripping his hand rather than the reverse; he refuses the government car and says, "I will walk." The witnesses travel to Gaṛh Nārikel by rail, not plane — "without soil, paper is blind."

The gathering. They gather at the village — Ira from abroad (Bā's hand on her head: "a foreign child, but the head belongs to this house"); Nishānt, tracing the payment-gateway back to the same group used at the bridge; Devika with Ujjwal's photo; Munna, whose account became a mule, his eyes bowed "though his crime was only poverty"; and Mīrā, who weeps for the first time when Bā says, "one who makes love a weapon has the dirtiest hands."

The soil that recognizes. The old box is opened; Nand's papers come out in their original smell, the letters trembling on the ground. Bā: "do not fear — the soil recognizes the name." The coconut tree's leaves stand utterly still. Ananyā: "where are this tree's eyes?" Bā: "where there is a leaf, there is an eye."

● The return

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Satyavrat refuses the car and walks; the witnesses return by rail.
- The scattered witnesses gather — Ira, Nishānt, Devika, Munna, Mīrā.
- "Without soil, paper is blind"; the soil recognizes the name.

The planting of testimony

The Road Home • घर घुरबाक रस्ता — card 2 of 2

Not worship — planting. At night the village gathers not on a stage but at doorways, by the tulsi-altar, in the pīpal's shade, around one lantern. Gop touches the soil first: "in Delhi this paper is evidence; here it is the śrāddha's offering." A brass box is buried at the coconut tree's roots — Nand's file, the workers' names, Ujjwal's photo, Mīrā's threat-copy, Munna's account, Satyavrat's court-words. "This was not worship. This was the planting of testimony."

The roll-call. As the soil fills, the grove's kabaddī sounds the names clear — Sarayu, Nagina, Ujjwal, Hulāsī, and names no one could write, "for they formed only in water and broke." Ananyā covers her ears, then uncovers them — listening "as at a school roll-call." Baṭuknāth's men are seen near the village but do not step into the grove: "one who enters with a lie gets a black ant on the tongue."

If the tree dies, the seed remains. By morning, fine letters, not dew, cover the coconut leaf; Bā forbids plucking one: "a name on a leaf lives not the leaf's age but the tree's." Ananyā: "and if the tree dies?" Bā: "then the seed remains." The real homecoming, Āruṇi understands, awaits the next hearing — "when all who were absent in paper are called present in the court."

● Testimony rooted

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The evidence is buried at the tree's roots — testimony, not worship.
- The grove's roll-call names the dead; the lie cannot enter.
- A name lives the tree's age; if the tree dies, the seed remains.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 15

The Water of the Name

नामक जल *Nāmak Jal*

"A name that holds on water, no stamp could erase."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The great hearing — all seven categories of names are read, and the tārikh-crocodile shrinks

The leaf as prasād

The Water of the Name • नामक जल — card 1 of 3

What is not filed. Satyavrat brings to court a dried coconut-leaf from the grove, bearing names on no official list, held "like prasād" — in both hands, like a puja plate. His aide: "how will this be admitted?" Satyavrat: "what is not filed is the most important; the paper is a copy — the original was those people's lives."

Seven categories. Baṭuknāth objects that folklore and village leaves have no place in procedure; Satyavrat: "this case is tied to life — contract, investment, policy, even national security come after life, or because of it." He reads seven categories of names: the thirty official, the "absent," the "workplace-external" deaths, the forged family-signatures, the stolen compensation, the changed names, and those "never given birth in paper."

Presence, not disturbance. Mid-reading the fan stops — the power stays on, only the fan — and from afar comes "kabaddī... kabaddī..." Baṭuknāth: "this is a disturbance." Satyavrat: "no — this is presence." In the grove, at that very moment, the game begins, each ghost crossing with a forgotten name.

● Completing the record

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The un-filed leaf is the most important — the paper is only a copy.
- Seven categories of erased names are read into the record.
- The stopped fan and distant "kabaddī" — presence, not disturbance.

Two continents, one voice

The Water of the Name • नामक जल — card 2 of 3

Dignity in life. The digital-fraud names are read (Ujjwal Jhā, Rohit Mandal, and others filed "suicide"); in the village, Ujjwal's photo trembles in Devika's āñcal. Mīrā testifies: "dignity is in my life, not in his threat; let the private part stay sealed, but the blackmail and extortion part open" — and the first crack shows on Baṭuknāth's face.

A pattern, not coincidence. The foreign money-route is read — Nishānt's affidavit, Ira's records, Broom's grants, the medicine and weapons layers, the map reaching Lau Kin-hang. Baṭuknāth objects "coincidence"; Satyavrat: "a coincidence found again and again on the same account is not coincidence in an audit — it is a pattern."

One voice. At Harvard, simultaneously, Ira interrupts Broom: "does human dignity include the names your group's old company wrote as absent?" He deflects — "infrastructure history is complex"; she answers in Maithili: "whose body the crocodile ate, his history is simpler than your language." The Delhi court receives the live clip — "two continents, one voice."

● *The accusation crosses over*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Mīrā: dignity lives in her life, not in the blackmailer's threat.
- Repeated coincidence on one account is a pattern, not chance.
- Ira confronts Broom in Maithili — the two courts speak as one.

Seven days, not fifteen

The Water of the Name • नामक जल — card 3 of 3

The right side. Satyavrat lays out seven prayers — re-verification, victim-protection, privacy, a foreign-flow probe, a record on the bar-official, criminal action on record-destruction, and no long-date swamp. Baṭuknāth: "the Solicitor General has become the petitioner's lawyer." Satyavrat: "when the state's citizen dies, the state's lawyer is not against the citizen; today the state stands, for the first time, on its right side."

The belly of delay. The judge grants all seven — special investigation, independent audit, protected testimony, notice on the bar chairman, Batra's accounts frozen, foreign records sought, court monitoring — and sets the next hearing in seven days, not fifteen. "The tārīkh-crocodile shrank for the first time; not full justice, but the belly of delay slit open."

The list does not end. Batra flees, only to find his own name has reached the station, airport, and bank ahead of him. From a fallen coconut Bā draws a wet page of names, its last line blank: "whoever is erased in future comes here — the novel may end, but the list does not." The names written on water no stamp can erase; the crocodiles return hungry, "for the taste of the name is beyond their teeth."

● The crocodile shrinks

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "When the citizen dies, the state's lawyer is not against the citizen."
- All seven prayers granted; the next date in seven days, not fifteen.
- The blank last line — the novel may end, the list does not.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 16

The Court of the Channā Grove

चन्ना गाछीक अदालत *Channā Gāchīk Adālat*

"Whose name the tree has heard, no page of paper can forget."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The same night, the grove holds its own court — and delivers a memory-verdict

The court of the grove convenes

The Court of the Channā Grove · चन्ना गाछीक अदालत — card 1 of 3

The news by water. The day's court-news reaches the village not by radio or newspaper but by water — the women's dusk pots carry not water but glowing names. Bā: "now not the court of men, but the court of the tree will convene." The witnesses close their files and remove their glasses — "no glass needed to see now."

The judge is the suppressed. In the grove the loth, always a spectator, is placed at the center — "those sentenced only to watch now earn the right to speak." There the judge is no single body: "the judge is the matter most suppressed, whose choking became a voice."

Four calls. The court's calls summon the dead in turn — the bridge-workers ("let all whose names were cut be present"), the screen-victims, those whose body was made a market and privacy a hanging-rope, and the pandemic dead whose breath was sold. Where they walk, dew becomes names. Saumya starts to take notes, then stops — "here evidence is not written; here evidence walks in itself."

● The folk-tribunal

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The news arrives by water; the tree's court convenes.
- The judge is the most-suppressed matter, become a voice.
- Four calls summon the dead — evidence that walks in itself.

The dead give testimony

The Court of the Channā Grove • चन्ना गाछीक अदालत — card 2 of 3

The palm of piers. Sarayu testifies: "I fell; no rope came; later my name did not come either — the crocodile ate the body, the office the name." Told she "never even came," she opens her palm — not a palm but tiny bridge-piers, each with an eye inside. Ujjwal: "the app that ate me had no owner in the country; the account in my name was not mine; the threatening voice was fake — but the noose was real."

The silence and the shadows. Mīrā's silence testifies — "those afraid of love wanted to kill me with shame, not law." The criminals do not come, but their shadows do: Baṭuknāth's as a file whose pages change dates by themselves, Batra's as a phone-screen with a serpent on the keyboard, Rāghav's as a bodiless "message deleted," Lau Kin-hang's as a percentage-sign, Broom's as a podium dripping water from the mic.

The tree does not save the shadow. Būṛhbā: "whose body the law saves, the tree does not save his shadow." Satyavrat, far in the city, feels himself summoned too; he closes his eyes and answers into the wind: "I stood for the state — but if the state cuts the dead's name, the state's side and truth's side diverge; what half-opened in court must fully open."

● *Testimony of the erased*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Sarayu's palm becomes bridge-piers; Ujjwal's "the noose was real."
- The criminals appear only as shadows of their instruments.
- The law may save the body; the tree does not save the shadow.

The memory-verdict

The Court of the Channā Grove • चन्ना गाछीक अदालत — card 3 of 3

Less jail, more memory. The pīpal-Brahmā's four mouths speak the verdict together — a memory-sentence, not a legal one: whoever cut a name will search for a name lifelong; whoever sold the tārīkh will sleep an unfinished hearing every night; whoever ate a child through the screen will see Ujjwal's face in the mirror each morning. "The Channā grove's court was made before the law-book — there, less jail and more memory."

The name, not the phone. After the verdict, no applause — "only the weight lifting that had lain so long on the throat." Ujjwal offers Devika his phone; she refuses: "I take your name, not the phone," and the screen's blue light becomes an earthen lamp's flame. Saumya weeps for the first time; Gop's eyes stay dry — "now is not the time to cry, but to write."

You need work. Bā puts the grove's soil on her head and refuses support: "now I do not need support; you all need work." No document, no seal is issued, but on every coconut leaf an invisible nib leaves: "erasing a name is a crime; stopping memory is impossible." The first cycle ends — "now the real story begins."

● The verdict of memory

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The sentence is memory, not jail — the crime returns on the criminal.
- Devika takes the name, not the phone; the screen becomes a lamp.
- "You need work, not support" — the first cycle ends, the real one begins.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 17

The Grief of Victory

जीतक शोक *Jītak Śok*

"If the defeated stop waiting, the victor's victory shatters under its own weight."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The criminals "win" — but the victims stop waiting and go out to work

The empty field

The Grief of Victory • जीतक शोक — card 1 of 2

The list on the mirror. Baṭuknāth, the "winner" who defended the process, wakes to water under his pillow and, in the soap-foam, names — Sarayu, Makhna, Bisesar, Ujjwal. He wants it to be a dream, "but a dream vanishes when you close your eyes; this list stuck to the mirror." His victory feels "like a soldier who wins the field and finds the enemy has gone off to plough it."

Only names. Batra's five phones show, in every chat, only names; his account balance reads not zero but "name." Rāghav's message: "the paper-win happened, but the field is emptying — those to be silenced have gone out to work." "The criminal is not afraid of silence; but when the victim-side abandons noise, he begins to hear his own voice very loud."

"To work." His men scout the court corridor — Devika's bench empty, Gop's window only dust. The tea-seller: "they did not come today — they went to work." In court "work" means dates and adjournments; but this "work" meant something else, "which Baṭuknāth could not grasp, and so it frightened him."

● *The hollow win*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The procedural "victory" is hollow — the list will not wash off.
- Everything the criminals hold now reads only "name."
- The victims leave the court for the field; the empty field terrifies.

History on water

The Grief of Victory · जीतक शोक — card 2 of 2

Building, not appealing. The victims build instead of appealing: Devika teaches youth at the pond-ghat ("if they say you are under digital arrest, first drink water, breathe, call your family — the criminal wants your loneliness"); Mīrā's circle of women — "whoever takes your image to scare you, the shame is theirs; and if your husband blames you, first we all come to your house." Companionship, the novel says, is what victims need before law.

The alternative. Batra tries to file cases against each of them, but each only advises, builds a name-record, or stands with the wronged — no accusation to answer. "The criminal's hardest opposition is one that does not accuse but builds an alternative — an accusation gets a lawsuit; an alternative runs society." Rāghav: "they did not flee — they went to farm."

The grief of victory. Gaṛh Nārikel turns from one village into a method (Rmaiyya will do the same in the south). Baṭuknāth's victory needs "the defeated's defeated face" — and cannot find it. On the court steps he thinks "come back, appeal, fight"; only a child's voice answers from the grove: "Sarayu... Ujjwal... do not cut the name." Būṛhbā: "this is the grief of victory — no court will give a greater punishment."

● The alternative that cannot be sued

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The victims build — teaching, accompanying, recording names.
- An alternative, unlike an accusation, cannot be dragged to court.
- The grief of victory is the sentence no court could hand down.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 18

The Empty Court

खाली अदालत *Khālī Adālat*

"If the court falls empty, know — justice grew afraid of the absent's name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The petitioners stop coming — and the emptiness itself becomes a verdict

The empty column

The Empty Court • खाली अदालत — card 1 of 2

A decision, not an absence. The court reopens with everything in place — the parties, the papers, the order — but the petitioners are not there; the presence-column is blank. Normally that means dismissal; here "the empty column spoke loudest — not absence, not fear, but a decision: to stop waiting for justice." Baṭuknāth calls it contempt; "defeating these people is hard, because they do not want to win — and one who does not want to win is hard to defeat."

When the law stops reading names. Satyavrat rises: "absence does not always mean neglect; sometimes people do outside the court what the court failed to do." Baṭuknāth: "this is not a place for poetry." Satyavrat: "poetry begins the day the law stops reading names." On the judge's pen a drop of water spreads into a word — "सरयू" — and he adjourns.

Make it a crime. Batra to Baṭuknāth: "drag them back — defamation, contempt, foreign-funding." Baṭuknāth: "on what statement? They are only writing names — and writing a name cannot be a crime, yet." Batra: "then make it one." The corridor fan stops, and a voice comes from afar: "cutting a name is a crime."

● The verdict of absence

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The blank column is a decision — to stop waiting for justice.
- "Poetry begins the day the law stops reading names."
- The names cannot be criminalized — so the criminals despair.

The people's court

The Empty Court • खाली अदालत — card 2 of 2

The village becomes the school. In Gaṛh Nārikel a school convenes under the grove — stones each bearing a name; children read them, ask, and are answered, "and thus the dead became the textbook." Ananyā: "why was Sarayu's name cut?" Bā: "because paper's belly was small, and greed very big."

The un-institution. Devika teaches youth to spot the scam; Mīrā and Saumya deliberately leave the women's circle un-named — "a name makes an institution; an institution needs papers; papers make attack easy." The bar council tries to ban "false name-records" but cannot — "how do you prove a name false? The law's scissors catch where human grief stands without a certificate."

The sweeper's father. A court sweeper finds names chalked on a bench and wipes them, but they resurface in the dust; his own father never returned from a construction site, the record reading "left work," and he writes his father's name in the dust. "Thus in the empty court the first citizens' record opened — by no order, but a sweeper remembering." Satyavrat's diary: "if justice will not read people's names, people will open their own court."

● Justice finds a second home

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The dead become the village's textbook; the un-named circle can't be sued.
- Name-writing cannot be proven false or made a crime.
- The empty court is a warning — the people open their own.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 19

The Record of the Name

नामक अभिलेख *Nāmak Abhilekh*

"A chair rots, not the root; paper tears, not the name in the record."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A folk registry of the erased is founded — on coconut leaves, in turmeric-kajal ink

The chest, written outside

The Record of the Name • नामक अभिलेख — card 1 of 3

The record in the chest. Bā opens her old box — Nand's unfinished application among the ledgers — and says: "this is only the paper stopped at the gate; the record is what people keep in their chest. But the chest bursts, so it must be written outside" — pointing to the grove, "where the court sat." No committee, no chairman; the people come on their own.

Leaf before metal. Sarayu's granddaughter brings two bangle-pieces and an old photo: "she is not on paper; she is in the home; I want her in the grove too." Ira offers a durable metal plaque; Bā stops her: "metal later; first the leaf — what the leaf accepts will hold on metal." Mīrā mixes the ink — soot, kajal, ground turmeric, two drops of Ganga-water — and the first name is written: "Sarayu Devi."

The called-name. The row of names opens, and disputes arise over pronunciation — "her name was Phulwa, not Phulo." Bā: "paper can lie; write the name called in her home." The first rule: keep not the government name but the called-name too — "for the dead find release only in the name their mother's throat called."

● *Founding the registry*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The record is what the chest holds — so write it outside, on the leaf.
- The leaf comes before the metal; the ink is home and ghat mixed.
- Keep the called-name, not the government name.

The four rules

The Record of the Name • नामक अभिलेख — card 2 of 3

All the system's dead. Gop opens his bag — not printouts but hundreds of small papers, each a name and a number: "these are names too, not only workers — the pandemic dead billed instead of treated, whose son the screen took, whose daughter vanished in the market, whose life fell silent in blackmail." The second rule: the record holds all whom the system erased, if their people wish.

A place for silence. Mīrā asks after those who do not want their private life made public. Bā: "a name does not mean stripping bare; a name means remembrance; the grove robs no one's dignity." Mīrā's page holds not names but marks — "a young woman, Darbhanga; a nurse, Noida." The third rule: the record keeps a place for silence, "for some truth needs a safe shade before it can speak."

Reading protects the living. Devika writes "Ujjwal Jhā — the screen's crocodile," her hand trembling but the letters straight, and names the next work: "not work — a school." The fourth rule: the record is not only memory but caution — "writing a name honours the dead; reading a name protects the living." And the phrase that frightens the winners: "the count continues."

● The rules of memory

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The registry holds all the system's dead, with their people's consent.
- A place is kept for silence — dignity, not exposure.
- Reading a name protects the living; "the count continues."

I am present

The Record of the Name • नामक अभिलेख — card 3 of 3

The roll-call. By night the leaf-sheet spreads on the grove's soil; Būṛhbā bends and reads "Sarayu Devi," and his eyes' white light enters the ink. "I am present," a voice answers, though no mouth moves; "I am present," from the next leaf, and the next — "an attendance-register with no clerk, no red seal, no fee; only names, and with the name, the wind."

Society's first breath. Āruṇi understands: "this record is not the lawsuit's next document; it is society's first breath — the court emptied because justice found its second home." By morning some letters have gone light-green, "as if the leaf took them into its veins."

Beyond cross-examination. A copy reaches Satyavrat — a coconut leaf on his veranda, not on camera; the turmeric-kajal smell rises, and at the third name he switches off the government phone. He understands: "the next hearing will be not in court but in the nation's memory, and the opposing counsel will be not a lawyer but the name — and a name cannot be defeated by cross-examination." The school of names has opened.

● The register of the wind

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The dead answer the roll-call — "I am present."
- The record is society's first breath; justice found a second home.
- A name cannot be defeated by cross-examination.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 20

The School Against the Screen

स्क्रीनक विरुद्ध पाठशाला *Skrīnak Viruddha Pāṭhśālā*

"All that the screen swallowed, the school brought back one by one."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A folk school teaches the young to recognize the screen-crocodile

The crocodile in the screen

The School Against the Screen • स्क्रीनक विरुद्ध पाठशाला — card 1 of 3

The lesson, not the lament. The day after the record, a mobile-school opens under the grove — no board, no bell. By Ujjwal's name lies a shard of broken mobile-glass reflecting the sky inverted. Devika tells his story as a lesson, not a lament: "he won first — this screen-crocodile lets the prey win a little first, like the river-crocodile keeps the water calm; children, when something gives easy profit first, look for its teeth."

Where are the teeth? A child asks where the teeth are in a screen. Nishānt — foreign-raised, once a builder of payment-routes — answers: "when the screen says tell no one, that is its teeth; when it says send money now or jail, that is its teeth; when it says your win is guaranteed, its tongue is red."

The witch changed, not the trick. Bā: "in the old days the witch told the child — do not obey your mother, I will give you secret sweets; now the screen says — do not tell the home, trust me. The witch changed, not the trick." The children learn that the screen too is a jungle — "only in the jungle the leaves rustle; in the screen, the information flashes."

● Naming the danger

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Ujjwal's death is taught as a lesson so it saves others.
- The teeth: "tell no one," "pay now or jail," "your win is guaranteed."
- The witch changed, not the trick — the screen is a jungle.

The four legs

The School Against the Screen • स्क्रीनक विरुद्ध पाठशाला — card 2 of 3

Greed, fear, shame, loneliness. Nishānt draws not the crime's method but the map of fear: "the screen-crocodile's four legs are greed, fear, shame, and loneliness; whoever sees these four together, run." An old farmer: "run where?" Bā: "to your own people — the first medicine for fraud is: do not stay alone." Devika: "if fear wants to make you alone, it is the thief's fear, not the law's."

Shame belongs to the criminal. A girl asks what if her family blames her. Mīrā: "then find another home — friend, teacher, sister; do not shelter the criminal by taking the blame yourself; silence is the criminal's biggest cover." The rules are written on the leaf: "do not stay alone," "let shame be the criminal's," "whoever understands their mistake, fix it."

Mercy and the machine. Nishānt confesses: abroad, his company kept accounts of people's desire, fear, addiction, and loneliness. "I thought it was technology; now I understand — when technology abandons mercy, it becomes a crocodile." Asked if he too is guilty, he answers himself: "yes — I did not ask as much as I could have; but now I will not flee."

● The map of fear

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The four legs: greed, fear, shame, loneliness — see them together and run.
- Do not stay alone; the shame belongs to the criminal.
- "When technology abandons mercy, it becomes a crocodile."

"You're not alone, are you?"

The School Against the Screen • स्क्रीनक विरुद्ध पाठशाला — card 3 of 3

Nothing to sue. The gang cannot fight a school that is no institution — no registration, no chairman, no building. A notice is addressed to "Coconut-Leaf School, Channā Grove"; the postman laughs, "will the tree sign?" Bā sticks a coconut-leaf fibre where the signature goes: "paper needs a paper answer." Satyavrat notes privately: "public education cannot be treated as a crime, if it warns against fear, shame, and greed."

Saved, not foolish. Munna's cousin, taken to open a mule account, stalls at the bank — recalling the school, he asks "whose name, whose SIM, whose money?" and flees to the grove, where he is called not guilty but "saved." The word matters: "whoever is trapped is not a fool; whoever stopped midway is saved" — and it opens people's mouths.

The mantra. A new greeting spreads: seeing someone panicked on the phone, another asks — "अकेला तू नहि छी?" (you are not alone, are you?). The question becomes a mantra; by it many frauds break, fears are shared, and shame returns to the criminal. The grove's court, having given its verdict, watches from afar: "justice sometimes is not an order; sometimes it becomes a school."

● *The school as justice*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An un-institution cannot be dragged to court.
- "Saved, not foolish" — the word that opens people's mouths.
- "You're not alone, are you?" — the mantra that breaks the trap.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 21

The Oath of Privacy

निजताक शपथ *Nijatāk Śapath*

"Peace does not come from outside; it breaks the soil of fear and grows from within."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A solidarity circle takes an oath — the shame belongs to the criminal

Peace grows from within

The Oath of Privacy • निजताक शपथ — card 1 of 3

The net, not the mistake. After the record, people hope for peace, "but peace grows from within, and if the inner soil is filled for years with fear, shame, and silence, the earth trembles when the first sprout emerges." Devika writes the first line: "we must recognize not the dead's mistake, but the net that killed them" — for "society does not forgive the dead; to punish them it makes even their death the reason."

The oath, not the testimony. Saumya returns "like a priestess who writes the oath, not a journalist: testimony is given in court, but an oath is taken in society; testimony stays on paper, an oath changes behaviour." Mīrā comes despite a threat to expose her private life — recognizing "this is not personal hatred, it is a business" — because "here even the ghosts live by their own names; why should the living fear their own name?"

Shame to the criminal. Saumya draws a red-earth circle and writes inside it "privacy" — "the ghūnghaṭ was privacy, the letter was privacy, the body was privacy; only, earlier the thief broke the door, now the thief opens the phone." Devika adds "fraud"; Mīrā adds "shame" and swears: "the thief catches us not by money but by shame; so I take an oath — shame will be the criminal's, not the victim's."

● *Founding the circle*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Recognize the net that kills, not the victim's mistake.
- An oath changes behaviour where testimony only records.
- The three circles — privacy, fraud, shame — and shame is the criminal's.

I am not guilty

The Oath of Privacy • निजताक शपथ — card 2 of 3

The victim is not the criminal. The oath's first tenet: whoever's photo was stolen, whose talk was recorded, whose love was mocked, whose account was made a mule — none is the criminal; "the real criminal is the shadow that showed him commission-bread and pushed him into the law's fire." Munna, caught "by name in the thana" while the real culprits spoke on Signal; Mīrā: "whoever was caught by name will be saved by name — we will give names to the nameless criminals."

Five steps. To a frightened child's question, Devika gives five steps: do not blame yourself; tell a trusted person at once; do not send money; do not delete the evidence; find the criminal's name. And to "what if my family scolds me?" — Mīrā: "then we will teach the family too; scolding the victim is helping the thief."

The un-institution's mantra. Whoever gets a threat now comes to the grove, draws a red circle, and says "I am not guilty" — three words become a mantra "drawn from the mouths society had taught to be silent." Baṭuknāth cannot find a section to object with; "silence was, for him, the first taste of defeat."

● The victim reframed

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The blackmailed victim is not the criminal — the shadow is.
- Five steps: don't self-blame, tell someone, don't pay, keep evidence, find the name.
- "I am not guilty" — the mantra no legal section can touch.

Support becomes society

The Oath of Privacy • निजताक शपथ — card 3 of 3

I left him alone. Ujjwal's mother speaks for the first time: "when he died, I thought he shamed us; now I understand I left him alone; if this school had existed, maybe he would have said — mother, I am trapped." Būṛhbā: "when the living accept their own fault, the dead's burden is halved." Mīrā's last line: "I will not let anyone's love become evidence against them."

The body's dignity. Saumya's note — pasted at the record's back, titled by Ananyā "the body's dignity, the mind's freedom" — holds that everyone's first right over their body is their own, whoever they love, and whoever snatches it by blackmail, family, market, or court's fear has their name written on one leaf. Bā: "why did Sita enter the earth? Because people took their right over her body; now we will not enter the earth — we will write on it."

Fear shared, fear hidden. All take the oath — hands on their phones (now evidence-boxes, not fear-devices), on their chests (now the voice's home, not shame's prison), and on the soil. The school wall reads: "fear shared becomes a warning; fear hidden becomes a noose," and below, "silence is the thief's first earning." This is not justice, but the thing needed before it — support; "and support, when it gets a name, becomes society."

● From support to society

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Accepting one's own fault halves the dead's burden.
- "We will not enter the earth like Sita; we will write on it."
- Support, when it gets a name, becomes society.



Harvard's Second Speech

हार्वर्डक दोसर भाषण *Hārvarḍak Dosar Bhāṣaṇ*

"A second speech is better than the first only when someone has spoken the truth in between."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Ira answers the ethics speech not with a question but with an empty stage

The name crosses the ocean

Harvard's Second Speech • हार्वर्डक दोसर भाषण — card 1 of 2

Not from the stage. Broom gives another ethics speech — "the weakest man's dignity," applauded loudest "because the weakest man was not present in that hall." Ira, invited to the front row, tells Prof. Graves: "today I will not ask a question" — for "a question asked inside the stage is caged in the stage's rules; now she must change the rules." She sits outside on the steps and streams the grove's roll-call: "put the mic not on Broom's hall, but on the leaf."

The names on the slides. As the children read — "Sarayu Devi... present; unknown woman, room twenty-seven... present" — the names appear on Broom's slides in place of the bridge-photo, "as if seeds pressed under paper sprouted into letters." Sweat on his brow; he hears the Ganga churning; from his own voice a second voice says "thirty declared, the rest subsumed." Prof. Graves rises and walks out — students, donors, and journalists follow.

Patience, not noise. Outside: the speech within, the names without; "responsibility" within, the answer without; a child's voice against an ethical framework. The journalists find no sensation — "just a village, a leaf, and children reading names; this was hard for journalism, for it was patience, not noise."

● The counter-speech

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A question on the stage is caged; Ira streams names from the steps.
- The erased names invade the ethics-slides themselves.
- The walkout is patience, not noise — the hard thing for journalism.

The empty stage speaks

Harvard's Second Speech • हार्वर्डक दोसर भाषण — card 2 of 2

In a name, truth is whole. Ira could have waved papers on stage, but understood: "however many times I go to their stage, they will call it a debate — and in a debate truth is halved; in a name, truth is whole." So she stays silent — "this time not fear's silence, but organizing's silence." In Hong Kong, Lau Kin-hang asks for the "main person"; Rāghav: "there is no main person. It's the village."

Leave the stage empty. Satyavrat watches with pain and a faint gladness — pain that the people build their own society outside the court ("this is the state's defeat"), gladness that "truth, freed from the court's delay, has entered the people's mouths." Graves asks Ira what she can do; Ira: "leave the stage empty — an empty stage will speak louder than your speeches."

The teeth do not change. Broom renames his company the next week — "new beginning, new ethical direction" — but the children laugh: "renaming does not change the crocodile's teeth." A new village saying spreads: "listen to what is said on the stage; believe what is written on the leaf," and Ananyā adds — "one way to ask a question is to silently read names."

● The organizing silence

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- In a debate truth is halved; in a name it is whole.
- "There is no main person — it's the village."
- Renaming the company does not change the crocodile's teeth.



Baṭuknāth's Search

बटुकनाथक खोज *Baṭuknāthak Khoj*

"The victory-paper was thick, but held not one sound — and without sound, victory is only a weight."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The victor travels incognito to find the defeated — and finds free people

The empty door

Baṭuknāth's Search • बटुकनाथक खोज — card 1 of 3

Silence, not noise. Baṭuknāth holds the victory-order — thick, sealed, "cruelty wearing courtesy" — but it holds no sound: no applause, no defeated face at his door. "He feared not noise but silence — noise he could turn into advocacy, silence not; opposition he could call contempt, absence not; but if they get to work, he had no language to save himself."

The defeated file nothing. "The defeated do not file a next application?" — the thought unsettles him. His secretary: "perhaps they have gone to the village." The village, which he knew only as a party's address behind a court fee, is becoming a free zone outside the court. Batra reports "the matter is quiet"; and "in the world of crime, quiet is usually the storm's first breath."

The river runs. He travels incognito to find the defeated's real state. But the road changes at the floodplain; the car's device fails. Driver: "the river does not run on the map, sir; here the river runs." It wounds him — "on the law's map too the road is drawn straight; but people's grief makes its own current."

● The hollow victor

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An empty door frightens more than any noise.
- The defeated file no next application — they went to the village.
- "The river does not run on the map; here the river runs."

A different language

Baṭuknāth's Search • बटुकनाथक खोज — card 2 of 3

Is your name written? At the village, no welcome, no protest, no slogan — children drawing the screen-crocodile, unafraid. A girl counting leaves asks: "is your name written? Here the names worth saving are written; a name that saves itself does not need writing." Ananyā tells him her father is "gone to read names, where the name is incomplete — wait; you must have learned waiting in the court."

Name, not case. Their language has changed — they say not "case" but "name," not "claim" but "memory," not "compensation" but "dignity"; "the law's old weapons went blunt on this language." Devika: "compensation was for the day the rate for erasing a name was fixed; now I want the name, not the rate." Mīrā: "whoever wants to suppress my private life, their name comes on the leaf."

Whom will you buy? He offers the elders a warning that outsiders will "make this political"; an elder laughs: "our party is the leaf's, our slogan the name's, our debate the children's — whom will you buy?" He floats a blank settlement-paper as bait; Ananyā folds it into a boat and it sinks — "a paper without a name, the water does not keep."

● *Blunted weapons*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "A name that saves itself does not need writing."
- Name not case, memory not claim, dignity not compensation.
- "Whom will you buy?" — and the blank settlement sinks.

Free, not defeated

Baṭuknāth's Search • बटुकनाथक खोज — card 3 of 3

Remembrance, not resolution. His last attempt — "write a settlement." Gop, silent till now: "resolution is your word; ours is remembrance." Baṭuknāth: "remembrance does not fill the belly." Devika: "fraud empties it; I was first taught the science of emptying — now I am learning the art of filling." He understands: "he came to find defeated people, but here are free people — the defeated seek an opponent; the free seek work."

An appeal against whom? Returning at night, the car stalls; from the grove come the children's voices — not kabaddī, names, each followed by a breath and a silence, and in that silence his victory-paper dampens. The seal's ink has spread, and a new line surfaces in the order: "an appeal against whom?" His hand is dry, yet the paper is wet.

No one waits. He drafts a message to Batra — "now the matter runs without me" — but deletes it: "crooks grow old before writing the truth." A new leaf appears in the grove: "whoever roams searching after victory, know they are stuck inside defeat." He locks the order in a cupboard, but a leaf's rustle sounds from within, and he recalls — in Gaṛh Nārikel no one is waiting for him. "This was the greatest punishment."

● The transformation

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "The defeated seek an opponent; the free seek work."
- The victory-paper dampens — "an appeal against whom?"
- No one waits for him — the greatest punishment of all.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 24

The Novel Begins Again

उपन्यास फेर शुरू *Upanyās Pher Śurū*

"Where the story is called finished, the grove opens a new page from that very spot."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The living now play, the ghosts watch — and the pen passes to the next generation

The reversal

The Novel Begins Again • उपन्यास फेर शुरू — card 1 of 3

No false line flies. Every night a copy of the human court's verdict descends onto the grove's leaves, and "the dawn dew reads it, and false lines fly off in the first sun." This morning no line flies — the leaves are heavy, names glowing in the dew. The story's ownership is changing: "when the story enters people's mouths, the author's pen follows behind it."

The living cross. Now the children cross the kabaddī-line speaking names, not "kabaddī": Somit says "Ujjwal Jhā" three times; a girl says Sarayu's name and presses her palm to the soil — "a signature; whoever was called illiterate, the earth signs for them." A group-voice: "not thirty names, three hundred" — uncounted, for "an incomplete list gives the future work."

The novel's rebirth. In the evening round the adults join too — Devika: "Ujjwal will not be sold"; Mīrā: "privacy will not be sold." "In the first chapter the ghosts played and the living watched afraid; now the living play and the ghosts watch reassured — this reversal is the novel's rebirth."

● The turn

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- For the first time, no false line flies off the dew-read leaves.
- The living cross the line speaking the dead's names.
- The ghosts watch reassured — the novel is reborn.

Memory has no owner

The Novel Begins Again • उपन्यास फेर शुरू — card 2 of 3

Nothing to arrest. The criminals cannot grasp an "un-movement": Batra's app fails as lured youths file complaints and an old woman laughs at a digital-arrest call; "fraud loses not only to the police, but to understanding." Baṭuknāth's "no leader" means "no arrest, no conspiracy, no case"; he looks at his law-degree and realizes "the law's language cannot grasp everything."

Buy understanding? Lau Kin-hang asks his analyst "the economic value of understanding" and gets no answer; the cursor sticks on the Gaṛh Nārikel dot "as if an invisible nail were driven into the map." Rāghav's pen-nib breaks as he writes "erase the name"; a name never fully written in government paper has no sale-receipt.

The state's own file. Satyavrat is asked for an opinion on "the legal status of the community record" and smiles — "the state that took years to erase people's names now fears the people's leaf." He writes: "the state has no ownership over memory." And the truth the state's highest file could not release runs in a child's cheap phone.

● Beyond the law's reach

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An un-movement has no leader to arrest, no case to file.
- "Understanding" cannot be priced or bought.
- "The state has no ownership over memory."

The novel begins again

The Novel Begins Again • उपन्यास फेर शुरू — card 3 of 3

The pen passes. Būṛhbā crosses the line and says: "the novel begins again" — "the mark of the cycle made when truth passes from one generation to the next." From an empty coconut-fruit a leaf emerges: "where a name is read, the story does not end." Āruṇi refuses to write an ending and gives Ananyā the notebook: "you write."

Not the end of evil. The crooks are not finished — Batra's app runs again, Lau opens a company under a new name, Broom finds a new stage. "In this novel the villain does not end; recognizing the villain begins — a harder and longer victory." So the village does not drift into celebration: "after every victory, work; after every name, search."

The frame restated. Ananyā writes the first lines: "In the Channā grove today, kabaddī happened again; this time whoever was caught, was the lie." The closing refrain: "the crocodiles eat the body; but a name that enters a child's breath, no river, court, foreign account, screen, or paper can erase. That name becomes a game; the game becomes a story; the story becomes the village again — and Gaṛh Nārikel begins again."

● The cycle renewed

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The pen passes to the next generation — "you write."
- Evil is not ended, only recognized — the longer victory.
- A name in a child's breath cannot be erased.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 25

The Mind Hung

मोन टांगल *Mon Tāngal*

"In a locked cupboard it is not the order that speaks, but the dust — and the dust's voice allows no sleep."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Unable to bear the unfinished victory, the criminals' minds drift toward the grove

The dust that speaks

The Mind Hung • मोन टांगल — card 1 of 3

The order rustles. The fully-dried victory-order no longer sounds like paper — "it speaks like dust." In Baṭuknāth's locked cupboard it rustles all night "like dried leaves stirring without wind." The sand on its edge flips into letters — "the mind hung" — and he laughs, "the laugh of one who first makes fear a joke," but something inside the victory is no longer the same.

Make it a crime. He calls Batra at the third watch: "any legal way to stop the name-reading?" Batra, who has an answer for everything, has none for this: "reading a name is not a crime, sir." Baṭuknāth: "then make it one." But you cannot fit "the frame of crime" over children reading names, a woman explaining fraud, elders telling not testimony but story.

Forgetting made visible. On Batra's framed law-degree a line is scratched from within — "first mule" — surfacing the Meerut student he'd paid to open an account, who went to jail while the money reached Hong Kong. "A criminal's memory is selective: what gives profit is called experience; what gives shame is called forgetting" — and the glass made his forgetting into letters.

● *The haunting begins*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The dried order speaks like dust — "the mind hung."
- Name-reading cannot be forced into the frame of crime.
- The shame filed as "experience" surfaces as letters.

Buy the name

The Mind Hung • मोन टांगल — card 2 of 3

The voice returns. Rāghav gets a voice-message from "self" — his own voice, though he never spoke it: "no paper, no voice, only percentage," with a weeping behind it. He messages Lau that the problem is "memory-born"; the reply comes only after long delay — three words: "buy the name." Rāghav stares: how do you price a name never fully written in any government paper?

A geography problem. Lau's cursor keeps sticking on the Gaṛh Nārikel dot; "a geography problem," he says — he who saw geography only as market-zones. Broom, sleepless, sees a Devanagari name under each English word of his ethics-draft — "he cannot read the script, but can read the letters' pressure."

The empty chair. Satyavrat writes: "the state is not the owner of a citizen's memory; the court is not the guard of the dead's name; process is not a tool to stop the victim's breath." His hand stalls — "that night the government post and the private soul sat on two separate chairs, and between them an empty chair: truth's."

● *The unpriceable*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The criminal's own voice returns to him, weeping behind it.
- A name cannot be bought; the cursor sticks on the village.
- Between post and soul sits the empty chair of truth.

The mind is hung

The Mind Hung • मोन टांगल — card 3 of 3

The dreams. The criminals dream toward the village: Ananyā dreams Baṭuknāth shouting "where are the defendants?" and the children answering "the future"; Devika dreams Ujjwal drawing a line on the screen-crocodile — "when someone else cuts off a call, I get a little better" — and wakes to make a new lesson: "cutting off a call is also courage."

First the mind. Būṛhbā: "now they will come." Hulāsī: "why?" Būṛhbā: "the mind is hung; first the mind, the body later." The village belief: "whom a man long frightens, in the end he cannot stay without seeing; the crooks need the defeated's eyes to complete the victory — but when the defeated are found busy at work, the victory stays half, and an unfinished victory hangs the mind."

Waiting for the next party. So the minds of Baṭuknāth, Batra, Rāghav, Lau, and Broom set out toward Gaṛh Nārikel from different directions, their bodies still in city and glass office; "the mind moves faster than the body, is more stubborn than crime." The Channā grove's court had not adjourned — "it was only waiting for the next party."

● The pull

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The criminals dream toward the village they cannot defeat.
- An unfinished victory hangs the mind — first the mind comes.
- The grove's court did not adjourn; it awaits the next party.



Baṭuknāth Hariharan's Journey

बटुकनाथ हरिहरनक यात्रा *Baṭuknāth Hariharanak Yātrā*

"A key held all night leaves in the palm not the smell of brass, but of a question."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The body follows the mind to the grove — and is taught to read names

The rail, not the helicopter

Baṭuknāth Hariharan's Journey • बटुकनाथ हरिहरनक यात्रा — card 1 of 3

Read people. The mind arrived first; now the body follows. Baṭuknāth cancels the bar meeting and the media, and — surprising himself — takes the rail, not the plane: "the train connects him to the country he makes-and-saves law from." He packs his father's glasses, who said "read law, but don't forget to read people" — a line he long thought laughable; his wife: "not a file — someone's name."

Stations of testimony. As the train slows, the station-boards change before his eyes — "date," "adjournment," "settlement," "silence." He realizes "the journey is no longer outer; the road to Gaṛh Nārikel is turning even the station-names into testimony." On an ad in the waiting room, a hand has written: "do not buy the name."

The reflection late. At the first-class door his reflection stops and enters late; his laugh now "stays within." He drafts a message to his secretary — "unwell," then "personal journey" — and deletes both, sending nothing: "silence sometimes protects better than a lie."

● The descent begins

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- He takes the rail and his father's glasses — "read people."
- The station-names turn into testimony as he travels.
- Even his reflection hesitates to follow him.

Have you read names?

Baṭuknāth Hariharan's Journey • बटुकनाथ हरिहरनक यात्रा — card 2 of 3

The invisible teacher. An old man boards (Būṛhbā in disguise), showing not a ticket but a dried coconut leaf; the ticket-checker cannot see him — "what the law's eye does not see does not become absent." He asks: "have you read law? Have you read names? The law keeps a name in a box — birth, father, age, signature — but reading the weeping inside the name is a science."

Before the law. Baṭuknāth: "emotion is not justice." The old man: "that is why justice waited so long for emotion." And: "a name is not above the law, but before it — a child is born, then named; the law comes later and asks, proof?" He smells the victory-order from afar: "the smell of bribe; paper can lie, smell cannot."

The shadow gets down. At an unscheduled midnight stop the old man says "your first hearing is here"; Baṭuknāth refuses to leave, but sees his own shadow get down carrying the bag while his body stays seated. "The paper stayed outside, the inner meaning got down — this is Gaṛh Nārikel's first move: it keeps the body safe and lifts the mind's document."

● The re-education

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The law boxes a name; reading the weeping inside is a science.
- "A name is not above the law, but before it."
- His shadow gets down while his body stays — the mind is taken.

Take off your arrogance

Baṭuknāth Hariharan's Journey • बटुकनाथ हरिहरनक यात्रा — card 3 of 3

The body's crowd. On the packed small-line he stands for the first time, "a man descended from the law's height understanding the body's crowd." An old woman: "is the bag heavy? Paper is heavy; a dead person's name, heavier still." The jeep will not reach the grove — "the groves do not talk to vehicles" — so he walks.

Read names. A coconut leaf sticks to his shoe; on his palm letters surface: "you read law; read names." He thinks "this village needs development," then wonders why the word came — "those who sell solutions everywhere, on reaching the land of questions, say development." At the grove the rule of fear is reversed: "the order that frightens the outside, inside frightens by its own letters."

Where the journey begins. Būṛhbā, his face now grey: "here you take off not your shoes, but your arrogance." Baṭuknāth removes his shoes; the cold climbs from soil to head — "the soil too takes testimony." Ananyā comes: "did you come with the victory-paper?" — "yes" — "will you read names?" His journey is not over: "he had only reached the place where the journey begins for the first time."

● The threshold

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "A dead person's name is heavier" than any paper.
- At the grove, arrogance is removed, not shoes.
- "Will you read names?" — where the real journey begins.



Chandrapāl Batra's Screen

चन्द्रपाल बत्राक स्क्रीन *Chandrapāl Batrāk Skrīn*

"From a glass wall the village cannot be seen — but the village's name crosses the glass."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The scam-architect will not go to the village — so the grove enters his screens

The net, not the office

Chandrapāl Batra's Screen · चन्द्रपाल बत्राक स्क्रीन — card 1 of 3

The empire of the screen. Batra decides never to go to Gaṛh Nārikel; from his high glass apartment the city, court, banks, youths lie below him — "one who sees everyone on a screen, when does he need the ground?" His room is not an office but a net of three screens, and behind each of his many business cards "one word: percentage — his god, his grammar, his sleep, his hunger."

Make truth laughable. He opens a folder, "Local Narrative" — superstition, ghost-story, rural discontent — for "to defeat a truth, first make it laughable," and drafts a note calling the folk-record illegal and a security threat. To him "words are not arrows but worms — he releases one and it burrows into the file, hollowing truth's wood from within."

How many names? But as he types "name-record," a coconut-leaf vein surfaces on the screen; on the earnings-table a red mark reads "Ujjwal Jhā"; he hits delete and another name rises — Munna Pāswān, Ritesh Kumar — until his dark screen shows his own face with letters on the forehead: "how many names will you delete?"

● The screen turns

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "Percentage" is his only god; the screen his empire.
- The plan: make the truth laughable and illegal.
- The deleted names resurface — "how many will you delete?"

The compliance mask

Chandrapāl Batra's Screen · चन्द्रपाल बत्राक स्क्रीन — card 2 of 3

Under the nails. Washing his hands, the black line under his nails deepens into account-numbers — the mule accounts of poor students, jobless youths, migrant workers: "each account gave him commission, and each account hid the real criminal." In the mirror the old Meerut exam-hall appears, where young Chandrapāl once wrote "the purpose of law is justice."

The law's face. He weaponized legal language — befriending clerks, learning "the market-rate of weeping in accident-claims" — until Rāghav drew him into the digital game, "where every loss is written into the user's legal consent." Behind Rāghav, Lau Kin-hang; "the foreign owner needed India's legal face; Batra became the face — first the mask, then the mask became the face."

The private fear. When his tech team sees "names repeating" and his security-chief finds no intrusion, he learns Garh Nārikel's second move: "only the guilty will see; the employee sees a blank screen — when the crime is private, so is the fear." And a delivery-boy simply switching off his phone shows him "his empire collapses the moment someone switches off the screen."

● The mask that became a face

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The mule accounts hid the real criminal and paid the commission.
- Legal language was the mask that let the crime pass as consent.
- The empire falls the moment someone switches off the screen.

The effect, not the definition

Chandrapāl Batra's Screen · चन्द्रपाल बत्राक स्क्रीन — card 3 of 3

Three questions. A boy's screen asks the questions his training cannot deflect: "how did you give the first win?" (the "skill-based game" clause he called his genius); "why the debt-call after losing?" (the fake-arrest scripts he wrote to seem "compliance, not fraud"); "why did the account run after death?" (dead youths' wallets reused — "the digital ghost of the dead's name").

What crime will you accept? Batra shouts "I did not commit murder!" The screen: "then what crime will you accept?" His legal habit was to define a crime and escape the definition — "but the screen's court asks not the definition but the effect; whoever lost their money, whose son hanged himself, for them the definition makes no difference."

Entering without going. His law-degree's letters change: "one who read law but did not read the human became the screen's slave." He understands he entered the grove "the day he wrote the first script of online gambling." To Rāghav's "orders?" he sends "not evidence — find the names," and a leaf falls on the screen: "before finding a name, hear the name."

● The reckoning

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The three questions: the first win, the debt-call, the account after death.
- The screen's court weighs the effect on victims, not the legal definition.
- He entered the grove the day he wrote the first gambling script.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 28

Rāghav Signal's Silence

राघव सिग्नलक चुप्पी *Rāghav Signalak Chuppī*

"What fears the voice speaks in erasing letters — but no letter can erase fear."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The money-router trusted vanishing messages — until the silence spoke back

The route falls silent

Rāghav Signal's Silence · राघव सिग्नलक चुप्पी — card 1 of 2

The vanishing message. Rāghav feared the voice (it can be recorded, become testimony, reach a mother's ear), so he lived on erasing messages, believing "what erases after five seconds did not happen in the world." Returning from Batra's, he finds a silence in his room "like an old guest who never asks for an invitation but enters at the right time."

The body behind the number. Lau writes "account suspended," then "account closed" — and Rāghav learns "in the empire of crime there is no friendship, only routes; a route breaks, the person is waste." A dead printer names Ujjwal, Munna, Sarayu; the code-list — Hong Kong, Dubai, Kathmandu, Patna, Meerut — resolves, "behind each number a body, behind each body a family."

Ignorance, the armor. As a child, watching his father's shop lose money to unpaid credit, he learned "writing a name is foolishness; keep an account — an account has no face." He gave thousands of youths "commission work," and "when crime is broken into pieces, no one appears as the full criminal" — ignorance was his greatest armor, and that night it cracked.

● The silence sits down

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- He trusted vanishing messages — "what erases did not happen."
- Crime has no friendship, only routes; a body stands behind each number.
- "Ignorance was his armor" — and that night it cracked.

The account clean

Rāghav Signal's Silence • राघव सिग्नलक चुप्पी — card 2 of 2

The first share. A print asks: "whose body was your first share made from?" His first share — 5,000 rupees, a student's account; the student jailed, his father selling his shop. The student's name? He cannot recall; the page stays blank — "the criminal's greatest fear is not being caught, but not remembering the name of his first crime; a forgotten name grows so angry it becomes a ghost."

Folk-memory. He recovers the name — Arunés Kumar — and "writing a name can calm the screen." At the old hostel a tea-seller remembers the boy at once: "the name lived in the air; government paper forgets, the court delays, but the tea-seller remembers" — folk-memory stronger than his digital erasing. Refusing the change, the tea-seller says: "no charity — the account clean."

Before breaking silence. "Criminals give charity, not accounts clean — to clear an account you need the name, the event, the admission." To Lau's "why stopped?" he sends "the name-list is forming," and the phone goes black. A new leaf on his table: "before breaking the silence, listen" — not admission, not penance, only a beginning.

● *Clearing the account*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The forgotten name of the first victim is the ghost that returns.
- Folk-memory (the tea-seller) outlasts every digital erasure.
- "The account clean," not charity — needs name, event, admission.



Lau Kin-hang's Dream

लाउ किन-हंगक सपना *Lau Kin-hangak Sapnā*

"A name written in full can be arrested — but a half-written name becomes its own prisoner."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The kingpin who never dreamed is flooded by the drowned

The glass cave

Lau Kin-hang's Dream • लाउ किन-हंगक सपना — card 1 of 2

A name that can be arrested. Lau never speaks his full name — "a name written fully on paper can be arrested" — so it shrank to three letters. He lives in "a glass cave: outside the sea, inside the curtain; outside water, inside percentage," seeing the sea only as "the money moving behind the ships." He sends Rāghav "account closed" — "not mercy, but policy: cut a link that makes noise."

The map trembles. The India-dot on his screen trembles, and the map breaks pixel by pixel into a village whose name is written not on the screen but on a leaf — Gaṛh Nārikel. He laughs, believing "a village exists in the market so the city can buy it." He lies down — "dreams are for the poor; the rich see projections" — and the grove's dust settles on his eyelids.

The rising water. The dream begins with the sea breathing; water seeps into his glass house — "there is insurance," "a pump," "an exit," "a helicopter" — but the water is not the sea's: in it "hospital medicine, bridge cement, mobile heat, the damp of burnt notes; many deaths dissolved in it."

● The kingpin's world

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A name he keeps unwritten so it cannot be arrested.
- The market-view: a village exists only to be bought.
- The flood is made not of the sea, but of dissolved deaths.

The missing column

Lau Kin-hang's Dream • लाउ किन-हंगक सपना — card 2 of 2

In which country's profit? Drowned mobiles surface with questions: Ujjwal — "in which country's profit was my defeat written?"; Sarayu — "in which subsidiary was the insurance for my body deposited?"; a voice — "where did the commission of my fear go?" The four crimes appear as crocodiles, one belly "crammed with an oxygen cylinder, a vaccine vial, a fake-medicine box, and a betting-wallet QR."

Only sleep is missing. In the hall the Gaṛh Nārikel pīpal grows, and Būṛhbā tells him: "your account is very clean — only one column is missing." "Which column?" "Sleep." He wakes; the secure India line answers with a recorded voice: "the person you are calling is busy in the name-record."

The living leaf. On his table sits a green coconut leaf that will not dry; his order "erase the evidence" returns on the screen as "the name will not erase." He asks for the next report on paper — "the screen is no longer to be trusted." The leaf beats like a heart and whispers, "now your mind is hung"; and "whoever's mind stays hung, one day it drags the body too."

● The flood of the drowned

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The drowned ask in whose profit their deaths were written.
- "Your account is clean — only sleep is missing."
- The living leaf will not dry; the hung mind drags the body.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 30

The Inner Court of the Crooks

धूर्त सभक भीतरक अदालत *Dhūrt Sabhak Bhītarak Adālat*

"In the laugh of one who won the outer court and lost the inner, a rattle of teeth is heard."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- One conscience-tribunal opens for all five at once

The court that needs no summons

The Inner Court of the Crooks • धूर्त सभक भीतरक अदालत — card 1 of 2

Waking at once. In three cities and across the sea, the five wake at the same hour — "no phone rang, no summons came; yet each knew he must appear somewhere. This was not the court where men in black coats call their voice the law; this was the court where the voice first rises in the mind, then looks for a mouth."

Each his own tribunal. Baṭuknāth is judged by his own childhood self holding a pīpal-leaf: "read the names." Batra by a torn passbook: "the consent of hunger and the consent of law are not the same." Rāghav by a mirror of the "small accounts" he ruined. Broom by his own applause: "when your words held dignity, how many absent bodies were in your account?"

Your share in death. Lau, who thinks he only builds the system and moves the money — "every crime happens in another's hands" — faces bowls of the four crimes and a single question: "how much is your share in death?" "The inner court sees not the hand, but the share," and for the first time he is silent.

● *The conscience-tribunal*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- No summons — the voice rises in the mind and seeks a mouth.
- Each is judged by his own instrument of harm.
- "How much is your share in death?" — the hand hides, the share does not.

The empty chair

The Inner Court of the Crooks • धूर्त सभक भीतरक अदालत — card 2 of 2

One chair, unfilled. In every inner court stands one empty chair — not Satyavrat's, but "for the people they defeated." The crooks wanted those people to come, weep, bow, and lose again: "the joy of victory is made by the opponent's presence; if the opponent vanishes, victory becomes a yellowness trapped in paper."

Where are they? The court asks each: "whom you defeated — where are they?" Baṭuknāth: "in the Channā grove." Batra: "in the digital school." Rāghav: "in the leaves." Lau: "in India's small mobiles." Broom: "outside the hall." The question returns: "then why are you here?" — and no one answers.

Waiting, not punishment. By dawn each wakes with the mark on him — Baṭuknāth's thumb pressed on the name-spot of the order, mud settled under Broom's "dignity." They got no punishment, but something harder: waiting. "The human court gives dates so the case is delayed; the inner court gives dates so the soul cannot delay."

● *The chair of the defeated*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Victory is hollow without the defeated's face to witness it.
- The defeated are at work — grove, school, leaves, mobiles.
- The sentence is not punishment but waiting the soul cannot delay.



The Work of the Defeated

हारल लोक सभक काज *Hāral Lok Sabhak Kāj*

"The defeated raise no slogan — they rise at dawn and lift another's name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The 'defeated' raise no slogan — they distribute the work of building

No slogan, no flag

The Work of the Defeated • हारल लोक सभक काज — card 1 of 3

Scattering seed. Those called defeated raise no slogan, beat no drum, burn no effigy — "they rose not like the defeated, but like people scattering seed in a field." Ananyā draws a kabaddī field with no middle line: "whoever is called defeated won't go out — they'll be given other work." Devika writes the first wall-lesson: "the screen-crocodile shows a win first, then eats the home."

Renting your shadow. Nishānt teaches the children plainly: "if you give another your name's account, they rent not your body but your shadow; the money that turns through it, its smoke comes into your home; a mule account means loading another's crime on your own shoulder."

A witness before guilty. Munna, who hid his face because money turned through his account, is seated in front — "whoever is trapped is a witness before he is guilty" — and for the first time he feels he has a name beyond the police paper.

● *Building, not lamenting*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The defeated scatter seed instead of raising slogans.
- A mule account rents your shadow and brings the smoke home.
- The trapped is a witness before he is guilty.

Paper in the people's tongue

The Work of the Defeated • हारल लोक सभक काज — card 2 of 3

Translating the document. Saumya reads the documents aloud, turning each into folk-speech: "undeclared death" → "people died, but the paper said they did not"; "procedural delay" → "the father died, the son aged, and still the date comes"; "financial adjustment" → "whoever needed medicine, its price entered someone's profit." "When the paper speaks in people's tongue, it becomes the home's testimony."

The shame is the maker's. Mīrā comes in white, without her old fear: "no one's love will become evidence against anyone; no one's fear will become anyone's earning; the thing you are afraid to say is what the thieves earn from — from today the shame is not yours, but the weapon-maker's."

A blank space is evidence. Gop turns data into relationship, not number — beside a name, the home; beside the home, the child; beside the child, the dream the worker held. Asked how to write a dream, he answers: "where the dream is not found, leave a blank space; a blank space is also evidence." Abroad, Ira's "Leaf-Reading" gatherings read names, for "the discomfort that a name brings is the birth of new ethics."

● From office to home

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Translated into folk-speech, the document becomes testimony.
- The shame belongs to the weapon-maker, not the victim.
- A blank space is evidence; a read name births new ethics.

Making justice

The Work of the Defeated • हारल लोक सभक काज — card 3 of 3

A stay on writing names? The crooks' moves fail: Baṭuknāth hears his own question's foolishness — "a stay on writing names?"; Batra fears the word "cautious" more than "customer" ("the fraud-world's biggest enemy is the cautious person"); Lau's India percentage falls, its cause a word not in his language — "rural awareness."

Learn to make justice. Bā names the work: "if justice is not got, learn to make justice — whoever saves a name, saves a child from fraud, does not let shame become a weapon, turns paper-language into people's language, makes justice; a verdict is on paper, justice in people's conduct."

Pain becomes a family. A new custom spreads — a visitor asks first not the news but a name: "who in your home was saved, and who remains to be written?" — and the old boxes open. "Power first keeps people apart; when pain begins to read each other's names, it becomes not an organization but a family — and it is hard to slap a section on a family."

● *The un-defeatable*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Name-writing cannot be stayed; the cautious person is unbeatable.
- "If justice is not got, learn to make justice."
- Pain that reads each other's names becomes a family.



The Third Kabaddī

तेसर कबड्डी *Tesar Kabaḍḍī*

"When there is no wind and the leaves stir, an old verdict is descending from paper into the tree."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The dead, the children, and the crooks' minds play a three-team game

Three teams, three breaths

The Third Kabaddi • तेसर कबड्डी — card 1 of 2

The self-forming circle. No wind, yet the leaves stir; the kabaddī circle forms itself — "somewhere crooked like Kamalā-Balān, somewhere square like a bridge-pier's shadow, somewhere glowing like a mobile-screen, somewhere straight like a court table." Three teams gather: the dead, the children, and the crooks — the crooks not by body, only by mind.

Name, question, jargon. The dead breathe names (Sarayu digging a pit with each repetition), the children breathe questions ("is there a debt behind the prize?"), and the crooks' minds breathe their old words — "process... percentage... adjournment... dignity." "The short word's breath breaks; the name travels long."

"I am Munna." A child who once trembled at scam-calls surrounds Batra's mind: "who is your real boss? then why did messages come from Hong Kong?" — and Munna's account, called a mule, stands up as a man: "my name is not mule. I am Munna." "Crime's greatest armor is calling a human a thing; when the thing becomes a name again, the armor cracks."

● *The game of breaths*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Three teams: the dead, the children, and the crooks' minds.
- Names and questions travel long; jargon's breath breaks short.
- "I am Munna" — the thing reclaims its name and the armor cracks.

The word left behind

The Third Kabaddi • तेसर कबड्डी — card 2 of 2

Bones and language. Nand asks Lau, holding a bridge-map of names not piers: "how many bones in your account?" — and "profit's math breaks when it must count bones." Ira asks Broom in Maithili: "in whose language do you speak 'dignity'? Whose name you cannot pronounce, how do you lecture on their dignity?" — and from his mouth comes only "profit."

One word each. The rule lets each leave, on condition of abandoning one word: Baṭuknāth leaves "process," Batra "account," Rāghav "message," Lau "share," Broom "dignity." They think they escaped — but the words transform in the grove: process → the order of reading names; account → a person's biography; message → a warning; share → responsibility; dignity → the pronouncing of a name.

Begin again. "When a person loses their weapon, they do not die at once, but their gait changes." In the morning the crooks find the taste of their old words gone — Baṭuknāth says "process" and hears "name-reading." A coconut leaf falls with four words: "begin again." "A book can be closed, not a story" — the kabaddi does not end; only the next breath is taken.

● The transformed words

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Profit's math breaks when made to count bones.
- Each crook abandons a word that the grove transforms.
- "A book can be closed, not a story" — only the next breath is taken.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 33

The Test of the Mind

मोनक परीक्षा *Monak Parīkṣā*

"A tired body sits down; a tired mind drags its master away."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- To re-enter the game, each crook must speak in full a name he erased

The mind, not the body

The Test of the Mind · मोनक परीक्षा — card 1 of 2

The breath is a name. In the ghosts' kabaddī the mind, not the body, is tested — "a tired body sits down; a tired mind drags its master away." The new rule: "whoever has cut a name cannot go out without speaking that name." Baṭuknāth counts sections, but trying to say "jurisdiction" his mouth betrays him — "Sarayu Devi... Lakhan Pāswān." Ananyā: "process is not breath; a name is breath."

The mirror, not the jail. Batra's vanishing messages become Devanagari leaves circling him; he understands "the grove is not making him a jail; it is giving him a mirror — from a jail one can flee, from a mirror it is hard." Rāghav, abandoned by his master ("use over"), learns "he who made others mules was himself the mule of a bigger account" — knowledge sadder than punishment.

A victory that rots. Baṭuknāth asks: "and if I read a name?" Būṛhbā: "then your victory will bring grief — but in the grief there will be a little water; a victory without grief rots." Batra wants only safety, not acceptance — "so his safety is never complete."

● The inner test

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The name, not the jargon, is the breath that counts.
- The grove gives a mirror, not a jail — harder to flee.
- A victory without grief rots; safety needs acceptance.

The inversion

The Test of the Mind • मोनक परीक्षा — card 2 of 2

The waiting threshold. Lau, who knew India only as a market, sees behind each name "a home, a threshold, a pair of slippers, an unfinished journey" — and for the first time sees India as a waiting threshold. He hears the Kamalā-Balān flowing far off and learns "knowing a river's name is a responsibility; whoever buys its water without its name buys its curse too."

Name before price. The grove translates Broom's speech itself: his "dignity" climbs the leaf and becomes "price," then "price" breaks into "name," and the children say in one voice: "name first, price later."

The spectators play. The reversal deepens: the crooks' minds sit at the edge — spectators for the first time — while the loths, always spectators, now run in the game. "Bring into the game whoever always watched; seat and make watch whoever always played the game of crime." The busyness of the builders, not their revenge, frightens the crooks most — "in a fight the enemy is before you; in future-building he becomes irrelevant."

● *The turned game*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- India seen at last as a waiting threshold, not a market.
- The grove turns "dignity" into a name — name before price.
- The spectators now play; the players now watch.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 34

The Listening River

सुनैत नदी *Sunait Nadī*

"The river stills its current to hear who on the bank is lying."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A name must be spoken not only fully, but truly

The listening river

The Listening River • सुनैत नदी — card 1 of 2

The outer world stirs. The silence is "the river stilling its current to hear who on the bank is lying." In the outer world the names surface: Sarayu Devi in Baṭuknāth's tap-water and on his order ("name incomplete" where "case closed" should be); Batra's safe demands "for whose name the account, say their mother's name"; Broom's pen writes "worker" where he meant "human capital."

Say your own name. Devika's lesson: "when a thief frightens you, he will not say your full name — he will say customer, accused, consumer, user; first say your full name, then ask his; whoever cannot say his own name, do not obey his order." And a law-book that shows only names, not sections: "a law that does not keep names is not a book but a curtain."

● The bank that listens

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The erased names surface in tap-water, safe, and pen.
- "Whoever cannot say his own name, do not obey his order."
- A law that keeps no names is a curtain, not a book.

The name's heat

The Listening River • सुनैत नदी — card 2 of 2

Warm rice or cold iron. Būṛhbā warns the children to see not only the name but "the name's heat: a name spoken in love steams like hot rice; a name spoken only to save oneself stays like cold iron." A clay bowl tests it — a true name keeps its water-drop; a false name's drop "becomes smoke and flies away."

The five tested. Baṭuknāth's "Sarayu Devi, who climbed the pier with a basket and was written absent" holds — "not a victory, but the first wound." Batra's "Ujjwal Jhā" turns to smoke (a name learned from the news); Lau's "Ujjwal" smokes too (known as an event, not a human); but Rāghav's "Munna Pāswān, whom I made a criminal though the crime was not his" holds — his first crack.

Go to the home. Būṛhbā: "the fifth breath is begun, not complete; whoever spoke one name is not freed — now he must go to the name's home." Baṭuknāth books a ticket to Gaṛh Nārikel; the school-children pour the bowl's water into the grove's roots, and the leaf reads: "speaking a name is the first breath; going to the name's home is the second."

● The true name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A name in love steams warm; a name to save oneself stays cold.
- Only the names spoken with truth keep their water.
- Speaking a name is the first breath; reaching its home the second.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 35

The Threshold of the Name

नामक देहरी *Nāmak Dehrī*

"Speaking a name is the first breath; going to the name's home is the second."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The crooks are pulled to the homes of those they erased

The name walks ahead

The Threshold of the Name • नामक देहरी — card 1 of 2

The ticket changes. Baṭuknāth's car stalls ("the engine is fine, but it will not accept the direction"), so he takes the train; his ticket, warming in his palm, changes from "Darbhanga" to "Sarayu Devi's threshold." The old man returns: "today I will not read law; today I will read the courtyard — I do not follow you; the name you left walks ahead of you."

The home, not the number. Batra's new screen shows Ujjwal's home — the half-bent roof, the bare wall where his certificate hung, the teeth-marks on the pillow he bit to stop weeping. "In crime's world he saw only KYC, account, transaction, percentage"; seeing the home, "the stranger was not the home — the stranger was himself." Rāghav learns his first letter: "म — Munna, not mule."

The incomplete address. Searching for Munna's village, Rāghav finds the address deliberately incomplete — "the poor's address is kept incomplete, so the criminal can use them and the state can abandon them." Baṭuknāth's shoes sink in the mud; Būṛhbā: "shoes do not reach the threshold; feet do."

● Toward the home

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The name walks ahead; the direction cannot be refused.
- Seeing the home, the number becomes a person again.
- The poor's address is kept incomplete by design.

The dust in the eyes

The Threshold of the Name • नामक देहरी — card 2 of 2

Put it in your eyes. Sarayu Devi's home is now half a wall and a threshold. An old woman gives Baṭuknāth a fistful of dust: "if you want to read her fully, put this in your eyes; putting it on paper does nothing." He obeys, and her last day opens — the basket, the cement-smell, the crocodile's mouth, the blank space in the list. He sits on the ground; "not repentance — repentance takes time — only the beginning of seeing." Her words: "write what you saw."

Home, fear, dream. The children's new rule: "a name is not only said — the home, the fear, the dream, all three." Rāghav completes Munna's address and the threshold stills; but Batra, who saw only the screen, cannot step on Ujjwal's threshold — "reach the home, but not with a threat." Before Lau rise millions of thresholds he cannot step on: "a market's owner, not a threshold's guest" — learning the word "permission."

The victim's language. Broom stands before Sarayu Devi's threshold: "I am sorry." Būṛhbā: "speak your sorrow not in your language, but in the language of the victim's name." Broom is silent — "his education is long, but the name's language short; he stands at the beginning of learning." The story moves on, "for a name does not tire until it reaches the home."

● Crossing the threshold

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The dust in the eyes, not on paper, lets one truly see.
- A name needs its home, its fear, and its dream.
- Sorrow must be spoken in the victim's name's language.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 36

Home, Fear, Dream

घर, भय, सपना *Ghar, Bhay, Sapnā*

"Home, fear, and dream — whatever truth stood among these three circles held in the game."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Behind each name lies a home, a fear, and a dream

Home and fear

Home, Fear, Dream • घर, भय, सपना — card 1 of 2

The home, not the address. The seventh breath opens the threshold's darkness. Baṭuknāth is made to see Sarayu Devi's home — a child who fell asleep waiting for his mother; "evidence is not what is in a file; evidence is that a child could not eat the rice even as it went cold." Batra sees Ujjwal's home, the teeth-marks on the pillow he bit to stop weeping, and his letter: "Didi, I was wrong, but I was not a criminal."

The fear named. Būṛhbā: "fear is the name of the breath that could not come out." Sarayu's fear — the child will go hungry; Ujjwal's — his sister's head will bow for his mistake; Munna's — he will be called a criminal without understanding; Nand's — even after truth is written, the river drinks it all.

The oath of the seventh breath. Devika: "respect the fear; do not call the frightened a coward, the cheated a fool, the blackmailed guilty." Batra's mind trembles — "his crime's first rule was to make the victim feel guilty; when the village says the cheated are not fools but victims, half of Batra's business dies there."

● Behind the name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The home is the cold rice a waiting child could not eat.
- Fear is the breath that could not come out.
- Respect the fear — the oath that kills half the fraud.

The dream, and the three pebbles

Home, Fear, Dream • घर, भय, सपना — card 2 of 2

The dead's dream. Būṛhbā: "the dream is the hardest, because the dead's dream, the living must fulfil." Sarayu's dream — that her child can study; Munna's — that his father goes to the bank without bowing his head; Nand's — that the worker's name is written on the bridge-pier. The crooks answer only in part: Rāghav weeps hearing the dream, Lau cannot fully tell even one home.

Homework, not a verdict. This time the grove-court gives no judgment but homework: "learn what you could not tell, and come back." On Baṭuknāth's victory-order a child's line glows — "ask the name's home"; Batra's screen shows only "write a reply."

The three pebbles. The children write a letter on each pebble — the home's, the fear's, the dream's — and joined, the name is complete. The seventh breath does not finish; it becomes three pebbles in the children's pockets, jangling all day, "for a dream, without a name, stays incomplete."

● The unfinished breath

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The dead's dream is the debt the living must pay.
- The grove gives homework, not a verdict.
- Home, fear, dream — three pebbles that complete a name.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 37

Three Pebbles

तीन कंकड़ *Tin Kaṅkaṛ*

"The day the three pebbles stop jangling in your pocket, know that an answer has gone missing."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reading the roots of crime — the crooks' own beginnings

Where is my home?

Three Pebbles • तीन कंकड़ — card 1 of 2

The lost home. The eighth breath seeks the root. Baṭuknāth, who has many homes, finds his real home lost; the first pebble reads "beginning" — "before every bribe there is a beginning: a small waiver, a lie that seems laughable, a falsehood called 'process.'" Rāghav rediscovers his cut childhood name — Rāghaveś — "a name cut short shrinks the soul; he cut half his own name, then began cutting others' accounts."

The first compromise. Batra recalls a broker's lesson from his first case — "you do not win an argument with truth, you win with time" — the day he learned to sell time. Lau recalls his mother sewing all night, and how his vow shifted "from revenge on poverty to revenge on the poor." Broom writes at last: "a boy who was taught that a mistake hides inside a number."

The real fear. Rāghav's true fear is not the police or Lau, but that "one day his son will ask, 'what work did you do?' and he will have no answer" — and his son, asleep, has left on the table a question: "what is a mule?" "When crime becomes a household word, the father cannot be saved."

● The root of crime

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Every bribe has a beginning — a small waiver called "process."
- A cut name shrinks the soul; selling time replaced truth.
- The real fear: a child's question the father cannot answer.

Read the root, not the face

Three Pebbles • तीन कंकड़ — card 2 of 2

The crook has a home. Ananyā: "today we will read the crooks' homes." A child: "do they have homes too?" Būṛhbā: "the tyrant has a home, but he abandons it; the abandoned home becomes testimony." The children write five names, each with a blank — "crime is born the moment a man takes his own home's pain as a right to burn another's home."

The egg of the crocodile. The five leaves name the beginnings — "small waiver, sale of time, cutting the name, revenge on the poor for poverty, hiding the fault in a number." A child asks if Batra told a small lie first, then a big one; Devika: "yes — the big crocodile too is born from an egg." Understanding the pain "is not pardon; it is the way to cut the crime."

The dangerous children. The crooks' inner doors open — "after a door opens no one changes at once, but the air enters." The new rule: "whoever we defeat, understand their home too, else the victory becomes crime again." Būṛhbā smiles: "these children are dangerous — they see not the enemy's face, but his root."

● Cutting at the root

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The abandoned home of the tyrant becomes testimony.
- The big crocodile is born from a small egg — read the beginning.
- Understand the enemy's root, or the victory becomes crime again.



The Pronouncing of the Name

नामक उच्चारण *Nāmak Uccāraṇ*

"Writing a name is not enough — one must be given the time to learn how to say it."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Writing a name is not enough — one must be given the time to learn its pronunciation

The written name, the read name

The Pronouncing of the Name • नामक उच्चारण — card 1 of 3

Body and soul. Būṛhbā: "the written name is the outer body; the read name is the inner soul; whoever reads a name wrong kills them again." Reading a name wrong "is not applying a wrong section — it is closing again the door of the dead's home." Baṭuknāth learns from the foam on his tea: "not Bholanāth — Bhola Naṭ."

The alphabet again. Batra's screen refuses his swipe and corrects his reading — "U-jj-va-l" — "as if a school held his finger, teaching him the alphabet." His certificate blurs, a line beneath it: "no degree was given for selling names." Rāghav joins the fragments into "Munna Pāswān," and speaking it truly, learns "a name spoken rightly becomes not a recovery but a return."

The name on the stage. For Broom the punishment comes on a university stage: as he begins his speech, the mic says "not Bholanāth — Bhola Naṭ," and each speaker emits a name. Ira stands at the back holding the name-record, understanding "sometimes protest is not snatching the mic, but reading the name right."

● Name as soul

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The read name is the soul; a wrong reading kills again.
- "A name spoken rightly becomes a return, not a recovery."
- Protest can be reading the name right, not snatching the mic.

The Law of the Three Leaves

The Pronouncing of the Name • नामक उच्चारण — card 2 of 3

Home, death, dishonor. The Name-Reading assembly makes a rule — each name reads three things: its home, its death, its dishonor. "Without the home the dead wanders; without the death the crime stays unclear; without the dishonor justice stays incomplete." This is named the Law of the Three Leaves.

The body's truth. The government list wrote "Sarayu Mahto, male, absent"; the children read the truth — "Sarayu Mahto, woman, laborer, fallen from the bridge, not absent." Devika reads "Ujjwal Jhā, son, student, gripped by the screen-crocodile, not a criminal" — and the silence that follows "is also a reading."

Beyond court-vocabulary. The crooks must write past their old words: Baṭuknāth replaces "home unknown" with "home yet to be found" — "calling someone unknown whose home you did not search is laziness." Batra traces the debt to "the game," then "who made it?", finally "of my net" — and a lamp appears below Ujjwal's name. Rāghav writes not "mule-account" but "the name was stolen."

● The three-fold reading

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Every name read with its home, its death, its dishonor.
- "Woman, laborer, not absent" — the body's truth restored.
- "Home yet to be found," not "unknown" — responsibility begins.

The punishment of the name

The Pronouncing of the Name • नामक उच्चारण — card 3 of 3

Read my name too. Hulāsī speaks in the assembly for the first time: "read my name too — I fell; the right to cremate me was taken by calling it suicide; read the dishonor." Ananyā reads it and "a very old wind blows in the grove," restoring the dignity a false label had taken.

The blurring signature. The crooks' sentence: each night read one name — with home, death, dishonor — or read it again. "Whoever denies another's name slowly loses the right to his own name": Baṭuknāth's signature loses its "Hari," Lau's account-owner becomes "unknown," Broom's invitation reads only "Edw..."

The living names too. Mīrā adds to the oath: "whoever's name is snatched without consent, their name shall be returned with honor" — for the women renamed as "goods" or "number" in the body-market. Gop: "data without a name is counting corpses." The next breath will show "how the read name joins not to justice, but to work."

● The sentence of the name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A false label is a dishonor; reading the name restores dignity.
- Deny another's name, and your own signature blurs.
- The living's names, too, must be returned with honor.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 39

The Peace of the Seed

बीजक शान्ति *Bījak Śānti*

"Still outside and ready to burst within — in such peace a seed is formed."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Still on the outside, ready to burst within — the stillness before sprouting

The peace of the seed

The Peace of the Seed • बीजक शान्ति — card 1 of 2

Stillness before sprouting. The tenth breath brings "not the peace of rest after a meal, nor of a court's adjournment, but the peace when a seed forms inside a tree: outside the leaf is still, inside the earth prepares to burst." Devika's lesson: "fear kept secret becomes a business; while it is locked inside, it is the thief's; spoken aloud, it is society's."

Into offline things. The crooks are now reached even where there is no network: Batra's press-statement re-titles itself "read me too," and his printer auto-prints "I am not a thief" while offline — "his crime always depended on the network; into an offline thing the grove has entered." Rāghav's erased SIMs sprout as name-seeds; "the messages he erased were not erased — they became seeds waiting for soil."

The untranslatable line. Ira sits to write in English, but the first line comes in Maithili — "whoever's name you cannot say rightly, you cannot speak in their favor" — and the line refuses to be translated. On Lau's map one point pulses, "not like a stock-graph up and down, but like a heart."

● *The gathering seed*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Fear spoken aloud changes owner — from the thief to society.
- The grove reaches even the crooks' offline machines.
- The truest line refuses to be translated out of the mother tongue.

Water into the burrow

The Peace of the Seed • बीजक शान्ति — card 2 of 2

Knowledge, not revenge. Būṛhbā's strategy: "the crocodile will not come out of its burrow — put water into its burrow." The water is not a lawsuit or revenge, but knowledge — the name-lesson, the fear-lesson, account-recognition, the privacy-oath, the development-word-check — carried into every village, school, and diaspora home.

The first victory inside. The children begin teaching outsiders; a bank clerk, asked "did you see the rule, or the person?", goes home and marks three mule accounts with a small red-pencil note — "see the person." His colleague scoffs; the clerk: "human things run in no file — that is why the file kept running until it reached the dead."

A place in the meal. The grove holds a name-feast — a fistful of rice, a pinch of salt, a drop of water by each leaf — for "whoever gets a place in the meal gets a place in history." The crooks' minds are accepted before their bodies, and the dew's command reads simply: "now."

● *The slow flood*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Water in the burrow — knowledge spread, not vengeance.
- A clerk's red-pencil note is the first victory inside the system.
- "A place in the meal is a place in history" — and now, act.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 40

The Letter of the Dew

ओसक अक्षर *Osak Akṣar*

"The reader of the dew's letters finds a wet palm — and a wet palm opens the door."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reading not just the name, but the object of a life, and then its route

The letter of the dew

The Letter of the Dew • ओसक अक्षर — card 1 of 3

The wet palm opens doors. The eleventh breath descends on the dew; the children's palms wet, and when a wet palm touches the notebook, "not letters but small doors open — behind each door a name, behind each name a home, behind each home a humble object waiting." The lesson: after the name, the life must be read — the hunger, the fear, the child's fee, the last mobile-call.

The object-record. The name-record becomes an object-record — a torn gamchā, Ujjwal's cracked phone, an empty vial, a laborer's iron tiffin. The children ask "whose tiffin?" — "Bhola Naṭ's" — "what did he eat?" — "salt in rice." "Speaking the dead's food halves their hunger."

No section for an object. Baṭuknāth finds no legal section for an object-record: "defamation could be filed against a name — but against a torn tiffin? the contempt of an empty vial?" The law's edges slip from his hand "like a wet leaf."

● Name into life

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- After the name, the life must be read — hunger, fear, fee.
- The object-record: a tiffin, a cracked phone, an empty vial.
- The law has no section for the relic of a life.

The object and the relic

The Letter of the Dew • ओसक अक्षर — card 2 of 3

The broken anklet. Sarayu Mahto's daughter Kamalī places her mother's broken anklet in the salt-line: "father, leaving, told her to get it repaired; the anklet stayed broken, father did not return." Its bell faintly tinkles, and the whole assembly's heart bends toward it — with the name joined to the anklet, "Sarayū Mahto rises an inch above the water-burial."

Uncertain, or waiting. The government paper called Sarayu's fate "uncertain"; Baṭuknāth hears the word like a hammer — "in court uncertainty is a stay; in a home uncertainty is waiting" — and understands the difference for the first time. A broker named Mādhav cannot write his own full name: "one who cannot write his own full name has come to erase another's."

The salt of labor. On Broom's stage a tiffin's image spreads; asking for water, he tastes only salt — "for the first time in his life the salt of labor touches his mouth," and it stays on his tongue "as if an unknown hand placed its whole day's sweat in his mouth." "In that taste the sweetness of a thousand speeches loses."

● The relic speaks

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A broken anklet lifts a name an inch out of the water.
- "Uncertain" is a stay in court, but waiting in a home.
- The salt of labor outweighs the sweetness of a thousand speeches.

Reading the route

The Letter of the Dew • ओसक अक्षर — card 3 of 3

A way home for the dead. The children build a map not of blue rivers and red roads, but of rice and salt — from Bhola Naṭ's home to the bridge, from Munna's home to the bank — "as if giving the dead a way back home." The record becomes a route: who was with them, who left them, who sold them, who watched, who stayed silent.

The foot before the cell. Gop, master of the spreadsheet, understands "before the cell there is a foot: the worker walks first, then is recorded on paper; crime is born where the walking foot is shut in the room of paper." Truth, he sees, is protected "not by copies, but by use" — shared among games, oaths, and a clerk's red pencil, "no server can shut it."

The broken chain rejoined. Baṭuknāth, whose profession was arguing "the chain of causation is broken," watches the grove rejoin the chain from rice and salt; an invisible rope binds his chest, "each knot a name, behind each name a route." The grove: "reading the route is harder than the name — and whoever reads a life cannot escape the route."

● The chain of hands

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The route is a way home — who pushed, who sold, who stayed silent.
- The foot walks before the cell records it.
- The grove rejoins the chain the lawyer built his career on breaking.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 41

The Boat of the Name

नामक नाव *Nāmak Nāv*

"A boat kept on the bank has no meaning — the boat of the name speaks only when it enters the current."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reading the turn where crime could have been stopped — and who bears its weight

The boat in the current

The Boat of the Name • नामक नाव — card 1 of 2

Into the current. The name, object, and relic are still "a boat kept on the riverbank — its meaning opens only when it enters the current." The twelfth breath sends the routes into the water: Bhola Naṭ "left home, reached work, name cut"; and of Sarayu Mahto an old man says, "she fell not from the pier, but from the count."

The incomplete route. An old woman offers only "Monday of Bhādav" — the day her son left; "will a route form from just this?" Būṛhbā: "the route is not always found whole; fill the part you find with truth." In law an incomplete route becomes doubt; "in the grove an incomplete route becomes compassion" — "an incomplete route is also a route."

Saving the space. Gop leaves an empty space on the soil for those whose route is not yet found — and it glows most of all. Hulāsī: "respect the empty space; not all stories can speak at once." The children learn that "memory is not only filling, but also saving space."

● *The launched boat*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "She fell not from the pier, but from the count."
- An incomplete route is compassion in the grove, doubt in court.
- Memory is not only filling, but saving space for the unfound.

At which turn?

The Boat of the Name · नामक नाव — card 2 of 2

The stoppable moment. At each route's end the children write one question — "at which turn could it have been stopped?" Bholā Naṭ's turn: the safety-belt; Sarayu's: the true count; Ujjwal's: a collective answer at the first threat; Munna's: the bank's question. "Crime was not inevitable; in every death there was a place where a person could have stopped it, but did not."

Erasing the turn. On Batra's screen the turns open — the youth he trapped with "just give an empty account," Ujjwal's first loss, the first arrest-call — his face present at each; he tries to cursor the face away, but it will not go, "for erasing the turn makes the route a lie." Rāghav's turns, too: at each he chose the commission, and now the turns rest as leaves on his chest.

Who bears the weight? Būṛhbā's question for the next breath: "who will bear the weight of the turn not stopped? If the crook bears it, atonement; if society, reconstruction; if the state, justice; but if no one bears it, the crocodile will lift it again." The dew reads, this time, two words: "bear the weight."

● *The weight of the turn*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Every crime had a turn where a person could have stopped it.
- Erasing the turn makes the route a lie.
- Crook, society, or state must bear it — or the crocodile lifts it.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 42

The Circle of the Weight

भारक वृत्त *Bhārak Vṛtt*

"Punishment is given from above; the weight rises from within and sits on the shoulder."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Punishment is given from above; weight rises from within onto the shoulder

Punishment from above, weight from within

The Circle of the Weight • भारक वृत्त — card 1 of 2

The heaviest circle. Būṛhbā distinguishes the two: "punishment is what is given from above; weight is what rises from within and sits on the shoulder." Ananyā draws three circles — those wronged, those who wronged, and "those who saw and stayed silent"; "the heaviest circle is usually this one."

The tiffin and the file. Munna lifts Bhola Naṭ's tiffin — heavy with "the incomplete account of wages, that day's hunger, iron dust from the bridge-pier." Devika: "this is not your crime, but it is your society's weight; lift it, so the next Bhola does not die on an empty stomach." Baṭuknāth's victory-file will not lift — it holds "not paper but time — all the stays that turned a widow old; and time is the heaviest thing."

The weight reaches the body. On Batra's screen each mule account becomes a brick; delete only drops it onto the table; at the fifth his desk tilts, at the twentieth his wrist aches — "the weight of digital crime finally reaches the body."

● *The three circles*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Punishment falls from above; weight rises from within.
- The silent watchers carry the heaviest circle.
- Even digital crime's weight finally reaches the body.

The share, and grief into work

The Circle of the Weight • भारक वृत्त — card 2 of 2

How much is your share? The children declare no one criminal and free no one; they only ask "how much is your share in this weight?" — the hardest question, "for people find it easy to blame another fully; accepting a share is hard." The builders write their own shares: Gop, "I took the file as work, not life"; Devika, "when Ujjwal first showed fear, I thought him stubborn."

A memorial that works. The lifted objects are turned to use — the tiffin becomes a grain-list, the SIM a fraud-lesson, the passbook a community-caution. "A memorial is not what is looked at; a memorial is what does work." And fear, answered together, fades: "don't let fear speak alone; three answer together."

The walking weight. Baṭuknāth lifts one corner of the file and admits "this will not lift alone"; Būṛhbā: "lifting alone is punishment; lifting shared is justice." The weight becomes "a walking messenger" — whoever won't accept their share, an object will reach their door, and the next breath begins: the breath of the door.

● Grief into work

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The share is harder to accept than the whole blame is to assign.
- A memorial is what does work, not what is looked at.
- "Lifting alone is punishment; lifting shared is justice."



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 43

The Walking Weight

चलैत भार *Calait Bhār*

"The shared weight is not spent — it begins to walk, from village to village."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The shared weight does not end — it walks, house to house

The weight walks

The Walking Weight • चलैत भार — card 1 of 2

Into the crooks' homes. Sharing does not end the weight — "the weight now begins to walk, house to house." It reaches the crooks through their own families. Baṭuknāth's mother, who long spoke no name clearly, suddenly asks: "Baṭuk, how many names have you eaten? You ate paper, you ate dates — now will you eat names too?" "Entry into the inner world happens not only through the door, but through the mother's tongue."

The rice and the dream. Batra's son dreams of a boy who asks his name and says "in your father's earnings there is the smell of my hanging" — and "in which court a case against a dream?" Rāghav's wife reads "account closed" in the rice-grains turning one way; Lau's crore-signing hand trembles writing one distant village's name.

● *House to house*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The weight is not spent by sharing — it walks.
- It enters the crooks' homes through mother, son, and wife.
- A dream and a village's name shake those no court could.

Beware the word "win"

The Walking Weight • चलैत भार — card 2 of 2

Work, not victory. The defeated are busy in their work, "with no time to dream anyone's dream" — Nishānt's "where the percentage shines too much, question; where a password is wanted, flee"; Mīrā's "write my name, but with my consent"; Saumya sprouting the documents into seven languages, for "truth kept only in the expert's language stays half-captive."

The crook's favorite word. Ananyā asks Bā, "then have we won?" Bā: "beware the word 'win' — it is often the crook's favorite word; people at work do not declare victory." Ananyā writes "work" on a leaf, and beneath it, small, "breath."

Onward. Before dawn the leaves clash — not kabaddī, not a name, not a verdict, but one word: "onward." Āruṇi's hand stops before writing an ending, "for this time the story is not ending — the story is entering house to house," and the leaf-word "work" slowly turns green.

● *The unfinished work*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "Win" is the crook's favorite word; workers don't declare victory.
- Truth in the expert's language alone stays half-captive.
- The story does not end — it walks on, house to house.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 44

The Great-granddaughter's Notebook

पोतीक कापी *Potik Kāpī*

"Fear is like water — finding no crack in the wall, it descends into the grandchild's notebook."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The crooks' own children become the questioners

Fear in the notebook

The Great-granddaughter's Notebook • पोतीक कापी — card 1 of 2

The next generation asks. "Fear's nature is like water — where it meets a wall it seeks a crack; where it finds none, it descends into the grandchild's notebook." Baṭuknāth's seven-year-old draws the grove and asks: "why does the one who wins stay outside the game?" — and "before a seven-year-old, the language of law dried up like a leaf."

The child, the first messenger. Batra's son lets the defeated youths pass and tells his father "they are my age; their lives were looted — I am only thinking how many mobiles lie shut inside my education, my car, my house." Rāghav's daughter asks "for whose safety?", and when the answer breaks into many pieces, "a man knows he lives in a house of lies."

The account demanded by eyes. Lau's son asks whether he knows "the names of the people you earn from"; each wave outside the glass house seems a name — "so many that his bank's figures fall short." "Traders look at profit-loss tables; children demand an account with their eyes."

● *The child questions*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Fear descends into the next generation's notebook.
- "For whose safety?" — the answer that reveals the house of lies.
- Children demand an account with their eyes, not a ledger.

The one word: whose?

The Great-granddaughter's Notebook • पोतीक कापी — card 2 of 2

The question cuts the interest. Devika's lesson: "if someone says quick money, ask how; if secret, ask why; if 'everyone does it,' ask whose names." Nishānt adds the arithmetic: "the thief's profit grows on fear and shrinks on a question — the question cuts the interest first." The corruption of a lineage breaks not in court but "at the home's dinner-table."

The winged question. The children are not a team but "the whistle — they start the game, they do not stop it." In the field's center their question runs: "a question has no feet but wings; it cannot be caught; and in kabaddī, whoever you cannot catch changes the rule of the game."

The master key. Ananyā writes one word on the grove's earth — "whose?" — and the earth trembles: whose money, whose death, whose win, whose order, whose silence, whose country, whose name. Bā: "now, even if they wish, they cannot stay outside" — "where a child asks 'whose?', the crook's inner door opens."

● One word, every lock

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A question cuts the interest the fear was earning.
- The winged question cannot be caught, so it rewrites the rules.
- "Whose?" is the one word that opens every inner door.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 45

The Inner Air

भीतरक हवा *Bhītarak Havā*

"The door will not stay open — the stale air shut within comes out first."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The door once opened will not stay shut — the stale inner air comes out

The door won't stay shut

The Inner Air • भीतरक हवा — card 1 of 2

The question that won't be drawered. In the sixteenth breath the child's "whose?" opens the inner doors, and the stale air of homes "where the victory-paper, the smell of the bribe, and the shine of inheritance were kept shut" begins to flow. Baṭuknāth locks his granddaughter's drawing in a drawer, but it reappears on the desk, the pillow, the mirror — "the drawing is not an object, it is a question; a question cannot be locked in a drawer."

The heirs question. Batra's son returns the car: "the mobiles that went shut, the homes drowned in debt — why my name in place of their names? How many stomachs were emptied to fill one, I have reached the age to see." Rāghav's daughter keeps a "Note of Silences"; Lau's son wins a prize for an essay: "one who does not know the names of a country's people does not earn, but steals."

Silence as inheritance. Baṭuknāth realizes his granddaughter will inherit his property and name, "but will she also inherit his silence? Inheritance is often not property but an unanswered question" — and "his granddaughter is making him not a grandfather, but a witness."

● The stale air escapes

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A question cannot be locked in a drawer.
- The heirs ask why their name stands in place of the erased.
- Inheritance is often an unanswered question, not property.

The name, not the profit

The Inner Air • भीतरक हवा — card 2 of 2

A new lineage. Devika teaches "the home's question" — "a thief often starts from the home's silence; if much money, fear, and secrecy suddenly come, ask lovingly; a question is not an insult, it is the home's protection." Mīrā: "fear is inherited, and silence, and shame; now a new lineage forms — of consent, of the question, of one's own right over one's own body."

The heir's refusal. Gop's file: "criminals break less from their crime than from their children's refusal; punishment is given by an outer institution — defeat by the home's inner question." A generation that says "I will not take this profit" changes history's direction.

The children's vow. At the field's gate the children hold not weapons but questions, and Ananyā writes "what will you take? what will you leave?" They answer together: "the name that was erased, we will take; the profit made by erasing a name, we will leave" — and a green flicker enters the old black ghost, "as if oil were poured again into an old lamp."

● Refusing the tainted milk

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A question is the home's protection, not an insult.
- The heir's refusal defeats what no institution could.
- "We will take the name, and leave the profit that erased it."



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 46

The Dark of Inheritance

उत्तराधिकारक अन्हार *Uttarādhikārak Anhār*

"Whoever saw not wealth's face but the darkness behind it — that one is the true heir."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The true heir looks not at wealth's face, but at the darkness behind it

The dark behind the shine

The Dark of Inheritance • उत्तराधिकारक अन्हार — card 1 of 2

The house that walks at night. The heirs look not at wealth's face but at the darkness behind it. Baṭuknāth's granddaughter draws feet on the house: "if a house is built on someone's dead feet, it walks at night." His will, read again, shows "movable dead" where "movable property" should be, "immovable name" for "immovable property."

The rate, not justice. In Batra's mirror, his law-book's first-page vow "I will study justice" has become "I will extract the rate." His son: "write the source of the profit in my name; if you cannot write the source, remove it from the name — else I do not want that world." Rāghav's wife sets aside a grain of rice: "for the one whose home's rice was snatched by your money."

Wealth demands translation. Reaching to add his granddaughter's name to his estate, Lau's screen replies: "answer in the language you earned in." For the first time his wealth demands a translation — "the language of percentage and settlement does not work; the language of Gaṛh Nārikel's names he does not know."

● *Reading the shadow*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A house built on dead feet walks at night.
- "I will study justice" curdles into "I will extract the rate."
- Tainted wealth cannot be translated into the language of names.

Choice, not refusal

The Dark of Inheritance • उत्तराधिकारक अन्हार — card 2 of 2

The story in the object. The children's inheritance-game asks of each object: "whose labor? whose loss? whose name?" — no answer, and the object is out. "Inheritance is not an object; inheritance is the story that enters the home with the object." Būṛhbā adds: "the wealth made by erasing a name — do not weep for it; gladly stay deprived; sometimes deprivation is liberation."

Choosing the story. Ananyā writes "the heir's refusal," then crosses it — "refusal" seems harsh — and writes "choice": "they are not only saying 'no'; they are choosing which story to keep with them." Āruṇi feels "the novel's future is now in the children's hands — the writer will only write; the story they will now choose."

The impossible sprout. Where the children's blank rule — "whoever gave up profit became worthy of the name" — sinks into the earth, an impossible coconut sprout bursts, called impossible in Mithila's soil, "but in Gaṛh Nārikel even the impossible sprouts after reading the rule." "The real test of inheritance is which thing you could let go, so your name stands not on someone's death, but on your own breath."

● *Letting go as strength*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Inheritance is the story that enters with the object.
- Choosing which story to keep, not merely refusing.
- The name that stands on one's own breath, not another's death.



The Elephant and the Crocodile

गज-ग्राह आख्यान *Gaja-Grāha Ākhyān*

"The elephant's foot caught in the water, the crocodile's tooth in history — the hand that frees is always a third."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The Gajendra-mokṣa retold — rescue by the name and the witness, not a god

The elephant-crocodile game

The Elephant and the Crocodile • गज-ग्राह आख्यान — card 1 of 2

The old tale, retold. Bā tells the ancient tale — the elephant seized by the crocodile, land pulling against water, "the water on the crocodile's side" — and Būṛhbā adds Gaṛh Nārikel's third question: "the one the elephant called — does he come, and in what form?" The children play it: the elephant advances "not by strength but by the name — a wrong name tightens the grip; a right name loosens the water."

The name loosens the water. Wrong names ("process," "law," "percentage," "commission") tighten the grip; but Baṭuknāth's granddaughter says "the house built on dead feet walks at night" and the water goes silent; Batra's son, forced past his father's "never admit," first says his own name "Āryan," then "Ujjwal Jhā," and the water recedes.

The crocodile's language. Batra's son: "in my home no name is spoken, only file numbers." Bā: "a file number is the crocodile's language; a name is the elephant's breath" — and he steps back "as if out of his father's house for the first time."

● Naming the water

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The elephant advances by the name, not by strength.
- Wrong names tighten the grip; true names loosen the water.
- A file number is the crocodile's language; a name, the elephant's breath.

The witness, not the god

The Elephant and the Crocodile · गज-ग्राह आख्यान — card 2 of 2

The stolen call. Reading the myth, Satyavrat sees it is "incomplete if the right to call is taken away" — the laborers' mouths filled with water, Ujjwal's stuck in the screen, Mīrā's voice suppressed to save her privacy. He understands "his final role is not the rescuer; he is not a god, not a lawyer, but one who returns to say: you could not call, because our system shut its ears — now I have come to listen."

The self in the dock. On his desk lies not a resignation but an acceptance-letter: "on the paper where the state stayed silent, my signature is complicit in the weight of crime." He does not sign it hastily — "a hurried confession can also become a paper that saves oneself" — resolving to come "with a paper that puts himself in the dock."

The crocodile's hunger. Būṛhbā: "rescue comes the day the crocodile too understands the history of its grip; else the elephant escapes and it seizes another foot." The paṇiḍubbī: "the crocodile too is a prisoner of hunger — but making hunger a religion is a crime." "The system's first atonement will be listening" — and "in the next breath the call will come, and no ear stays innocent."

● The atonement of listening

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The Gajendra-mokṣa is incomplete when the right to call is stolen.
- The rescuer returns not as a god, but as a witness who listens.
- The crocodile too is hunger's prisoner — but hunger as religion is crime.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 48

The Call

पुकार *Pukār*

"Speaking lasts a lifetime; when the time to listen comes, the ears are found full of dust."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Satyavrat Mehta arrives — not as a rescuer, but as one who has come to listen

The empty bowl

The Call • पुकार — card 1 of 2

Listening is the hard task. Būṛhbā: "today not kabaddī, today the call." Listening is no small task — "people speak all their life, but when the time to listen comes, the ears fill with old fear, profit, rank, education, and the dust of insult." Ananyā brings an empty bowl: "if the call were in a full bowl, the voice would keep looking at its own face; an empty bowl is the voice's home."

The calls come. Sarayu's name comes from a dew-drop, some letters trembling — "a name written for the first time trembles; a trembling name holds life." Ujjwal's shut phone flickers: "I am not lost money; I am the home's dawn." Munna: "I did not know my thumbprint would lift whose corpse."

File versus name. In Delhi, a dream-corridor of cabinets marked "adjourned," "absent," "insufficient evidence" ends at a child: "ears for hearing a name are within." Satyavrat understands "reading a file and hearing a name are two different tasks; in a file a person becomes a thing; after hearing a name, a person becomes a body, a home, a dawn, a hunger, and a waiting."

● The bowl of the voice

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An empty bowl is the voice's home.
- A trembling first-written name holds life.
- Reading a file makes a thing; hearing a name restores a person.

The one who came to listen

The Call • पुकार — card 2 of 2

Shedding the office. Satyavrat leaves without car or escort, walks to the station "so the weight of the office comes off," and rides a general compartment where "the country's justice stands — with ticket, without ticket, with fear, with fatigue." A child asks where he is going; "Gaṛh Nārikel"; what is there; after long, "ears."

The bowl fills from within. He arrives to no applause and no stage: "I have come very late... today I will listen; I will write the testimony of silence too." At this the empty bowl fills — "not poured from above, but rising from the bottom." Bā: "he is no god; he did not bring the water; he only accepted the bowl as empty — from that the water rose."

The record of silence. A new jurisprudence begins — "not a section but listening, not an order but a record, not victory but acceptance." He writes his own name under "silence" — "the heaviest name" — and understands "a sentence read with the eyes becomes knowledge; heard with the ears, repentance; heard with the heart, work."

● The atonement of listening

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- He walks to shed the weight of the office.
- The bowl fills because he accepts it as empty, not by rescue.
- Silence is the heaviest name; he writes his own first.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 49

The Record of Silence

मौनक अभिलेख *Maunak Abhilekh*

"A heard voice is a debt — whoever heard it must repay it."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The silences of all who saw and stayed quiet — including his own — are recorded

The debt of listening

The Record of Silence • मौनक अभिलेख — card 1 of 3

The voice becomes a debt. "A voice that reaches the ear becomes a debt; whoever heard it must repay it." Satyavrat's ears grow heavy, "as if each name became a small stone within," and the bowl heavy with "the weight of the names that crossed the body." Bā: "an empty thing that has listened becomes heavier than a full one."

The heart of the story. The water-burial is not only drowning; it is "the unbearable bridge between the body's end and the inner release, on which a man both weeps and grows light." The laborer written "absent" by the contractor came out of the river after the crocodile's teeth — "the body ended, the name freed; that paradox is the story's heart."

● *The weight of the heard*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A heard voice is a debt to be repaid.
- The body ended, the name freed — the story's heart.
- An empty thing that has listened outweighs a full one.

The record of silence

The Record of Silence • मौनक अभिलेख — card 2 of 3

Naming the silences. Beyond the dead's names, the silences are recorded: "the silence of the officer who did not think it necessary to ask the woman-laborer's name," the family's, the bank's. Devika writes with her own hand "the sister's silence"; a clerk writes "the silence of the door"; a bank clerk, "the silence of leaving 'other remarks' blank."

Acceptance cuts from within. This is no court register — "it has no punishment-provision, but the pain of acceptance," and "a true acceptance is deeper than punishment: punishment strikes from outside; acceptance cuts from within." Satyavrat recalls his own "worth considering" on a poor man's petition — "that word too was a small crocodile."

The whole form of the name. The record demands the full name — "her home's name, her body's labor, her child's waiting, and the lie of her compensation" — a heading Ananyā writes in one line where Delhi would need fifteen pages of commentary.

● Writing the silence

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The silences of all who watched are recorded, including his own.
- Acceptance cuts from within where punishment strikes from without.
- The whole name holds the home, the labor, the waiting, the lie.

Who reads, who listens

The Record of Silence • मौनक अभिलेख — card 3 of 3

The inversion. The reading inverts: "those who never spoke on a stage read; those who spoke much on stages listened — this is not a paradox, but the first lesson of justice." Baṭuknāth, who read "process" all his life, is made to read a name — "Sarayu, whose name stayed incomplete; the officer's silence who did not ask."

The guardian of the record. Satyavrat sees his final role — "not the rescuer, but the guardian of this record — a guardian who guards not the gate, but the ear: when power says 'the matter is closed,' he will say 'the name is incomplete'; when the court says 'process complete,' he will say 'listening remains.'"

Written in the ear. Būṛhbā: "whoever listens and gets to work, their silence slowly falls like a leaf; whoever listens and stays silent again, their silence becomes a crocodile and seizes the foot." The crooks may burn the papers, "but the record of silence was written less on paper, more in the ear; if the ear wakes, no fire can burn it."

● The waking ear

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Those who spoke on stages now listen; the silent now read.
- The guardian guards the ear, not the gate.
- Written in the ear, the record cannot be burned.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 50

The Name After the Body

देहक बादक नाम *Dehak Bādak Nām*

"The body departs, the name remains — and the name's feet stay wet."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The midpoint — the title fully realized: the body goes, the name remains

The inner crocodile

The Name After the Body • देहक बादक नाम — card 1 of 2

Listen to your own body first. The grove's first rule for Satyavrat: "first, listen to your own body's voice" — hard for one who "in office makes his body a cabinet of files." A pond forms with names floating as broken letters that slowly join; he writes his own: "Satyavrat Mehta. Silence" — recalling how often "waiting becomes crime's other name."

The grip within. An elephant appears, its foot held not by a river-crocodile but by "the crocodile within the body — greed, fear, rank, family honor, the court's dignity, the convenience of history, all joined into one crocodile." Būṛhbā: "most see only the elephant, not the crocodile; the real question is — whom does the elephant want to escape: the outer crocodile, or the inner grip?"

Acceptance frees it. As each name falls on it, a shackle breaks; the elephant looks to the sky, and "from its mouth comes not a call but acceptance"; the crocodile lets go — "whether it was freed or died, no one could tell, for in the grove liberation and death sometimes come in the same body."

● *The crocodile within*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The office turns the body into a cabinet of files.
- The real crocodile is greed, fear, and rank within.
- Acceptance, not a cry, frees the foot from the grip.

The body gone, the name seeking a root

The Name After the Body • देहक बादक नाम — card 2 of 2

The title, fully opened. Satyavrat understands the water-burial at last: "not only the moment the crocodile chews to the bone, but the moment the body's last pride breaks — the body destroyed, but the lie bound to the body also destroyed; whom the world called defeated was freed within; whom it called victorious stayed bound to their victory-paper."

The verb beside the name. He asks where his name is written; Ananyā points: "Satyavrat Mehta — who listened late, but listened." His eyes fill — "he had received many ranks, but this is the first time a verb, not a rank, was written with his name: listened." Gop sets down his pen: "now these will write themselves — the bound will write more."

A place on the earth. He vows to go where the body fell — "the freed name must be given a place on the earth." The coconut leaves stir with no wind, as if to say "the body is gone, the water gone, the fear gone; but the name is now seeking a root" — "and when a name begins to seek a root, the story changes once again."

● *The freed name*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The defeated freed within; the victorious bound to their paper.
- A verb beside the name — "listened" — outweighs any rank.
- The freed name now seeks a root in the earth.



The Weight of the Witness

साक्षीक भार *Sākṣīk Bhār*

"The witness's weight is not weighed on a scale, but on the chest."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The witness's weight is weighed not on a scale, but on the chest

Weighed on the chest

The Weight of the Witness • साक्षीक भार — card 1 of 2

Weight, not account. Būṛhbā: "an account can be adjusted up or down; a heard thing is not an account, it is a weight — have you come to carry it, or to weigh it again?" The crocodiles arrive in the body, no blood in their mouths but water on their teeth: "not every tooth is a weapon; some teeth are made to cut a bondage too."

The crocodile as mirror. The oldest crocodile: "I eat the body — that is my fault and my dharma both; but the one whose body stayed bound in the water, whose task was it to cut it free?" Chewing the body freed the name from its cage — "the bone caught in the register dissolved in the water and became a voice."

The second drowning. The law's own words write "a second death on the dead's temple": on the grove's wind, "case disposed" becomes "mark," "insufficient" becomes "own thirst," "time elapsed" becomes "time passed, the name did not." "The body drowned first, the name drowned second — and how often was he complicit in that second drowning?"

● *The mirror-teeth*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A heard thing is a weight to carry, not an account to weigh.
- The crocodile frees the name from the body's cage.
- The law's language can drown the name a second time.

The witness-letter

The Weight of the Witness • साक्षीक भार — card 2 of 2

Make your name small. "A witness does not sell his eyes; and if he ever does, he must repay the price all his life." Asked how to repay, Satyavrat sets his rank-tag on the soil: "first, make your name small; take off the rank; from there."

Repentance, not rank. He writes the first witness-letter: "I, Satyavrat Mehta, not from my former rank but from my present repentance, accept that when the name was being called, I kept listening to process for a long time." On a true acceptance "not applause but peace comes" — and in that peace the crocodiles retreat: "the body's guardian has done its work; now the name's guarding is in human hands."

No longer alone. He turns his rank-tag over and writes on the blank back: "what has been heard is no longer alone." Where the tag was buried, a coconut sprout bursts — "a rank buried in the soil sometimes becomes a name-tree."

● *The price repaid*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A witness who sells his eyes repays the price all his life.
- The letter comes from repentance, not from rank.
- "What has been heard is no longer alone."



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 52

The Next Voice

अगिला आवाज *Agilā Āvāj*

"The crocodile can chew the body, the court the years, the screen the mind — but no one could chew the guarding held in the children's hands."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The grove is cut down — and becomes a public square of memory

The grove cut down

The Next Voice • अगिला आवाज — card 1 of 2

Called encroachment. The world does not stand still; the Channā grove is cut down — on the government map "encroachment," on the contractor's paper "development zone," in the municipal file "clearing for light, road, and public use." "The tree that held people's testimony for years" is ordered measured and felled.

Light reveals, not destroys. As the first branch falls, a shaft of light enters, and what was hidden is revealed — name-stones, marbles, a scarf-scrap, an old clay lamp — "what was hidden was not destroyed; it began to be read in the light." Paradoxically the more it is cut, the more people come, and it turns "from a haunt of fear into a public square of memory."

The first witness. From the cut root rises not the smell of rot but "wet earth, sun, old paper"; the name-stones grow warm, as if the grove says "I am here, but not in the form you were used to seeing me."

● The felled canopy

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Renamed "encroachment," the grove is ordered cut.
- Light reveals the hidden rather than destroying it.
- The more it is cut, the more it becomes a square of memory.

The guarding is ours

The Next Voice • अगिला आवाज — card 2 of 2

The root keeps listening. Satyavrat returns — no official car, a plain white kurta, an old bag. A girl asks, "the grove is cut, so will the story be cut too?" He answers: "the grove is cut, the root keeps listening; a story lives where a listener remains."

Memory as institution. He gives the children an old register: "whoever's name was heard — the first witness of their existence." A girl writes under it, "from today the guarding is ours" — and a new law opens: "memory can be made an institution, if its guarding is given into innocent hands."

The grove is listening. At dawn a fine green point sprouts on the cut stump; the children neither laugh nor shout, only fold their hands — "the grove is listening." The water-burial ceases to be fear's last word and becomes "a door of bondage-release," and where people thought it ended, the story begins again.

● The handed-on watch

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The grove is cut, but the root keeps listening.
- Memory becomes an institution in innocent hands.
- Where it seemed to end, the story begins again.



The Dawn After the Cutting

कटानक बादक बिहान *Kaṭānak Bādak Bihān*

"A felled tree does not stop the dawn — the stump too looks toward the sun."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The stump faces the sun — and the market comes sniffing

The stump faces the sun

The Dawn After the Cutting • कटानक बादक बिहान — card 1 of 2

Light bares the story. The grove that held back the dawn for a century now, as a stump, lets the sun in unveiled; people fill not with joy but "an unfamiliar shame, like an old body, always covered, suddenly bared." The growth-rings teach: "when a tree is cut, it opens its age; when a man is cut, his name should open."

Kabaddī by day. The children move the game into daylight; whoever crosses the line is not caught but asked "whose name have you come with?" — no name, and he is lost; a name spoken, and all release him. "In this game, catching less, listening more," the children run calling not "kabaddī" but "present, present."

The name kept warm. Devika strokes Ujjwal's cold name-stone — "the one drowned in the screen, his name should stay warm on the earth" — and for the first time writes his full name without weeping; "her hand trembled but did not break."

● *The opened age*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Light bares the story that darkness once hid.
- The day's kabaddī catches less and listens more.
- The drowned one's name is kept warm on the earth.

The market comes sniffing

The Dawn After the Cutting • कटानक बादक बिहान — card 2 of 2

The right to silence. Mīrā, in a plain kurti, adds a stone marked "privacy": "the name's guarding matters as much as the right to silence; hear the one who wishes to speak, and guard the silence of one who wishes to stay silent too." Ira contrasts the diaspora's erasure: "there the name is turned into shining letters; the cutting there is of a different kind."

Even the empty space. Small works begin with no chairman or ribbon; people leave space beside incomplete names — "perhaps the family will come to complete it" — so that "here even empty space becomes memory." Satyavrat is absent this dawn, yet recorded: "the listening man absent, but the debt present" — for "bodily absence and absence of responsibility are not the same."

The first test. At dusk two strangers circle, shoes not matching the village soil, one on a mobile: "the place has opened; the crowd is regular; the project is feasible." The paniḍubbī notices — "where memory wakes in people's hands, the market too comes sniffing" — and a municipal notice is pasted on the stump: "the name-guarding's first test begins now."

● *The watch under threat*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Guarding the name and guarding silence matter equally.
- Empty space left for incomplete names is itself memory.
- As memory wakes, the market arrives to test the guarding.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 54

Around the Stump

ढूँठक चारू कात *Thūṇṭhak Cārū Kāt*

"Where no branch survives, still the head bows — now not from darkness, but from testimony."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The first folk-assembly gathers around the cut root

The circle around the stump

Around the Stump • टूँठक चारु कात — card 1 of 2

Bowed by shame, not dark. People sit in a circle around the cut root for the first time, heads bowed "not from fear but from shame" — the bared root "like an old body's chest cut open to show the bone," the dawn light on it "fearless, like a physician's scalpel." Bā: "if the root survives, the shade is born again."

The sign after the name. Name-stones are set around the stump, and "whoever's name wasn't found" is placed first. After each name a sign is recorded — wind, bird, sun, a child's sneeze — for "the grove now answers not by leaves but by signs; they weren't reading, they were joining relationships."

Truth needs a place. Gop, holding his files, sees the paper's dignity is limited here: "paper gives the name, people the voice, the stump the place, children the watch; without these five, memory stays half." He understands "truth is not enough to merely expose; truth needs a place to live."

● The living circle

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Heads bow from the shame of the bared root, not darkness.
- "Whoever's name wasn't found" is given the first place.
- Truth is not enough to expose — it needs a place to live.

The yellow envelope waits

Around the Stump • टूँक चारू कात — card 2 of 2

No sorrow made spectacle. Mīrā's rule: "the read name will be a stone around the stump, but no name's sorrow will become a spectacle; a name's right stays by the name's home." The privacy-oath moves from paper into the assembly's conduct — agreement given "not by raised hands, but by bowed heads."

The word's name. A postmaster brings a thick yellow municipal envelope; Āruṇi moves to open it, but Ananyā stops him: "the name-reading is on; the yellow paper will wait." Tomorrow, she says, "the name of the word written on it will be asked" — for government language too "cannot stay nameless when it claims memory."

● The waiting notice

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- No name's sorrow is made a spectacle; the right stays with the home.
- The name-reading comes first; the yellow paper waits.
- Government language too must answer for its name and purpose.



The Municipality's Yellow Notice

नगरपालिकाक पीयर सूचना-पत्र *Nagarpālikāk Pīyar Sūcanā-patra*

"The flutter of the government's yellow paper is not the sound of wings, but of scissors."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The notice's smooth language, and the people's answer written back

The paper's smooth language

The Municipality's Yellow Notice • नगरपालिकाक पीयर सूचना-पत्र — card 1 of 2

"I am order, not violence." The notice orders the name-stones, lamps, and cloth removed for "public beautification" — its language "so oiled, as if the paper itself says: I am not violence, I am order." Bā: "the name became a stone, and it calls it illegal; the one who erased the name — is that legal?"

The absent "general public." The phrase "general public" cuts like a knife — not those who read names all night, not the mother who placed her son's stone. "The paper's general public is a people who are not present, but in whose name anything can be done." Folk-testimony is dismissed as "unverified stories."

The crocodile in the paper. Gop keeps the objection-form rather than tearing it: "whose body went in the water, its proof? the silence bought, its record?" — for "the fight begins not by tearing the paper, but by seeing the crocodile within the paper."

● *The oiled order*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Bureaucratic smoothness disguises the cut as "order."
- The "general public" is invoked precisely because it is absent.
- The fight begins by seeing the crocodile within the paper.

The people answer the paper

The Municipality's Yellow Notice • नगरपालिकाक पीयर सूचना-पत्र — card 2 of 2

A cage, not a center. A "cooperation" envoy offers Baṭuknāth's "Folk-Memory Center" — a glossy picture with no grove, no stump, no name-stones. A child asks where the "whoever's name wasn't found" stone would be; where Ujjwal's mother would sit; where the ghosts would play — then, calmly: "then this isn't a center, it's a cage."

Memory must sign. Satyavrat: "before making memory a trust, permission must be taken from memory." The envoy scoffs, "does memory sign?"; Satyavrat: "it does — in the people's presence." A voice rises: "present" — one, then ten, then twenty.

The margins fill. The people write on the notice's margins — "not an empty plot, a place of names," "not a crowd, families," "proof not found is the proof of the crime" — and thumbprints where names can't be written. Under a seven-day threat, they sit to make their own map.

● *The answered notice*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A sanitized "center" without grove or names is a cage.
- Memory signs its permission in the people's presence.
- The people write their answer in the margins of the order.



The First Map of Memory

स्मृतिक पहिल नक्शा *Smṛtik Pahil Nakṣā*

"The place written 'empty plot' was where the most names were buried."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The people draw their own map where the state wrote "empty plot"

The filled place

The First Map of Memory · स्मृतिक पहिल नक्शा — card 1 of 2

Behind the government line. Ananyā answers the notice by straightening the stones: "the paper that calls my place empty, first I will show it the filled place." On the back of the old bridge-plan, the people draw their own line behind the state's — the cut stump at the center, name-stones around it.

A body's river. Āruṇi draws the Kamalā-Balān bending and trembling; asked why not straight, he answers: "this is not a file's river, but a body's river; where a name drowned within it, how can its line be straight?" Bā draws a vanished footpath — "mother's path" — where the state sees only a plot.

The knot of story. The laborers' settlement becomes palms, "each with a different number of fingers, because every family was not destroyed equally"; where a receipt vanished, Gop makes "the mouth of the missing paper." Place is no longer a thing but "a knot of story": here the name became water, here the silence dwelt.

● *The map of names*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The "empty plot" is where the most names were buried.
- A body's river bends where a name drowned within it.
- Each loss is unique; place becomes a knot of story.

Memory isn't folded

The First Map of Memory • स्मृतिक पहिल नक्शा — card 2 of 2

Waiting, not empty. The unknown names' points are left open — "not empty, but waiting." Satyavrat asks why; Ananyā: "the government says empty, I say waiting; if the name is not found, it stays open to remind everyone the search is not over." Mīrā adds a privacy-circle — "the right of the unspoken" — for "memory is not a forcibly opened box."

The sky under watch. Ira notes the map has no sky; a child draws an open sky with small planets, and Ananyā says softly: "if anyone steals a name and tries to leave the earth, the sky too will be under watch" — a "nameless planet, not empty now, but in question."

The sweet-tongued threat. The map is hung, not folded — "memory is not folded." Then a proposal arrives, wrapped in cloth: Baṭuknāth's "Folk-Memory Trust." The children understand "the next attack comes not with an axe or a notice, but with the sweet language of protection" — hiding "perhaps the most cunning crocodile's first tooth."

● *The hung map*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Open points are waiting, not empty; the search is not over.
- "Memory is not a forcibly opened box" — the right of the unspoken.
- The gravest threat wears the sweet language of protection.



Gaṅgeśa's Question

गंगेशक प्रश्न *Gaṅgeśak Praśna*

"No object of knowledge without proof — Gaṅgeśa's question still turns in the stump's root."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Navya-Nyāya's founder invoked against a sanitized memory-trust

No trust without justice

Gaṅgeśa's Question • गंगेशक प्रश्न — card 1 of 2

Grief-cloaked cunning. Baṭuknāth arrives with a red file for a "Folk-Memory Trust" (nyās), grief painted on his face but "calculation shining in his eyes." Ananyā turns his own pun back on him: "making a trust is fine — but do you know justice (nyāya)?" — "then first tell me justice."

Service, not ownership. Āruṇi strikes "the trust's jurisdiction" from the rules and writes "the duty of service"; Baṭuknāth's face tightens, "for he lived by authority and feared duty." Devika: "no one becomes a trust as a name's owner; the name belongs to family, people, and memory — the institution serves, it does not own."

● The word's edge

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A trust without justice becomes a crocodile.
- "Jurisdiction" is struck out and "the duty of service" written in.
- The institution serves memory; it does not own it.

Gaṅgeśa and memory-murder

Gaṅgeśa's Question • गंगेशक प्रश्न — card 2 of 2

The dimmed life. Ira opens the story of Gaṅgeśa Upādhyāya — father of Navya-Nyāya, author of the *Tattvacintāmaṇi*, "who gathered the thought of twelve thousand books in one." His intellect was honored, but his life's inconvenience — his marriage across caste — was dimmed by a sanitizing tradition. "If respect strangles truth, it is not respect — it becomes memory-murder."

Proof turned on caste. The children turn Gaṅgeśa's own kinds of proof — perception, inference, word, comparison — upon caste itself: "what is the proof of caste? the proof of denying humanity? the proof of the right to cut away an inconvenient part of a life?" A voice from the root: "whom you call unacceptable, what is the proof of rejecting them?"

Paper-trust to screen-trust. The proposal is neither accepted nor rejected, but "kept awaiting listening." That night a "Digital Tribute Platform" appears on mobiles — "after the paper-trust comes the screen-trust" — and a faint laugh rises from the stump, "as if Navya-Nyāya itself is ready to examine the next side's proof."

● The examined memory

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Honoring the mind while dimming the life is "memory-murder."
- The kinds of proof are turned upon caste itself.
- After the paper-trust comes the screen-trust.



Chandrapal's Memorial App

चन्द्रपालक स्मारक-अनुप्रयोग *Candrapālak Smārak-Anuprayog*

"When a tribute becomes an app, installments are collected on grief itself."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A tribute-app that collects installments on grief

The tribute becomes an app

Chandrapal's Memorial App · चन्द्रपालक स्मारक-अनुप्रयोग — card 1 of 2

Not a tribute, a net. Chandrapal's "Digital Tribute Platform" — "make your loved one's name immortal" — opens a window demanding the dead's full name, address, ID, bank details, cause of death, and a consent for "research, aid, donation, and partnership." Devika shuts it: "not a tribute, a net." A child: "one who demands a consent-form before hearing a name has not ears, but a stomach."

Grief made a product. Mīrā reads the terms: "give grief, they make it a story; give tears, an advertisement; give the dead's name, a donation-plate." Satyavrat: "if a hungry man's signature is taken for food, is that consent or compulsion? if information is taken from a grieving family for memory, is that a tribute or a deal?"

● The installment on grief

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A consent-form before a name reveals a stomach, not ears.
- Grief becomes a story, tears an ad, the name a donation-plate.
- Consent taken in grief may be compulsion, not consent.

The four crocodiles

Chandrapal's Memorial App · चन्द्रपालक स्मारक-अनुप्रयोग — card 2 of 2

The name-school. The children teach before they forbid: "saying a name and giving a name are two different things"; "the grief-photo must not become grief's property." Mīrā's new oath: "I will speak the dead's name, but not give the key to the dead's home; I will help, but not demand the soul in return."

Out of the water, not the screen. An old woman refuses to upload her drowned son: "I pulled his name out of the water; why drown him again in the screen?" She writes his name on the stump-stone and leaves; after this, many close their mobile pages.

Four in ambush. A vanishing message warns that the donation-code will change and "Rāghav is watching." The grove is cut, but "four crocodiles lie in ambush in its square — government, trust, screen, and signal." Next dawn, first Rāghav's code will be read, then the names.

● *The square besieged*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Saying a name and giving a name are not the same act.
- "I pulled his name out of the water; why drown it in the screen?"
- Four crocodiles besiege the square: state, trust, screen, signal.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 59

Rāghav Signal's New Code

राघव सिग्नलक नव कोड *Rāghav Signalak Nav Koḍ*

"The scriptures written on an erased screen's faint trace are read clearer than any."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The donation-code broken not by speaking, but by listening

The scripture on the erased screen

Rāghav Signal's New Code · राघव सिग्नलक नव कोड — card 1 of 2

The erased word returns. Rāghav believed "a word erased in time leaves no proof." But since the name-watch passed to the children, "the erased word returned with its shadow" — the message vanished, but its mark stayed on the glass, then in the children's eyes, then in the stump's root.

Navya-Nyāya reborn. The children apply all the kinds of proof to the code — perception, inference, word, comparison, presumption ("if a message was erased, something the criminal did not want to survive was there"), non-perception ("a name not found is the testimony of an erased name") — "as if Navya-Nyāya were reborn on the stump's bark."

Privacy is not a cave. Rāghav renamed things — "money 'donation,' commission 'service,' theft 'process,' erasing 'privacy.'" Mīrā: "privacy is not crime's shield; it is the victim's right, not the criminal's cave." Āruṇi: "a donation split from a name is the body's second water-burial."

● The unerased trace

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The erased word returns with its shadow.
- The kinds of proof decode the crime on the stump's bark.
- Privacy is the victim's right, not the criminal's cave.

The collective ear

Rāghav Signal's New Code • राघव सिग्नलक नव कोड — card 2 of 2

Broken by listening. "Here justice is admitted first, the court seen later." Satyavrat: "Rāghav's code runs on words; where listening comes before words, the code breaks — crime's language speaks fast, the victim's late; whoever hears will turn the code into a name." The children answer the closed code with open-breath kabaddī: "let all hear the breath, touch and return, not by lies."

The name at the center. Only a warning is posted publicly, never the crime's method — "when telling the crime's method, do not open the crime's road." Below Gaṅgeśa's "where is the proof?", an old tanner-caste elder steps forward: "if Gaṅgeśa is justice, I too am in justice." The children write his name not at the edge but "at the exact center" — a line that "burned like fire on caste's old scar."

The source can't be removed. A message demands "remove the source of the silence." Satyavrat does not rise; he sets his pen by the children's register. Ananyā understands "the source is not a person, it is a method," and writes: "the source of the silence — the collective ear." "The code is read; now the silence will be heard."

● The unremovable source

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The word-code breaks where listening comes first.
- The tanner's name is placed at the center, not the edge.
- The source of the silence is the collective ear, not one body.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 60

Satyavrat Mehta's Second Silence

सत्यव्रत मेहताक दोसर मौन *Satyavrat Mehtāk Dosar Maun*

"An account written in the language of religion first seizes the ear of silence."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The first silence was crime; the second is the vow of listening

The two silences

Satyavrat Mehta's Second Silence · सत्यव्रत मेहताक दोसर मौन — card 1 of 2

Two silences face to face. Ananyā asks why he stays silent, and "his first and second silence stand face to face." The first was crime — "when he could have spoken but did not, from rank, dignity, procedure, and safe distance." The second is now the vow of listening — "when he can speak, but will not cover the people's voice with his own."

Haste as ego. In his old life he rose at once to cite sections and issue statements; now he sees "often haste too is a form of ego; to answer at once a grief suppressed for years is not justice, but covering it again." "Justice is first the courage to put one's own right to speak in the dock of doubt."

Listener, then lawyer. "Then you are first a listener, later a lawyer?" Satyavrat, smiling after long: "in justice, becoming a lawyer without becoming a listener is dangerous."

● The vow of listening

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The first silence was crime; the second is the vow to listen.
- Haste too can be a form of ego.
- A lawyer who has not first become a listener is dangerous.

The proposal answers before the name

Satyavrat Mehta's Second Silence · सत्यव्रत मेहताक दोसर मौन — card 2 of 2

Sacred words, hidden cuts. Rāghav's code arrives dressed in religious words; held to the sun, "under 'reverence' appears 'share,' under 'aid' a fine thread of 'commission.'" Four papers press the stump like "four crocodiles risen from the water, to chew not bodies, but words."

Respect without justice. Bā: "Gaṅgeśa wrote justice, but society did not do justice on his life; whoever found his caste and marriage inconvenient saved him by making him a dignity-idol — memory-murder in the name of respect." Ananyā writes: "without justice, respect can become murder."

The inverted law. Satyavrat proposes the inversion: "whoever wants to build a memorial must first go to the dead's home; whoever says digital tribute must first sit with the mobile off; whoever wants a trust must say — where is the children's right in it?" The children sign first, with a watch-sign not a name; Satyavrat writes only: "listened."

● The verified proposal

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Fraud wears the most sacred words.
- Respect without justice becomes memory-murder.
- The proposal must answer to the name; the children sign first.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 61

The First Name-Festival

पहिल नाम-उत्सव *Pahil Nām-Utsav*

"In a real festival no drums sound — the name sounds."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A festival with no drums, no stage, no garlands — only names

No drums, the name

The First Name-Festival • पहिल नाम-उत्सव — card 1 of 2

Joy and grief, one soil. The festival comes with no drums, no flags, no stage — only the cut stump, the name-stones, and the watching children. Ananyā: "a name heard again is not only weeping; it becomes present; being present is a festival" — and the village learns "joy and grief are not enemies, but two colors of the same soil."

Present. "Whoever's name wasn't found" is read first, answered by the children together: "present" — unlike the court's "present/absent," here it means "my body may not be, but my absence is here; my memory is here; my injustice is here." The incomplete name "Sar..." is kept incomplete — "completing it erases its real incompleteness."

● The quiet festival

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Joy and grief are two colors of the same soil.
- "Present" means the absence, memory, and injustice are here.
- An incomplete name is kept incomplete, not falsely finished.

Essence first, lineage after

The First Name-Festival • पहिल नाम-उत्सव — card 2 of 2

The order of the reading. Bā: "Gaṅgeśa asked the essence; society asked the lineage — so essence first, lineage after." Caste is neither hidden nor made pride: "if caste becomes a man's insult, mentioning it is a crime; but if it becomes the testimony of that insult, its silence too is a crime."

The silence gets a name. Devika reads "Ujjwal Jhā" and adds "his silence too present"; Mīrā reads her own living name — "my privacy is present." Gop, told "not a list, names — a breath between each," leaves the speed of reading a list "and learns the speed of reading a human."

Silence is not inaction. Kabaddī becomes resistance — "not disappearing while holding the breath, but reaching the name while holding it." When a widow faints reading a name, Satyavrat runs to steady her: "one silent where he should speak is a criminal; one silent to listen is a witness; one who rises to give support is a human."

● The heard wound

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Essence before lineage; caste as testimony, not pride.
- The dead's silence and the living's privacy both get a name.
- Silence to listen is a witness; rising to help is a human.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 62

The Green Point in the Stump

ढूँठमे हरियर बिंदु *Ṭhūṇṭhme Hariyar Bindu*

"The oil is spent, the wick short, yet the flame is stubborn — the stubbornness is not the oil's, but the name's."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A bud sprouts from the cut root — and the market turns its eye on it

The stubborn flame, the green point

The Green Point in the Stump • ठूँठमे हरियर बिंदु — card 1 of 2

The name's stubbornness. The festival's lamps burn past dawn, the flame stubborn "as if the name-watch lodged within it." On the cut root a fine green point rises. Bā: "when sap remains in a cut body, a bud forms; and when a name remains in cut memory, people sprout again."

Proof of many kinds. A teacher explains the dormant bud; the children write that too, for "proof is of many kinds — a seen thing, a heard story, felt pain, and generation-to-generation memory all are proof." The children even play Gaṅgeśa's kinds of proof in the game — "knowledge was alive, not an exam."

The wound carried on. The green point becomes a leaf whose color holds "the black body's memory, the red cloth's mark, the water's blue" — "as if the grove says: new life sprouts not by forgetting the old wound, but by carrying it along."

● The sprouting root

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The flame's stubbornness belongs to the name, not the oil.
- Seen, heard, felt, and remembered — all are proof.
- New life carries the old wound, it does not forget it.

The market eyes the bud

The Green Point in the Stump • टूँठमे हरियर बिंदु — card 2 of 2

Theft by image. Chandrapal's app posts the bud's photo — "the sacred moment of rebirth" — with a donation-button below. Devika: "if the green point is the name's answer, we will not let it become the market's picture." "The first theft of memory was by name; now it begins by image." Mīrā makes "a discipline of the gaze" — permission before showing.

Water, not punishment. Kabaddī becomes the game of saving the bud; whoever's breath breaks is not lost but sits again in the listening-line. Satyavrat writes: "justice's first rule — whoever's breath breaks, give him not punishment, but water."

The next age's warning. District officers arrive with "development" — road, viewing-gallery, ticketing; "first inspection, then participation." Āruṇi: "will a place of testimony have a ticket?" — "protection, or ownership? facility, or surveillance?" A "Heritage-Corridor" paper sticks by the bud: "the first warning of the next age."

● *The second struggle*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- After theft by name comes theft by image.
- Whoever's breath breaks gets water, not punishment.
- "Protection or ownership? Facility or surveillance?"



The Gaṛh Nārikel Heritage-Project

गढ़ नारिकेल विरासत-परियोजना *Gaṛh Nārikel Virāsat-Pariyojanā*

"While the name was shameful, the file hid its face; once the name became heritage, the cars came without shame."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Once the name becomes "heritage," the cars arrive without shame

The cars come without shame

The Garh Nārikel Heritage-Project • गढ़ नारिकेल विरासत-परियोजना — card 1 of 2

Possibility as a second axe. Three days after the bud, government cars come shamelessly; the "empty plot" is suddenly "heritage." A dark-glasses consultant — whose lenses show only his own face — says "immense possibility here," which strikes Āruṇi "like a second axe-blow: possibility means re-measuring what has already happened, to sell it."

Counting, not reading. Officials count the name-stones instead of reading them — "how many stones? how many families? how many visitors?" — for "when number sits on the name, its weight exceeds the stone's." Ananyā: "one you have not read, how will you plan for?"

Whose sound, whose light? A colorful map offers a "Kabaddī-Theater," a "Water-burial View-Gallery," and a sound-and-light show. Devika: "the mother whose voice trembles reading her son's name — which artist will repeat that?" Mīrā: "sensitivity is not a word, it is a watch."

● The heritage-gaze

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "Possibility" means re-measuring the past to sell it.
- Counting the stones is not reading the names.
- Sensitivity is a watch, not a word.

A tender on memory

The Garh Nārikel Heritage-Project • गढ़ नारिकेल विरासत-परियोजना — card 2 of 2

The shared structure. Saumya sees the project-language and caste-language share a structure — "both accept the name, but on conditions; both give the body a place, but as a boundary; both turn revolt into decoration," as Gaṅgeśa's uncomfortable life was made an idol. Bā: "you cut the root first; now you want to sell the shade."

A child, not a symbol. The consultant hails the bud as "the project's symbol — rebirth, revival!" and the photographer lifts his camera; Ananyā blocks it: "this is not a symbol, it is a child; take permission from its mother first." Gop reads the market's language: "'security' hides ownership, 'project' hides tender and commission."

The greed within the light. Būṛhbā, now visible by day: "earlier people came in the dark from fear; now greed comes in the light; you fought the dark, now fight the greed within the light." At midnight a tender-notice is glued to the stump — glue-smell "sweet, sticky, slightly rotten" — and Ananyā writes: "today a tender was placed on memory."

● The sold shade

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- State-project and caste both accept the name only on conditions.
- The bud is a child, not a project symbol.
- First they fought the dark; now the greed within the light.



Tender on Memory

स्मृति पर निविदा *Smṛti par Nividā*

"The moment a tender opens on memory, know that grief too will go up for contract."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- When grief itself goes up for contract

Grief goes to contract

Tender on Memory • स्मृति पर निविदा — card 1 of 2

The smooth renaming. The tender renames everything — the stump is "Site Block-A," the name-watch a "community participation component," grief an "emotional heritage resource," the water-burial a "water-based interpretive corridor." The language "slips in the fingers like soap." A child asks: "will there be bids on the name?" — and the question shames everyone.

Collection or trespass. Mīrā, on the clause gathering oral, visual, and family material: "this is not collection, it is trespass; the woman who reads her dead's name in a whisper — by what right is her whisper recorded?" The children make proof a game-rule: asked the proof of "tourism-oriented development," they answer "profit is not proof."

Not a performance sound. The tender proposes a soundtrack mixing ghost-kabaddī breath, court-hammer, and a mobile-notification. Ujjwal's mother, reading it: "my son's last ring will not become a performance sound."

● *The contracted grief*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Renaming turns the stump into "Site Block-A."
- Gathering testimony without consent is trespass.
- Profit is not proof.

The market-map

Tender on Memory • स्मृति पर निविदा — card 2 of 2

Zero for the victim. Saumya reads the cost-sheet: rehabilitation, privacy-protection, and name-finding lines all zero; "brand identity" the highest. "This is not memory, it is a market-map." Gop counts the words: "'memory' appears fifty-four times, 'name' twice, 'victim' once" — "a word unwritten can drive the whole paper, like the crocodile inside the water."

Below justice. Baṭuknāth offers a legal trust — "representation," "a child-advisory committee can form" — and insists "law is above sentiment." Bā: "law is not above sentiment; it is below justice; when law abandons justice, then it becomes a crocodile."

The old signature. The notice's corner curls to show a hidden imprint — "draft prepared by International Cultural Revival Consultant." Gop recognizes the mark from the bridge's foreign-advisor file; an old shadow rises: Edward Broom. Ananyā writes: "a tender came on memory; the bidder still hides his name."

● The hidden bidder

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The cost-sheet zeroes the victim and maximizes the brand.
- Law abandoning justice becomes a crocodile.
- The bidder behind the tender hides his name — Broom.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 65

Broom's Return

ब्रूमक पुनरागमन *Broomak Punarāgaman*

"The smell of greed comes not from new ink, but from the old bridge's water."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The rebranded crocodile returns to sell the drowned body a ticket

The name new, the owner old

Broom's Return • ब्रूमक पुनरागमन — card 1 of 2

Rebranded greed. As the tender opens, an old smell rises — "not of new ink, but of the greed that first descended on the dead laborer's body by the bridge-pier." Broom's company is rebranded in Devanagari — "New-Health Foundation" — and Gop whispers: "the name is new, the owner old."

The sanitized words. Broom's letter calls the pain "an opportunity for collective healing"; the water-burial becomes "water-memory section," the crocodile an "aquatic-life symbol," the dead laborer a "labor-story gallery." Ira: "the one who drowned the body will now sell tickets on the drowned body."

Imitation makes no memory. The plan shows a glass dome over the stump and a fake red-eyed crocodile, the ghost-kabaddī turned into a "night light-show." The children feel their breath freeze on the glass and understand: "to kill a game, you need not stop it; making its imitation is enough." A singed corner reads: "imitation makes no memory."

● The old owner

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- New name, old owner; rebranding hides the same greed.
- Sanitized words turn the drowned into a gallery exhibit.
- Killing a game by imitation, not prohibition.

A second death

Broom's Return • ब्रूमक पुनरागमन — card 2 of 2

Permission is the first brick. Broom offers to clear "the fog of misunderstanding" about his first project; Āruṇi: "the body left in the water, the altered safety-register — was that a misunderstanding?" Satyavrat: "without permission, no memory goes public." Mīrā: "the victim's home's permission is its first brick; no permission, nothing."

The same black river. Gop lays out the fund's branches — one linked to the pandemic breath-price trade, one to the bridge's old safety-consultant, one to digital memory-apps: "name new, form new, but the river of money the same black." Sarayu's widow: "keeping his name in a glass house and selling tickets will be a second death."

Alive, not archived. A boy pours his daily pot of water on the bud; warned it may become "an officially protected relic," he answers: "you make it official; I will keep it alive." A research-team's message arrives, and Ananyā readies the first question: "did you come to listen, or to write?"

● The living bud

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Consent from the victim's home is the memorial's first brick.
- New names, same black river of money.
- A living thing archived in glass is a second death.



The Harvard Research-Team

हार्वर्डक शोध-दल *Hārvarḍak Śodh-dal*

"The instrument that comes hanging round the neck begins to measure before the eye does."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A study-team arrives to extract — and is taught to listen first

First the name, guidance later

The Harvard Research-Team · हार्वर्डक शोध-दल — card 1 of 2

Time runs on pain, not schedule. The team arrives with a timetable, but here "time runs not on register-pages, but on the breath of pain." Asked to guide them on "context, chronology, caste-structure," Ira answers: "first the name; guidance later." When the researcher starts writing, Ananyā stops his hand: "when a name is heard, it is not written; first say 'present.'"

The text or the body. A scholar praises the Tattvacintāmaṇi; Bā turns it back: "you read the text; did you read the story of Gaṅgeśa's body — his caste's inconvenience, his marriage's inconvenience, society's fear?" Ananyā: "the source breathes here; much truth is killed after being written, and much survives without ever being written."

● The listening study

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Time here runs on the breath of pain, not a schedule.
- A heard name is answered "present" before it is written.
- Reading the text is not reading the life it silenced.

The gaze in the dock

The Harvard Research-Team · हार्वर्डक शोध-दल — card 2 of 2

A second violence. Mīrā: "caste is not only a concept; it is the bar at the door, the insult at the well, the wedding-night's fear, the distance of the food-plate. If you write this, write saving people's faces; if you loot the face, it will not be research, but a second violence." The filmmaker lowers his instrument.

Walk it on foot. Gop refuses a photo of the memory-map: "first walk this line on foot." They walk to a widow's home through mud; Ira: "if academic distance stays clear of the mud, it will not give justice." The widow: "do not write my face; write my husband's name — the water took his body, the paper called him absent; you write: he is present."

Bow, do not capture. The camera stays lowered, the notebook open, and the team learns "some scenes are meant not for capture, but for bowing before." Wiping his lens, the filmmaker sees not his own face but "a crocodile's eye" — "the gaze itself has come into the dock."

● The examined gaze

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Looting a face is a second violence, not research.
- Justice needs the mud; academic distance alone cannot give it.
- Some scenes are for bowing before, not capturing.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 67

Mīrā and the Right of the Gaze

मीरा आ दृष्टिक अधिकार *Mīrā ā Dṛṣṭik Adhikār*

"The gaze too is a right — and whoever is seen, their permission is the first paper."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Whoever is seen — their permission is the first paper

The right of the gaze

Mīrā and the Right of the Gaze · मीरा आ दृष्टिक अधिकार — card 1 of 2

The impatience of collection. The team returns with cameras and "a strange impatience — not of knowledge, but of collection." Ira: "before pain moves, it asks — where do I wish to go? to the world, or to my own home?" Mīrā, who was once treated as a "mystery" rather than a wronged person, now sets the terms.

Not a scene, a relationship. A researcher offers to blur the face; Mīrā: "blurring is not permission; blurring the face does not blur the body's insult; one who weeps is not a scene — one who weeps is a relationship." Ananyā writes: "the one who is seen also has eyes."

Twenty minutes of silence. Mīrā seats them by the "whoever's name wasn't found" stone: "do not photograph it; sit by it; write nothing for twenty minutes; then ask whether it wishes to show itself." In that silence each researcher hears their own breath — "as if the body itself has become the record."

● The seen one's right

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Collection is not knowledge; ask where the pain wishes to go.
- Blurring is not consent; a weeper is a relationship, not a scene.
- The one who is seen also has eyes.

The gaze-watch

Mirā and the Right of the Gaze · मीरा आ दृष्टिक अधिकार — card 2 of 2

The crack in the caste-cage. A tanner elder, Jagadīsh Rām, asks whether Gaṅgeśa's scripture also holds "my caste's insult." Ananyā vows to place "his book in the map, but also his marriage's story"; the elder, weeping, sits "within the scripture, not outside" and writes: "my gaze too is proof." The children record "the first crack in the caste-cage."

The five-point charter. By consent a small charter is written: no face without permission; no weeping-scene against the weeper's wish; no memory of insult without dignity; no caste-grief made a nameless "social example"; and lasting responsibility for what is seen. The children call it "the gaze-watch": "permission before seeing, silence before hearing, relationship before writing."

In her own words. Martha is permitted only Mirā's wrist-thread — "but its story I will write in my words, not yours." A researcher's secret shot goes dark, showing: "you saw — but were you seen?" A leaflet arrives for a tribute photo-collection; Ananyā names it "the first door of the theft of the name."

● The charter of seeing

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Placing the life beside the scripture cracks the caste-cage.
- Permission before seeing, silence before hearing, relationship before writing.
- The seen one keeps the right to tell the story in her own words.



Devika vs. the Tribute-App

देविका बनाम श्रद्धांजलि-अनुप्रयोग *Devikā banām Śraddhāñjali-Anuprayog*

"The one who presses a button on a dead person's name is frisking the pocket of the living."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A one-touch tribute that frisks the pocket of the living

A census of grief

Devika vs. the Tribute-App · देविका बनाम श्रद्धांजलि-अनुप्रयोग — card 1 of 2

Reverence in one touch. The app promises "reverence in one touch" — but Devika asks, "if reverence happens in one touch, where go the length of grief, the tremor of calling the name, and the testimony of silence?" Its form demands bank-route, caste, father's name, a woman's marriage-name, a child's age: "this is not a tribute, it is a census of grief."

The nameless left out. She tests it with the "whoever's name wasn't found" stone; the screen rejects "nameless" and "unknown laborer drowned in water" — "please choose a category." The incomplete name, the out-of-caste name, the unrecorded body — none can enter. A child: "removing the absent in the name of proof is not justice, it is fraud."

● *The sorted grief*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- One-touch reverence erases the length and silence of grief.
- A form demanding bank and caste is a census, not a tribute.
- Excluding the nameless "for proof" is fraud, not justice.

The dead's second death

Devika vs. the Tribute-App · देविका बनाम श्रद्धांजलि-अनुप्रयोग — card 2 of 2

Loot, not cost. Chandrapal calls the exclusion "purification — a faulty name will be misused." Devika: "you fear the incomplete name because it does not sell; stealing a stone-written name onto a screen, then demanding 'proof' from the family, then opening a donation-route — this is not cost; this is the dead's second death."

The name will not be sold. Finding Ujjwal's name tagged "emotional reach: high," Devika neither photographs it nor reads out the illicit list — "one does not steal to stop another's theft." His mother, sent an auto-notice, answers: "do not drown my son in the screen again." The village lays the phones face-down and vows together: "the name will not be sold."

The scraped stones. Overnight the notices erase and alter themselves, and three name-stones are found scraped, "as if someone worked them with a point in the night," the scraped spot still warm. Ananyā writes: "from today the theft of the name has begun" — "a war not of slogans, but of saving the letters of the name."

● The name defended

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Commodifying a stolen name is the dead's second death.
- One does not steal to stop another's theft.
- The fight is to save the very letters of the name.



The Theft of the Name

नामक चोरी *Nāmak Corī*

"The theft caught on the screen is only the theft's white page."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The deeper theft — erasing the name from memory itself

The white page of theft

The Theft of the Name • नामक चोरी — card 1 of 2

The quiet erasure. "The theft caught on the screen is only the white page; the real theft quietly removes the name from memory, so the next generation will not even ask whose body drowned." A name-stone is found smoothed — "the stone not gone, the thread not gone, the place not gone; only the name gone."

Believing nothing was written. Bā: "the thief is not the one who steals the stone; the thief is the one who makes people believe nothing was written on the stone at all." The app marks names "unverified," and even Gop's sealed thumbprint-copies fade in the light — "a strike on the very body of the proof."

● *The erased letter*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The visible theft is only the white page of a deeper one.
- The true thief makes people doubt anything was ever written.
- Marking a name "unverified" strikes the body of proof.

The water keeps the name

The Theft of the Name • नामक चोरी — card 2 of 2

Proof beyond letters. A sister shows her rowing-father's hand: "the name erased? but see this hand." Mīrā learns "the body's gait, the surviving cloth, the practice of memory are proof too" — though "society first calls what it wishes to suppress 'unverified.'" Devika's question stalls the trust: "the ownership of the name — whose?"

The curtain of "public interest." Baṭuknāth answers "in the public interest"; Mīrā: "you know well how often 'public interest' has been the paper-curtain over a woman's body, a Dalit's name, a laborer's death." Ananyā writes: "what is called absent — its absence too can be proof, if someone made that absence."

Down into the water. The seven erased names get seven days of reading, each with its whole "tree of relationship." Beneath Sarayu's stone the wet clay holds a pond-shaped map, and Būṛhbā's voice: "when a name is erased, the water keeps it." Ananyā writes: "tomorrow the pond will be heard."

● *The kept name*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Gait, cloth, and memory are proof beyond the letters.
- "Public interest" is often the curtain over the marginalized.
- A manufactured absence is itself evidence of the crime.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 70

The Paniḍubbī's Testimony

पनिडुब्बीक गवाही *Paniḍubbīk Gavāhī*

"What is not visible from above stays tangled in the paniḍubbī's hair."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The drowned-woman spirit speaks: a drowned name cannot be stolen

The pond is heard

The Paniḍubbī's Testimony • पणिडुब्बीक गवाही — card 1 of 2

The stolen sound. The letters remain, but a name clear yesterday now "sticks on the tongue" — "the thief stole the name's sound." Gop: "when there is a conspiracy against a name, proof seeks water." The testimony moves from the stump to the pond, where a paniḍubbī dwells.

Read with the ears. As a blurred name is read, a bubble rises holding the full name; a rotten leaf carries the name's sound in its veins. Bā: "not all proof is read with the eyes; some is read with the ears." Satyavrat: "if society's written letters became false, then nature's reflection too can become proof."

● *The water's copy*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Stealing a name's sound leaves the letters but blurs the person.
- Some proof is read with the ears, not the eyes.
- When the record is falsified, nature's reflection can testify.

A name drowned can't be stolen

The Paniḍubbī's Testimony • पनिडुब्बीक गवाही — card 2 of 2

The spirit speaks. From the pond's dark navel a voice — "not wholly woman, man, child, or old" — declares: "a name drowned in water, its reflection cannot be stolen." Asked of the never-written name: "it bears more weight than all written names; place its stone first." The privacy-rule becomes the river's rule.

The mud keeps the account. When Chandrapal's fake donation-page opens by itself, Gop tilts it to the water and the lie breaks — "accounts flee like black fish." The paniḍubbī: "one who profits from a name — the water does not keep his account; the mud keeps it." Satyavrat sets his pen on the bank: the law must "walk behind memory."

Save the game too. The spirit's last word: "do not only save the name, save its game too; a name that leaves the game becomes a monument; a name that plays kabaddī stays a breath." By dawn a poster appears — a "Ghost-Kabaddī Festival" — as the memory-market sharpens its claws again.

● *The unstealable reflection*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A name drowned in water cannot have its reflection stolen.
- The law must walk behind memory, not sit atop it.
- A name that leaves the game becomes a monument.



The Fake-Ghost Procession

नकली भूतक जुलूस *Naklī Bhūtak Julūs*

"In a fake-ghost procession the smoke comes on hire, and the real grove laughs."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Hired smoke sells fear — until the lie collapses into testimony

The smoke comes on hire

The Fake-Ghost Procession • नकली भूतक जुलूस — card 1 of 2

Wound as decoration. A ticketed "Night-Experience" markets "a confluence of fear, heritage, and entertainment." The tear-soaked root is lit blue as a backdrop; Devika: "what we call a wound, they call decoration." Mīrā: "making the atmosphere of the drowned and silenced without their name is a new way of stealing."

Word, not breath. The fake kabaddī is hollow — "word, not breath; shouting, not calling; smoke, not the water's fragrance; lime, not the tremor between death and release." The children record the signs: "breath broke," "no name," "the earth did not answer."

● *The hired fear*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The market calls the wound "decoration."
- Atmosphere built on the dead without their name is theft.
- The counterfeit has word without breath, shout without call.

The lie turns to testimony

The Fake-Ghost Procession • नकली भूतक जुलूस — card 2 of 2

The truth from within the lie. A hired performer's foot lands on the hot root, and instead of his script he speaks his own dead grandfather's name — a miner lost in a distant district. "From within the lie, an unknown truth emerged." The acting collapses into testimony — the vanished pension-name, the body held for a bill — and a masked boy's scare becomes "present."

The crowd becomes a community. "A ghost is not one who frightens; a ghost is one who returns because his name was not found." Mīrā: "in what account is the tax on selling the dead's fear deposited?" The organizer sees "the crowd has become not customers, but a community," and the money is returned.

The grove laughs. The performers stay to "learn not acting, but the watch." At midnight a faint sound rises from the stump — "a little crooked, a little affectionate, a little sarcastic." Bā: "when memory starts to be sold and is saved again, the grove laughs."

● *The grove's laugh*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The truth broke through the very lie hired to bury it.
- A ghost returns because its name was not found.
- The grove laughs when sold memory is saved again.



The Channā Grove's Laugh

चन्ना गाछीक हँसी *Cannā Gāchik Hāsī*

"The stump's laugh is not hollow — it is the voice of the surviving root."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The stump's laugh is refusal — and every market method fails against it

The grove answered

The Channā Grove's Laugh · चन्ना गाछीक हँसी — card 1 of 2

A laugh, not a hollow. The laugh spreads to the name-stones as fine lines; touching a new dot, Ananyā finds it "not hot, but alive." "The grove did not laugh, the grove answered," and Bā: "often the answer comes not in weeping but in laughter; when pain begins to be sold, memory mocks."

The new proof. Asked the laugh's proof, a usually-quiet child answers: "when grief refuses to be sold, the sound that rises at that moment — that is the proof of justice." No scripture holds this, yet around the stump it is accepted.

Every method fails. The app records only emptiness — in which each listener hears the name of his own crime. Rāghav's "narrative-control" auto-rewrites itself to "narrative-resistance," and Broom hears the laugh "hollowing out" his own applause.

● The mocking memory

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- When pain begins to be sold, memory mocks.
- The proof of justice is the sound of grief refusing to be sold.
- The recorded emptiness returns each listener his own crime.

The laugh has no owner

The Channā Grove's Laugh • चन्ना गाछीक हँसी — card 2 of 2

Refusal, not entertainment. Mīrā posts: "the laugh has no owner; the dead's pain, the living's testimony, and memory's sound — no one can sell." "If selling the image of weeping is a crime, selling the meaning of laughter is too; this laugh is not entertainment, it is refusal."

News or exam. The children teach the journalists: "not a main story, but many names; you make one 'main,' so all the rest get cut." They learn "Gaṛh Nārikel is not news, but an exam" — and "an empty notebook is now not shame, but perhaps a beginning."

An ear before a leaf. The green line seems to grow "not toward the sky, but toward the people's ear — before becoming a leaf, it is becoming an ear." And Baṭuknāth, sleepless, sees the stump grow in his own chest, opening into a dream-court: "perception? — greed; word? — justice; truth? — laughter."

● The unowned refusal

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The laugh cannot be sold; it is refusal, not entertainment.
- Making one story "main" cuts all the other names.
- The new growth becomes an ear before it becomes a leaf.



Baṭuknāth's Dream-Court

बटुकनाथक स्वप्न-दरबार *Baṭuknāthak Svapna-darbār*

"The one he mocked all his life sets up that very court in his dream and sits in it."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The mocked court convenes inside the man who mocked it

The chair becomes a root

Baṭuknāth's Dream-Court • बटुकनाथक स्वप्न-दरबार — card 1 of 2

The draft turns to leaves. Writing "trust," the ink spreads and the page's clauses become leaves "fine as the Tattvacintāmaṇi's pages," each bearing one question: "make a trust, know justice?" In the dream his high chair becomes a root, his certificates fall as leaves, and Gaṅgeśa presides.

Proof in the dust. Gaṅgeśa lifts a speck of dust: "proof is in this dust too, if the eye is not veiled by lineage." Beside him stands his tanner-caste wife, whose hand he will not release. "If dignity strangles truth, it is not dignity — it is the sacred-thread of fear."

The honor-killing of truth. Editor-shadows move to cut Gaṅgeśa's inconvenient life — the marriage, the caste-blow — keeping the idol, suppressing the revolt. The dream's judge: "in this novel's language, this is honor-killing — not of the body, but of the life-truth." The idol survives; the man is cut.

● The dream-tribunal

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "Make a trust, know justice?" — the draft turns to leaves.
- Dignity that strangles truth is the sacred-thread of fear.
- Sanitizing an inconvenient life is honor-killing of the truth.

Step down from the throne

Baṭuknāth's Dream-Court • बटुकनाथक स्वप्न-दरबार — card 2 of 2

One charge. The single charge stands: "making justice a profession and turning away from justice." His defense-words — process, right, representation — each become a dry leaf and fall. The court's floor opens on date-upon-date, the widow's sold jewelry, the old mother's wait: "this is perception; what is your inference?"

The wall pulled down. He flees to the caste-wall, but the tanner-woman pulls out a bamboo and it scatters: "a justice that fears the touch of the body is not justice, it is bathed hypocrisy." He sees his childhood's separate pot at the well — where his advocacy truly began.

Only "Baṭuk" remains. "Step down from your lineage's throne": his titles shed one by one until only "Baṭuk," a frightened child, remains, weeping. He wakes to find the draft self-rewritten — "not the first servant, but the last listener"; "memory not for sale" — and the laugh passes on to Chandrapal's screen.

● The shed titles

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The charge: making justice a profession and betraying it.
- A justice that fears the body's touch is bathed hypocrisy.
- Stripped of every title, only a frightened child remains.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 74

Chandrapal's First Confession

चन्द्रपालक पहिल स्वीकार *Candrapālak Pahil Svikār*

"The first confession always happens alone — the crowd claps only later."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The first confession happens alone — and only opens the door

The many-eyed mirror

Chandrapal's First Confession · चन्द्रपालक पहिल स्वीकार — card 1 of 2

The crowd that blurs the face. Chandrapal fled the name all his life — people were "earning per person, extraction per fear"; "calling it a crowd blurs the crime's face." But in Gaṛh Nārikel each name-stone watches him, and every line of his app becomes a name: Ujjwal, Munna, Sarayu, "whoever's name wasn't found."

Who tied the rope? His lifelong shield — "I killed no one" — bursts open; a voice: "if you did not touch them, who tied the rope of fear?" In the mirror his face wears the eyes of all he "ate" — the widow's, the laborer's, the youth's — "the man-eater's first fear," that all he consumed have left their eyes in his body.

● The watching names

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Calling people a "crowd" blurs the crime's face.
- Not touching them is no defense: who tied the rope of fear?
- The consumed leave their eyes in the consumer.

The birth-name

Chandrapal's First Confession · चन्द्रपालक पहिल स्वीकार — card 2 of 2

Chandu. He comes to the stump in an old car; the village's patient silence — "the field-seed's patience," not the court-date's indifference — terrifies him most. Ananyā: "the birth-name, or the business-name?" He says "Chandu" for the first time: "the criminal's expensive name breaks back to his childhood's weak name."

Weeping is not proof. Mīrā: "weeping is not proof; speak the truth with the name." He confesses partly: "I made fear a product; I opened a donation-route in the dead's name; I did not personally hate anyone — perhaps that made the biggest crime; had I hated, I would have seen the face."

Only the door's latch. Devika: "an account is not equal to a name, but without the account the next fight stays incomplete" — confession is "justice's beginning, not its end." When he tries to warn Rāghav, a leaf-script surfaces: "where a name is heard, the code does not reach." The next turn is Rāghav's.

● The opened door

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The expensive name breaks back to the childhood name.
- Not seeing the face — indifference — was the deepest crime.
- Confession is the door's latch, not the end of the road.



Rāghav Signal Without a Network

राघव सिग्नलक बिना नेटवर्क *Rāghav Signalak Binā Neṭvark*

"Though all the nets were there, the one who became alone understood — the network is not of wires, but of trust."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The fear-broker's vanishing craft turns against him

Full bars, zero reach

Rāghav Signal Without a Network • राघव सिग्नलक बिना नेटवर्क — card 1 of 2

The greatest lack. Rāghav, who has "everything except reach," feels for the first time "the world's greatest lack is not money or cunning, but the network." Four bars, data running, yet nothing arrives — "the phone says 'sent,' his mind says 'not delivered.'" His vanishing craft turns on him: "messages do not vanish; messages are not even born."

Signs versus names. He grasps the real risk of the grove: "people are leaving the language of signs and returning to the language of names — the crime-net runs on signs, society on names." Channā grove "is not attacking his profession; it is attacking the language of his existence."

● *The severed signal*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The greatest lack is reach, not money or cunning.
- The vanishing craft turns on its maker.
- The crime-net runs on signs; society runs on names.

The network of trust

Rāghav Signal Without a Network · राघव सिग्नलक बिना नेटवर्क — card 2 of 2

The names choose. Names sprout as leaves on his black screen; a voice: "before sending a message you would choose the recipient; now the names will choose the recipient themselves." In his private ledger, "percentage" rewrites itself to "pledged" — "the share of money becomes the weight of a vow."

Language testifies. He types "this is improper intrusion"; the phone answers: "the intrusion was the one you made in the home of the name." Būṛhbā: "the network breaks where the lie seeks a path; truth needs no network, but relationship."

The first name spoken. A "network of memory" map joins the grove, the river, and his city-room in one line, lighting his most-guarded name — Lau Kin-hang. Forced to speak it aloud, "his room lightened but his body grew heavy; speaking a name was the first fearsome step toward liberation."

● The relational net

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The names now choose their own recipient.
- Truth needs no network, only relationship.
- Speaking a name is the first fearsome step toward liberation.



Lau Kin-hang's India-Journey

लाउ किन-हंगक भारत-यात्रा *Lāu Kin-hangak Bhārat-yātrā*

"Even one who comes across the sea disembarks at the very ghat where the water of his name stands."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The farthest link crosses the sea toward the water of his name

The stubborn black stain

Lau Kin-hang's India-Journey · लाउ किन-हंगक भारत-यात्रा — card 1 of 2

Routes, not faces. To Lau, the global kingpin, "the world is routes, humans numbers, countries opportunities." But Gaṛh Nārikel appears in his map "not as a profitable point, but a stubborn black stain," because "in that village the names have learned the method of staying alive."

In what water is your name? A dream-river of crocodiles chews not bodies but "contracts, secret appendices, undisclosed-account pages"; one asks: "in what water is your name written?" Even "Gaṅgeśa" surfaces in his risk-folder — "a philosophical symbol has come into the risk-table."

● The unpurchasable village

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- To the kingpin, people are numbers and countries are routes.
- The village is a stain because its names stay alive.
- "In what water is your name written?"

The door of the hearing within

Lau Kin-hang's India-Journey · लाउ किन-हंगक भारत-यात्रा — card 2 of 2

The name's second life. An elder on the plane: "there the dead's names live"; and "if the server shuts down, and paper burns — but if the children have heard, the name's second life begins." Gaṅgeśa's dream-question: "the one who has no name — how will you count their loss? counting without the name is blind."

Memory in water-lines. Through the clouds, India appears not as a market but "a vast memory written in water-lines" — a country that survives its defeats "because here a name is never fully destroyed; it returns as folk-tale, caste, resistance, song, or justice."

The crocodile in the glass. In the airport glass a crocodile watches him — "have you come with a name, or a nameless profit?" He understands Gaṛh Nārikel is "not his destination, but the door of the hearing within him," and tells his interpreter: "the more I delay, the crocodile will not blink."

● The summoned witness

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Heard by the children, a name begins its second life.
- India survives because its names are never fully destroyed.
- The village is the door of the hearing within him.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 77

Crocodile at the Airport

हवाई अड्डापर गोहि *Havāī Aḍḍāpar Gohi*

"In the airport glass the city's light is sold, but the crocodile's eye is shown for free."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The reflection becomes a witness the money cannot buy

The crocodile in the glass

Crocodile at the Airport • हवाई अड्डापर गोहि — card 1 of 2

A name in the smell. The first breath of Indian air — spice, diesel, damp earth — cuts the airport's cold; Lau calls it "local inconvenience," but his mind answers: "in this smell there is a name." At the face-scanner a crocodile's eye surfaces in place of his face — "still, ancient, illiterate but all-seeing."

Reflection as witness. His assistant: "the machine is fine; here sometimes the reflection shows more." In Channā grove's world "reflection too can become a witness." A "Safe Life Beyond Earth" hoarding draws the same eye — "whoever wants to chew my body and flee will need a name even on the nameless planet."

● *The all-seeing eye*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The system reads money; it cannot buy the reflection.
- In the grove's world, the reflection itself testifies.
- Even the escape to a nameless planet will need a name.

A pursuing testimony

Crocodile at the Airport • हवाई अड्डापर गोहि — card 2 of 2

The real name. In a dream the stump's children replace the immigration officers; asked his name, he says "Lau Kin-hang"; the children: "that is the market-name; the real name?" A crocodile chews his profit-ledger, and "from each page rises the voice of a laborer, a defrauded youth, a nameless woman."

Not in the record. A nameless cleaner — absent from every list and camera — tells him "think of a name while drinking water, and the water stays clean." Lau's first clear fear: "here even nameless people are visible, but not in the record; and what is not in the record can also speak a sentence." A driver: "all roads finally go there."

The summons. Illusions repeat the same story until "does it not become the proof of inference?" A message arrives — "if you would hear the name, come" — that will not delete. He understands "this is not an invitation, but a pursuing testimony," and goes to meet "a person who will read only the name": Satyavrat, "carrying only the weight of a name."

● *The inescapable reflection*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The market-name is not the real name.
- What is not in the record can still speak a sentence.
- The summons is a pursuing testimony, not an invitation.



Satyavrat and Lau's Silent Dialogue

सत्यव्रत आ लाउक मौन-संवाद *Satyavrat ā Lāuk Maun-saṁvād*

"When two people's silence sticks on the same question, that too is a dialogue."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The listener meets the financier — count names, not profit

Count names, not profit

Satyavrat and Lau's Silent Dialogue • सत्यव्रत आ लाउक मौन-संवाद — card 1 of 2

The place of the name. Satyavrat calls Lau not to a boardroom but to the cut stump: "come to the place of the name; if you fear the name, there is no purpose in the meeting." A rank-less man frightens Lau most — "rank can be bought, but the debt of listening cannot."

A snatched existence. Seeing the name-stones, Lau grasps "the difference between benami property and a nameless dead is heaven-and-earth — the first a hidden crime, the second a snatched existence." Satyavrat: "you counted profit; count names once" — and the number breaks, "counting flows away like lime in water."

● The uncountable name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Meet at the place of the name, or not at all.
- A nameless dead is a snatched existence, not a hidden asset.
- Profit can be counted; each name breaks the count.

A name is weight

Satyavrat and Lau's Silent Dialogue • सत्यव्रत आ लाउक मौन-संवाद — card 2 of 2

Not metal, but weight. Made to mark a stone as Ananyā writes "Lau Kin-hang" beside it, the stone grows heavy in his palm: "a name is not metal, but weight." Satyavrat: "this is not forgiveness now; only presence — for only when the criminal is present is the victim's testimony fully heard."

Fleeing is impossible. The village's slowness is his harshest punishment — "first day listening, then the name, then the document." At night, hearing "present" without translation, he understands its meaning at last: "present means fleeing is impossible."

The donation's name. He offers to donate; Satyavrat cuts in: "donation first covers the account of the crime; here, before donation the document, before the document the name, before the name the listening." Broom's gold-edged deed arrives, and Ananyā sets an empty stone beside Lau's: "now the donation's name will be asked."

● The weighed name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The written name grows heavy before one's own crime.
- Presence, not forgiveness — the criminal must be there to be heard.
- Before donation the document; before the name, the listening.



Broom's Donation-Deed

ब्रूमक दान-पत्र *Broomak Dān-patra*

"The smoother the donation-deed, the older the contract beneath its seal."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The smoother the deed, the older the contract beneath its seal

Compassion that demands a right

Broom's Donation-Deed • ब्रूमक दान-पत्र — card 1 of 2

A first claim on the story. Broom's rebranded "World-Memory Restoration Fund" sends a gold-edged "compassionate grant" — "compassion shines like gold, but its shine holds no water-smell." Its fine print claims "primary usage-rights over the story": Gop reads it as "not a donation, but a first claim — today the name, tomorrow the image, then a right even over the tears."

Where is the signature? Ananyā: "who is called the owner of the name here? where is the community's signature?" Āruṇi: "one who calls the past a separate contract buys not a donation, but release from memory." Bā smells the paper: "no weeping-smell — only the smell of a shut room."

● The rights-buying gift

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A grant claiming the story is a first claim, not a gift.
- Community ownership without the community's signature is empty.
- Calling the past "a separate contract" buys release from memory.

The mask washed off

Broom's Donation-Deed • ब्रूमक दान-पत्र — card 2 of 2

The drops obey no command. Raindrops blur the seal; the envoy shouts "careful, this is the original document!" — but "the drops obey no command." Beneath the washed shine, old blue-paper letters surface: the bridge-contract's abandoned clauses — worker-housing, safety, compensation. "Not the paper — the skin of sin got wet."

Perception over inference. This is the earth's own perception: "when a drop falls on the truth, the need for inference lessens." Satyavrat writes only: "when a donation covers the record of a crime, it is not a donation, but a delayed defense."

The stump inside the home. Baṭuknāth hears that paper is no longer invincible in the grove. That night his son reads the trust-draft and asks: "father, is this to save justice, or the profession?" — and Baṭuknāth sees "the Channā stump growing inside his own home too."

● The wet original

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Water strips the mask; the abandoned contract surfaces.
- A drop on the truth reduces the need for inference.
- The stump of conscience grows even inside the home.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 80

Hariharan's Offspring

हरिहरनक संतान *Hariharanak Santān*

"A child's single question — did you save justice or the profession? — shakes every certificate on the veranda."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The delay-lawyer's own daughter becomes his tribunal

Justice or the profession?

Hariharan's Offspring • हरिहरनक संतान — card 1 of 2

The two-piece reflection. His daughter Tāriṇī sets the Tattvacintāmaṇi booklet before him: "did you honor Gaṅgeśa, or shut his question?" In the glass his face shows in two pieces — the bar-council chairman, and the lawyer who wove "an invisible armor around the criminal's body with dates, stays, and jurisdiction."

A crocodile in a shell. "Did you save justice or the profession — or a crocodile in the profession's shell? The children say: first listen, then refute; you all wrote the refutation first and put listening later." She names the honor-killing of memory: sanitizing an inconvenient life "is not only of the body, but of memory."

● The daughter's charge

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Honoring the mind while shutting its question is betrayal.
- Procedure became a shell for the crocodile.
- Writing the refutation first is refusing to listen.

The heir's refusal

Hariharan's Offspring · हरिहरनक संतान — card 2 of 2

The mirrors of inheritance. The criminals' children appear as "mirrors of inheritance," each asking: "what will you leave me — money? fear? a lie? a surname? or a truth that lets me love you, but not carry your crime?" "The deepest punishment of crime is not jail, but the heir's refusal."

Presence, not chairmanship. Tāriṇī: "I am your offspring, but I will not be the heir of your silence; if you wish to advise, first come and hear the names — presence, not chairmanship." The date, once his weapon, becomes his atonement's time.

A question, not a garland. He reduces his own authority on paper — striking "postponed," writing "the proposal be heard before the folk-watch." Tāriṇī, leaving, removes the certificate-garland: "Gaṅgeśa needs not a garland but a question; justice needs not a rank but listening."

● The refused inheritance

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The heir may love the parent but refuse the crime.
- The deepest punishment is the heir's refusal, not jail.
- Justice needs listening, not a rank; a question, not a garland.



Batra's Incomplete Name

बत्राक अधूरा नाम *Batrāk Adhūrā Nām*

"One who lives on half a name is frightened of a full signature."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- He cannot write his own name — his hand writes only profit

The name that writes profit

Batra's Incomplete Name • बत्राक अधूरा नाम — card 1 of 2

The hand that writes percentage. Before a blank paper reading only "write your name," Chandrapal's hand goes mute. Trying "Chandrapal Batra," the paper writes "ten percent"; "C. Batra" becomes "commission" — "as if a scribe within writes only profit-share where a name should be."

Nameless from within. He realizes his real name was snatched years ago — "not by another, but by himself, turned into measure, deal, code, and commission." "The more a man writes a profit-sign for his name, the more nameless he becomes within." His mother had said: "there is light kept in a name, son."

● The lost name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The hand trained on profit can no longer write a name.
- He snatched his own name, turning it into a percentage.
- Earning namelessly, a man becomes nameless within.

Chandu, and the crocodile's jaw

Batra's Incomplete Name • बत्राक अधूरा नाम — card 2 of 2

Half a letter, half a jaw. He tries "Chandu" — his mother's name for him, "very small, very warm, very unsafe" — but at half a "च" his arm goes heavy, "as if a crocodile held it in its teeth," the stroke bending into "half a letter, half a jaw." He weeps — "a man who cannot find the body of the child's name left within him."

Proof, not pardon. The grove stays silent — "the grove does not forgive quickly." Bā explains why even a criminal's name is recorded: "crime is written not for pardon, but for proof; the incompleteness of one who lost his own name is also testimony." Satyavrat: "a nameless crime returns."

The inner game begins. The page holds only "च..." and, unwittingly, "percentage" — "his life's summary: the moon's incomplete letter, and behind it the full word of profit." In the glass he sees a crocodile's eye, and Ananyā names what comes: "next time the inner elephant-crocodile will play."

● The half-signed name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The birth-name sticks where the crocodile of profit grips.
- A criminal's name is recorded for proof, not pardon.
- The reckoning now descends into the water of the mind.



The Inner Elephant-Crocodile

अंदरक गज-ग्राह *Andarak Gaja-Grāha*

"The pond's four banks are separate, the water one — and within the water, both the elephant and the crocodile."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The gaja-grāha descends into the mind — the truth within, the greed within

The elephant within, the crocodile within

The Inner Elephant-Crocodile • अंदरक गज-ग्राह — card 1 of 2

Four banks, one pond. The antagonists' stories are "four banks of one pond." The mythic elephant-crocodile now descends into the mind: "the elephant is the truth stuck within a person; the crocodile is greed, lineage-pride, rank, percentage, fear, and the jaws of nameless profit."

Seeing the caught creature. Būṛhbā: "whatever you see, do not at once call it a fault; first see the creature caught within it — the power to see the bondage within one you call guilty is also a pure form of proof." Each inner elephant appears — Hariharan's childhood, Batra's boy, Rāghav's "full sentence," Lau's caged memory — gripped by its own crocodile.

● *The mind's pond*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The separate crimes are four banks of one pond.
- The trapped truth is the elephant; the appetite is the crocodile.
- Seeing the bondage within the guilty is a form of proof.

The grip made visible

The Inner Elephant-Crocodile · अंदरक गज-ग्राह — card 2 of 2

The witness examined. Even Satyavrat says "do not spare me either"; his elephant is the wish to hear justice, his crocodile the silence that once shielded crime. Ananyā writes: "the witness too is not outside the examination."

One tooth at a time. The composite elephant (all their trapped truths) is gripped by the composite crocodile — "caste, greed, procedure, profit, silence, global avarice, data, fear, all one huge jaw." From the elephant's mouth come names; at each answering "present" a crocodile-tooth loosens.

Anger with open eyes. The grip is not released, but "for the first time becomes public — a hidden grip is unbearable; a visible grip, hands can gather against it." Būṛhbā: "its teeth are made not of one man, but the whole system — keep the anger, but open the eyes." The coconut-leaf school is born.

● The visible jaw

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Even the witness must examine his own inner crocodile.
- Each "present" loosens a tooth of the grip.
- The crocodile is the whole system: keep the anger, open the eyes.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 83

The Coconut-Leaf School

नारिकेल पात पाठशाला *Nārikel Pāt Pāṭhśālā*

"Where no shade survives, even there a school can sit — on a seat of leaves."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The site of trauma becomes a site of learning — its first lesson, "Present"

The school of the name

The Coconut-Leaf School • नारिकेल पात पाठशाला — card 1 of 2

The first lesson is the name. Behind the cut stump a school rises — "not for government recognition." "Here the first lesson is not the alphabet, but the hearing of the name; 'present' means not the attendance-register, but the acknowledgment of existence." Its plan has four corners: name, privacy, labor, and breath.

Rules for humans. Four wall-rules are written: "no grief without permission"; "no body a spectacle"; "paper is proof, but incomplete without the human voice"; and Satyavrat's — "silence too is testimony, if it is of listening, not fear." Bā: "a school built of a building is for exams; a school built of rules is for humans."

● *The rule-built school*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The first lesson is the name, not the alphabet.
- Name, privacy, labor, breath — the four corners.
- A school of rules is for humans; of buildings, for exams.

The Tattvacintāmaṇi between two hands

The Coconut-Leaf School • नारिकेल पात पाठशाला — card 2 of 2

Leaves with blanks. Only fallen coconut leaves are lifted, never cut; each bears a sign — "the bridge-pier," "Gaṅgeśa's question," "the inner crocodile" — with a blank left below. Asked why blank, Ananyā: "if we write the story closed, where will the next person speak?"

Opened between two hands. A tanner-boy hesitates to lift a leaf; a Brahmin boy, recalling Gaṅgeśa's question, holds it with him, and a fine green line shines between them. Bā: "the Tattvacintāmaṇi does not stay only in a book; sometimes it opens between two hands too." A pandit's doubt is met: "if the birth-story is questioned, the claim of high-low is questioned too."

First lesson: Present. An empty bowl sits in the middle — "if any name is left out, this bowl will hear it first." A fifth rule is added: "whoever is absent will be called first." On the register's new page the title waits: "First Lesson: Present" — and all night the absent names await their turn.

● The gathered leaf

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A closed story leaves no room for the next voice.
- Logic itself opens between a tanner's and a Brahmin's hands.
- The absent are called first; the first lesson is "Present."



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 84

First Lesson: Present

पहिल पाठ: उपस्थित *Pahil Pāṭh: Upasthit*

"The first lesson is not a letter — it is saying 'present.'"

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The school's first lesson — not a letter, but saying "present"

Standing with the name

First Lesson: Present • पहिल पाठ: उपस्थित — card 1 of 2

Present, not seated. On the first day no one reads the alphabet; the empty stone holds every suppressed name. The children learn that "present is not sitting the body on a chair; present is standing with the name." A grandmother called only "that old woman" is named — "Sītāmoni — present."

From night into day. A girl names the uncle the river took, spoken only at night: "Bholārām — present, from night into day." A boy names his tanner great-grandfather, Mangalū Dās; Mīrā writes it "not below, but at the base — where the page's weight rests," for "in this school, caste cannot stop presence."

● The named absent

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- To be present is to stand with the name, not just sit.
- The suppressed name is spoken from night into day.
- The laborer's name is placed at the base, not below.

Present with dignity

First Lesson: Present • पहिल पाठ: उपस्थित — card 2 of 2

Logic in the soil. In play, Navya-Nyāya descends into the school's ground — perception, inference, and word worked out with the stones. "Gaṅgeśa comes out of the library's dust into the children's stone, charcoal, name, and question" — so that caste, greed, and fear cannot together make anyone absent.

The silence that is present. A sister silenced by violence is recorded "a daughter — present with dignity." Mīrā's rule: "memory will not be made by cutting privacy"; Devika: "whoever's name-saying is a danger, their silence too is present." An old woman names her mother from within her sari-edge: "Phulkumārī."

A citizen-lesson. The naming widens: "whose labor is in the bridge, their name in the pier; whose data was stolen, their name returns in the human voice; whose dignity was snatched, their name none will sell." As night falls, the lesson turns toward the women's night-assembly.

● *The dignified presence*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Navya-Nyāya lives in the children's stones and questions.
- A protected silence is itself a form of presence.
- Presence becomes a lesson of labor, data, and dignity.



The Women's Night-Assembly

स्त्री सभक राति-सभा *Strī Sabhak Rāti-sabhā*

"The real body of the day's word opens in the night-assembly, when the women begin to speak."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- By night the women speak the names the day cannot hold

The body speaks

The Women's Night-Assembly • स्त्री सभक राति-सभा — card 1 of 2

Protected, not opened. The women gather at the stump; Bā: "today the body will speak." Mīrā guards rather than opens the assembly: "no one's story written without permission; whoever must stay silent, their silence too is present." Ujjwal's mother: "he lost not to the screen alone, but to society's silence that shame forbids naming — the mother's ear should open before the son's soul."

Shame belongs to the thief. Devika: "fraud eats not only money; it eats shame, trust, and the right to admit one's own mistake. The thugs run accounts abroad while the home breaks the pot of shame on the victim's head — this will end." A bridge-widow: "my name is Phulkumārī, not 'Munna's wife'; write our cracked heels too."

● The spoken body

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The assembly is guarded, not opened; consent comes first.
- Fraud eats shame and trust, not only money.
- The shame belongs to the thief, not the victim.

Privacy is dignity, not silence

The Women's Night-Assembly • स्त्री सभक राति-सभा — card 2 of 2

Listening before writing. Saumya: "writing without listening is another kind of capture; record her permission, her pauses, her refusal first." Ira names the suppressed tanner-wife of Gaṅgeśa: "scripture kept society, but erased the woman's name — how great a name-theft." Bā: "if justice will not understand the body's caste, logic stays incomplete."

The thread of remembrance. Mīrā gives red thread "as remembrance, not bondage" — a woman who told her story keeps it on her own wrist, for "telling a story does not make a woman public property." A youth: "do not write my love's name — write: a woman who refused to call her inner truth a lie" — "confidential present."

The empty space is a document. Saumya writes only a heading — "the body's proof" — and leaves the space blank: "empty space is also a document." Consent becomes a fourth pramāṇa. Five points settle, and Phulkumārī says: "tomorrow, read the laborer's feet."

● The guarded name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Writing without listening is another kind of capture.
- A told story does not make a woman public property.
- Consent is a proof; the blank space is a document.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 86

The Laborer's Feet

मजदूरक पाँव *Majdūrak Pāv*

"If a name is present, ask — on what soil did his feet fall."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- If a name is present, ask on what soil his feet fell

The proof of the feet

The Laborer's Feet • मजदूरक पाँव — card 1 of 2

The first footprint. At the half-built bridge where laborers' names were dropped from the ledger, Munna Pāswān's uncle presses his cracked, barefoot sole into wet clay onto a leaf — the first footprint. "Not a bank or police thumbprint, but the proof of a life that walked." A water-drop blurs but does not erase it: "labor's name pales when weeping falls, but does not vanish."

The smell of labor. Gaṅgeśa's proofs apply: perception (the cracked foot), inference (rain, hunger, and load hidden in the cracks), word (the uncle's telling), and a fourth — "the smell of labor, which survives in the soil more than on paper." Women add their feet: "the feet that carried the bread — is that not labor?"

● *The walked life*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The footprint is the proof of a life that walked.
- Weeping pales the name but does not erase it.
- The smell of labor outlasts the paper record.

The bridge complete when feet are present

The Laborer's Feet • मजदूरक पाँव — card 2 of 2

An incomplete bridge. Each footprint is distinct — a story — where the record called them "number," "daily-wage," "workforce." Āruṇi, the engineer: "a bridge that does not keep the laborer's name is an incomplete bridge; the bridge is complete only when the feet are present."

Two teeth of one crocodile. Offered a fixed-size "Martyr-Laborer Memorial-Wall," the uncle refuses: "one who does not read the feet does not read the bone buried under the bridge either." Mīrā adds the labor-dignity oath: "no footprint goes to any leaflet or screen without permission — the insult of labor and the sale of memory are two teeth of one crocodile."

The feet return home. Satyavrat removes his shoes to add his foot, but the children refuse: "not your feet — your silence is already written; this is the place of labor's feet." A footprint-path forms leading back to the grove, and a new register-section opens: "the record of the feet."

● *The completed bridge*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A bridge without the laborer's name is incomplete.
- Insulting labor and selling memory are one crocodile's teeth.
- The record of the feet returns the walked lives home.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 87

The Screen-Fast

स्क्रीनक उपवास *Skrīnak Upavās*

"One day's screen-fast returns the sound of one's own breath to the ear."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- One day without the screen returns the sound of one's own breath

A fast of the gaze

The Screen-Fast • स्क्रीनक उपवास — card 1 of 2

Not food, but the gaze. The children resolve on one day's screen-fast — "not of food, but of the gaze." No one is compelled, for "forced virtue too is not proof, only another form of fear." A clay "screen-pot" holds the devices, and the village "gets its ears back" — the rooster, the well-rope, and laughter heard first.

Loneliness eats the field. A "mouth-reading" replaces the name-reading; the stories hold fear of technology, but more, human loneliness. A farmer laments "the phone ate my field"; the children correct him: "the phone does not eat the field — loneliness eats it."

● The rested eye

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The fast is of the gaze, not of food.
- Forced virtue is not proof, only another form of fear.
- It is loneliness, not the phone, that eats the field.

The gaze made a criminal

The Screen-Fast • स्क्रीनक उपवास — card 2 of 2

Seeing is not owning. Mīrā teaches a deeper privacy: "shutting the mobile is not enough; another's face, grief, or body — merely seeing them does not make you their owner." Digital fraud loots not only money — "it makes the gaze itself a criminal."

Knock on a human's door. The returning devices come with protective rules: no weeping-image without permission; no game on grief; "do not read a fraud-message alone, ask the community; if afraid, knock on a human's door, not a phone."

Master or tool. Each device is weighed in the hand — "am I master, or tool?" — a question "not filled at once, but lived." The village learns one day's silence is not enough: "every day needs a small corner where there is no screen, only the human voice."

● The reclaimed voice

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Seeing another's grief does not make you its owner.
- When afraid, knock on a human's door, not a phone.
- Every day needs a corner with no screen, only the voice.



Ira's Letter to the Children Abroad

ईराक पत्र विदेशक बच्चा सभकेँ *Īrāk Patra Videśak Baccā Sabhakē*

"Whether the letter arrived, the post-office will not say — the reply finds its own path."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The name-watch reaches across the sea to the diaspora children

Not a picture, a responsibility

Ira's Letter to the Children Abroad • ईराक पत्र विदेशक बच्चा सभकेँ — card 1 of 2

Memory as responsibility. Ira writes the diaspora children: "Gaṛh Nārikel is not your holiday picture, but your responsibility." "If memory becomes only sweetness, it sells like market-candy; when memory becomes responsibility, the crocodiles' teeth stick on chewing it." Her arrival-rule: "do not first take a photo; first hear a name."

The name's first theft. "The caste-system is the name's first theft; it puts the lineage's guard before a person's name." "Those who worship the thinker but fear the thinker's life-truth do not do justice — they trade in idols." And: "a ghost is not one who frightens; a ghost is a name whose justice was not completed."

● The inherited duty

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The village is a responsibility, not a holiday picture.
- Worshipping the thinker while fearing his life-truth is idol-trade.
- A ghost is a name whose justice was never completed.

Present from afar

Ira's Letter to the Children Abroad • ईराक पत्र विदेशक बच्चा सभकेँ — card 2 of 2

The screen as boat. Devika asks — the screen again, after the fast? Ira: "the screen itself is not a crocodile; a screen that chews a name is a crocodile; a screen that returns a name home is a boat." The replies burst one line: "I am present, but the learning remains" — a stone is made: "present from afar."

A chain of breath. Broom's team calls it "a diaspora-memory network"; Ira refuses: "call it a network and again come wires, data, and ownership; I call it a chain of breath." The translator sticks; Ira: "let it be hard — not everything is born for translation."

Listening without a boundary. She forbids its use as raw material for any trust, stage, or spectacle. Satyavrat answers her question: "a public hearing is not only for the present body, but for the present debt too — let the far children's letters be read." Now listening has no boundary.

● *The distant present*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A screen that returns a name home is a boat, not a crocodile.
- It is a chain of breath, not a network to be owned.
- The hearing is for the present debt, not only the present body.



Satyavrat's Public Hearing

सत्यव्रतक जन-सुनवाई *Satyavratak Jan-sunavāī*

"In a public hearing the greatest testimony is that of the one who has never been heard."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The greatest testimony is that of the one never heard

The unheard testimony

Satyavrat's Public Hearing • सत्यव्रतक जन-सुनवाई — card 1 of 2

First the listener. The hearing is held at the stump — no stage, no chair, no mic, listeners on the ground. Satyavrat arrives last: "today I am not the chairman, not even the writer, but first the listener; the children will write." An empty bowl is set out — "the word one cannot speak, its silence will be kept here."

The shoes of knowledge. A tanner-woman asks: "the caste that watches me make sandals will not see my daughter read scripture — who makes the shoes of knowledge? If the idea was saved and the life killed, what justice is that?" A far child's letter: "a name needs pronunciation, not only spelling." A laborer's son: "my father was temporary on paper; in the water he became permanent."

● The ground-level hearing

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- No stage: the judge sits first as a listener.
- The empty bowl holds the silences that cannot be spoken.
- Saving the idea while killing the life is no justice.

The birth of a folk-code

Satyavrat's Public Hearing · सत्यव्रतक जन-सुनवाई — card 2 of 2

Share the listening. Satyavrat refuses a verdict: "in giving verdicts we shrank the people's voice for years; today the testimony stays in its own shape." Devika: "an order gives power to a hand; share the listening hand-to-hand." He writes only: "calling folk-memory 'material' is a second murder."

Justice given a body. The children play kabaddī through the hearing, touching a name-stone each round; the running feet send a tremor through the seated palms — "as if the testimony runs within the earth too." Satyavrat sees why his written law went lifeless — "it did not know play, did not hold the breath, did not touch a name" — and listens empty-handed.

A small constitution. The silence-bowl lifts only when "caste, shame, fear, and rank" are let go. The children write the folk-code: don't erase a name; don't mock silence; don't make pain a spectacle; dignity first; permission before the screen; "don't kill the life-truth in caste's name" — "the first breath of a small constitution."

● The people's code

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A verdict hands power to one; shared listening does not.
- Play gave justice back a body the written law had lost.
- The children's six rules are a small constitution's first breath.



The Constitution of the Name

नामक संविधान *Nāmak Saṁvidhān*

"A constitution can be written even on a dry leaf — if the writers are children."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The children write a folk-constitution on a fallen leaf

Written on a dry leaf

The Constitution of the Name · नामक संविधान — card 1 of 2

See the crime first. On a dry Channā leaf the children write their rules. Bā: "a constitution is made by a society that wishes to see its own crime; a society that writes only its glory writes a genealogy, not rules." The first line: "first see the crime, then write the rule." Satyavrat stays silent, "so the children's words are not crushed by his."

The founding rules. The rules gather the whole struggle: "do not erase a name"; "privacy will not be sold — permission before the gaze, dignity before the story"; "the body will not be insulted"; "no contract on memory"; "justice will not be killed in caste's name"; "the paper's truth is incomplete without the people's voice."

● *The leaf-charter*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A society that writes only its glory writes a genealogy, not rules.
- Permission before the gaze; dignity before the story.
- Memory cannot be put under contract.

The seal of the root

The Constitution of the Name • नामक संविधान — card 2 of 2

More of the code. "Convenience will not become master"; "whoever's name was not found, theirs the first seat"; "keep account of the silence — society drowns by the spectator's silence too"; "the village is not a memory-picture, but a responsibility." On forgiveness: "it is born from listening, not declared; the crime's profit is given up first."

A vow, not a signature. Asked who will seal it, Ananyā soaks a root-fiber and sets it in the corner: "the seal is the root's." The children press mud-thumbprints below — "less evidence, more a vow." Each copy must begin from a blank page, so the rules become "a walking leaf," not a fixed book.

Reaching the absent. The crooks are absent, yet the constitution reaches them all — "do not erase a name" flashes on Chandrapal's device; "silence too is present" sticks on Rāghav's phone. The last blank page waits: "whoever is absent, their name too will be asked."

● The rooted vow

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The nameless get the first seat; the silence is counted too.
- The thumbprint is a vow, not a signature; each copy starts blank.
- Forgiveness is born from listening, not declared.



The Absence of the Crooks

धूर्त सभक अनुपस्थिति *Dhūrt Sabhak Anupasthiti*

"The crook's absence too is a presence — the empty chair speaks loudest of all."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The wrongdoers are read as an absence, but given no stage

The victim's name at the center

The Absence of the Crooks • धूर्त सभक अनुपस्थिति — card 1 of 2

No stage for the guilty. Asked whether to summon the wrongdoers, the children decide to "read the absent's absence, but give them no stage" — for "society seats the criminal at the center in the name of punishing him." The victim's name comes first, the crooks' to the edge: "the proof of absence — when the criminal was not called, the victim's voice rose."

The edge is the punishment. Each wrongdoer feels the absence: Baṭuknāth's phone never rings — "something can happen even without him"; Chandrapal learns "the net's defeat is that people no longer feel the need for it"; Lau learns the edge itself is a sentence — "a place where you may see and hear, but cannot make yourself the center."

● *The un-staged guilty*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Punishing the criminal on stage seats him at the center again.
- Running on the victim's name raises the victim's voice.
- The edge, not the spotlight, is the true punishment.

The sin large, the sinner small

The Absence of the Crooks • धूर्त सभक अनुपस्थिति — card 2 of 2

The deed named first. On a black-bordered page the deeds are written large — "the eating of dates, the trade of the body, the screen's noose, the mask of donation, the arrogance of caste, the trade of memory, the crime of silence" — and the criminals' names small beneath. Bā: "the sin in large letters, the sinner in small; else the sinner dies and the sin lives on under another name."

I say my own name. Mīrā asks if not summoning them is cowardice; Ananyā: "no; today I will not measure my wound by their eyes — today I will say my name with my own mouth." The right to see stays in the victim's hand: "the absent one is not a fear, if I am present."

The shadow that cannot stay. The criminals' shadows crawl among the name-stones; a child sets a stone on one: "there is a name on the stone; a shadow cannot stay." They are pushed outside the circle, and a long shadow spreads from the stump — the next day's lesson: "the shade of the stump."

● *The named sin*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Name the sin large so it can't survive the sinner.
- The victim keeps the right to see, and says her own name.
- A shadow cannot stay where a name is written on the stone.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 92

The Shade of the Stump

ढूठक छाँह *Thūṭhak Chāh*

"The stump's shade is small, but the ears of those who sit in it grow large."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- In the stump's shade the mind finds responsibility — and the water returns

Responsibility, not rest

The Shade of the Stump • टूँक छाँह — card 1 of 2

The shade that demands. The calm around the stump is "not of rest, but of listening." The cut stump's shadow falls long and wavy, "as if the shadow became water." Bā: "in the tree's shade the body finds rest; in the stump's shade the mind finds responsibility."

Collective shadow, personal face. Asked whether a shadow is proof, Ananyā answers with all four: "perception is the shadow, inference the tree's memory, word what Bā says, and the fourth — the weeping of the home in whose name the shadow rests." A rule is added: "the shadow is collective, the face is personal." Satyavrat removes his shoes to enter it.

● *The moral shade*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The calm is of listening, not of rest.
- The stump's shade gives the mind responsibility, not rest.
- The shadow is collective; the face stays personal.

The water returns

The Shade of the Stump · टूँक छाँह — card 2 of 2

Drawn into the light. The criminals, absent, cannot escape the shadow — Chandrapal's incomplete-name paper, Broom's wet deed, Lau's shadow climbing his wall. Bā: "a shadow made of memory stays bright even in the dark." Satyavrat: "the law cannot measure a shadow; but society, if it wishes, can make the shadow a refuge."

The name must walk. A water-smell rises; the Kamalā-Balān returns "heavy, impatient, old." Ananyā: "do not lift the name-stones, but make copies of them all" — for "if water comes, the name must learn to walk." Satyavrat's old state-paper becomes folk-work.

The water gives the news. The first thick drop falls not on the stump but on the stone written "whoever's name was not found"; the letters thicken. Bā: "whoever's name was not found, the water gave them the news first." And the water, till now only a smell, is now returning.

● *The returning flood*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The absent cannot escape the shadow of memory.
- If water comes, the name must learn to walk.
- The water brings the news first to the nameless.



The Flood Returns

पुनः बाढ़ि *Punaḥ Bāṛhi*

"The river does not believe in silence — it comes back and opens the old accounts."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The river comes back to open the old accounts

Save the name, not only the tree

The Flood Returns • पुनः बाढि — card 1 of 2

The memory-heritage first. The Kamalā-Balān returns; Ananyā: "this time we will not only save the tree, but the name too." The constitution-pages, the register, the nameless ones' stones, and the privacy-oath are carried to high ground first — "the movable-immovable heritage of memory."

The imprint that stays. The children do not lift the heavy stones — "moving a stone moves that name's land" — but press each stone's imprint into the mud under a coconut leaf: "the stone could drown, the imprint will stay." They memorize names too: "the copy will not be of paper, but of the throat." Bā: "the name that was heard, its ink does not fear the water."

● *The saved memory*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Save the name as carefully as the lives.
- The imprint survives where the stone may drown.
- A heard name's ink does not fear the water.

Kabaddī in the water

The Flood Returns • पुनः बाढ़ि — card 2 of 2

The name's boat. Kabaddī descends into the flood; each child carries a name across the water-circle — "Sarayu present, Ujjwal present, laborer present, Gaṅgeśa present." Būṛhbā: "in the flood the breath's real test happens; one who can say 'kabaddī' amid the water can pull a name from the house of fear."

The name goes with the human. Each rescue-team is fixed with "a child, a register, and ten oral names," for "the name goes with the human." Against relief-scams, Devika's rule: "whatever link asks for a name, first ask its name." The flood came "not only to sweep away, but to return."

The eye of greed. But the crocodiles return too — literal, and the antagonists' opportunism: fake relief-accounts, "disaster opportunity" in the code, a relief-project drafted. "The crocodiles' world never sleeps in a flood — the deeper the crisis, the sharper the eye of greed."

● The floodwater watch

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Kabaddī becomes the boat that ferries each name across.
- Every rescue-team carries a child, a register, ten names.
- The deeper the crisis, the sharper the eye of greed.



The Return of the Crocodiles

गोहि सभक वापसी *Gohi Sabhak Vāpasī*

"By day the water is muddy, by night black oil — the crocodile does not change its color, but the light."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The crocodile is not only an eater, but a boundary-keeper

The crocodile is a boundary

The Return of the Crocodiles • गोहि सभक वापसी — card 1 of 2

Watch the breath. The crocodiles return, but do not attack — they circle. Ananyā: "one who comes to eat hurries; one who comes to see the boundary holds the breath and swims slowly." Bā: "these are boundary-keeping creatures, not only eaters — the crocodile eats the body, but if the name survives, the inner bondage can be cut."

A stalled moment. The gaja-grāha is reread: gripping the elephant's foot can be "a stalled moment of remembrance" — if a man is proud of body, caste, wealth, rank, screen, or law, "the crocodile shows him the water's mouth." A boatman testifies: "whatever corpse is left nameless, around it these circle; give a name, and the water calms."

● *The boundary-keeper*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The eater hurries; the boundary-keeper holds its breath.
- The grip can be a stalled moment of remembrance.
- Give the nameless a name, and the water calms.

Without a name, a boundary is violence

The Return of the Crocodiles • गोहि सभक वापसी — card 2 of 2

Returning in language. The crocodiles return in language too: on Chandrapal's screen a message — "verify the name"; Rāghav's "situation under control" garbles so "control drowns, name sticks." On Lau's glass desk a crocodile's eye appears — "magical justice's boundary does not ask for a passport."

Pride ends, listening begins. The kabaddī circle becomes "the method of staying alive" — the crocodiles outside, the children within. Ananyā: "the crocodile is not an enemy, but a boundary — where pride ends and listening begins." "Without a name, a boundary is violence; with a name, a boundary is liberation."

Buying the water itself. By dawn a proposal arrives to buy the flood-affected memory-region — the same shadow of Lau's money, Broom's advice, Chandrapal's net. Ananyā: "now they will want to buy not just memory, but even the water." The next lesson is of the deal.

● *The named boundary*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The crocodiles return in language as well as water.
- A boundary without a name is violence; with one, liberation.
- Greed now comes to buy even the water itself.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 95

Lau Kin-hang's Last Deal

लाउ किन-हंगक अंतिम सौदा *Lāu Kin-haṅgak Antim Saudā*

"In the last deal the price is not written — the name is written."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The deal that hides a dream of leaving the earth

The last deal writes a name

Lau Kin-hang's Last Deal • लाउ किन-हंगक अंतिम सौदा — card 1 of 2

Aid with a hidden thorn. Lau's white letter offers relief, school, and hospital, but "control surrounds the aid, ownership stands behind the relief" — the children made "trained volunteers." Bā: "change the watchman's name, and the watch changes." Ira: "this is the crocodile's new mouth; it will chew the thanks, and by that make the name its own."

A dream of leaving the earth. The appendix reveals the "Nameless Settlement" — a distant habitation-project to carry off selected children and workers. Ira: "this is not only a deal to buy the village, but the opening advertisement of a dream to leave the earth." Lau's own past — a refugee-camp serial-number made him understand "security as namelessness" — "the past could explain his crime, not pardon it."

● The white deal

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Aid that owns the memory is a crocodile's new mouth.
- The appendix hides a dream of leaving the earth itself.
- A past may explain a crime, but never pardon it.

The punishment of hearing the names

Lau Kin-hang's Last Deal • लाउ किन-हंगक अंतिम सौदा — card 2 of 2

No answer on paper. "We will not answer on paper." The children read names amid the flood and release the voice to the open sky: "whoever wishes to hear, hear; whoever wishes to buy, will get nothing." Lau realizes: "these people do not even want to leave their own earth" — for "to open the market of leaving the earth, one must first break the language of love for the earth."

Bound by listening. In the register before Lau's name: "the deal came, was heard, was not refused; he was given the punishment of hearing the names" — "one who comes to buy a name gets no leave without hearing them." Satyavrat's insight: to bind one who could buy anything "into moneyless listening" is the deepest punishment.

The caste of the ear. Then Baṭuknāth comes — not with the trust's paper, but empty-handed, ankle-deep in the water: "let me hear the names one night; I have to change the caste of my ear." The test of his late-arriving repentance is set for the next night.

● The moneyless sentence

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The answer is a name-reading, not a signature.
- Binding a buyer into moneyless listening is the deepest sentence.
- Late repentance begins by changing the caste of one's ear.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 96

Baṭuknāth's Late-Arriving Forgiveness

बटुकनाथक देर-सँ-आयल क्षमा *Baṭuknāthak Der-sā-āyal Kṣamā*

"Forgiveness that comes late does not come empty-handed — it brings the account of its own delay with it."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The delay-lawyer's night-long repentance-vigil of listening

The account of the delay

Baṭuknāth's Late-Arriving Forgiveness • बटुकनाथक देर-सँ आयल क्षमा — card 1 of 2

The earth holds him. Baṭuknāth comes alone — no flag, no advocate, dust on his feet, "as if the earth takes the account of his body for the first time." He asks Satyavrat for forgiveness; Satyavrat redirects: "not from me; from all whose names are read here." Ananyā: "here it will be heard not legally, but by the name."

The date kills twice. He sits before the nameless stone — "for years he saved the accused's name and left the victim's in the file's dust; today the nameless stone stands before him as a judge." Hearing "Sarayu," the old reflex "next date" rises in him, and he realizes "saying 'date' is many times to kill a death a second time."

● The reckoning of delay

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Late forgiveness carries the account of its own delay.
- The nameless victim becomes the judge of the man who erased him.
- A adjournment can be a second killing of the dead.

The confession

Baṭuknāth's Late-Arriving Forgiveness · बटुकनाथक देर-सँ आयल क्षमा — card 2 of 2

Two austerities. He learns "arguing and listening are two different austerities — in arguing the mind runs outward; in listening the mind is dragged inward." By the third watch his defense-logic tires, but the names do not. He confesses: "I made the name a case, not a human; I covered crime with procedure; I made justice a profession."

Anger has a place. A youth cries out — "you say it now, when all are dead?" Mīrā: "anger too is present; it needs a place." Baṭuknāth realizes how much anger was silenced by "calling it civilization, discipline, court-dignity." For the nameless, he can only whisper "present."

A practice, not a verdict. "Did I get forgiveness?" Ananyā: "forgiveness is not a verdict; it is a practice — tomorrow the names will be read again; come." He returns empty-handed, and "the weight of the empty hands feels heavier than all his ranks."

● The heard confession

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Listening drags the mind inward where arguing runs it out.
- Anger, too, is present and needs a place.
- Forgiveness is a practice, not a verdict or a certificate.



Chandrapal's Mule Account

चन्द्रपालक म्यूल अकाउण्ट *Chandrapālak Myūl Akāuṇṭ*

"One who made another's account a mule, one day understood his own life as a mule account."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The broker of others' accounts sees his own life as a mule account

Not the owner, only the path

Chandrapal's Mule Account • चन्द्रपालक म्यूल अकाउण्ट — card 1 of 2

Opened through him. Alone in his shut room, Chandrapal understands "he did not open the accounts — they were opened through him; he thought himself the owner, but he was only the path." As he wipes the ledger, each digit becomes a face — a youth who sold his home in a "digital arrest" fear, a mother silenced repaying a loan.

Shame, not fear. He trembles "not with fear but with shame — in fear a man still thinks himself important; in shame he asks, what was the meaning of my life?" He sees his old lie: "'nothing will spoil' was the biggest lie — when an account becomes the path of nameless money, a hole forms in a person's name, and through it the soul leaks out."

● *The hollow path*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The mule is not the owner, only the path the load takes.
- Behind every digit is a face the number erased.
- "Nothing will spoil" is the lie that hollows out a name.

Mine too

Chandrapal's Mule Account · चन्द्रपालक म्यूल अकाउण्ट — card 2 of 2

The hand writes percentage. He tries to write his name — "Chandrapal Batra" — but the pen writes "percentage" instead; finally, by hand: "mule account, through whom sin passed." A leaf slides under his door asking "whose account was it?" He answers "mine too" — "a path is marked in the geography of crime; you cannot answer by removing your own role."

The invisible owner. Each floating account becomes a small crocodile "chewing not money but names." Whose name became an account was counted a number; whose name money passed through was caught as a criminal; "the real owner stayed invisible, and Chandrapal was the broker of that invisibility."

To give, not hide. At dawn he wraps his ledgers and goes "not to hide but to give" — "write my name in full, but write my percentage too." On Rāghav's phone a last flash: "the message won't erase."

● The owned share

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The middle account is not innocent; the path shares the crime.
- The broker of invisibility hides the real owner.
- Name the full name — and the full share of the guilt.



VOL-1 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 98

Rāghav's Last Message

राघवक अंतिम संदेश *Rāghavak Antim Sandeś*

"The last message does not erase — it becomes a leaf and sticks to the stump."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The vanishing messages return as leaves on the stump

The message that won't erase

Rāghav's Last Message • राघवक अंतिम संदेश — card 1 of 2

The crime's breath. Rāghav, "less the crime's chief, more the crime's breath," whose old habit was "fleeing from listening," sees a vision: "the vanished messages did not vanish; they became leaves in the Channā grove's other body." His alias, once cleverness, is now a shackle.

A secret that loots a name. The grove teaches the distinction he never learned: "a secret that saves human dignity is protection; a secret that loots a name is crime." He writes "I am afraid"; one reply comes — "present" — and his non-vanishing sentence, "the account isn't closed, the soul is open," becomes a leaf that sticks to the stump.

● *The un-erased word*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Deleted messages return as the grove's remembering leaves.
- A secret guarding dignity protects; one looting a name is crime.
- The confessing word will not vanish; it takes root.

The hardest word is "I"

Rāghav's Last Message · राघवक अंतिम संदेश — card 2 of 2

Atonement's first word. "In crime's language 'I' is rare — there it is process, team, project, risk, account; in atonement's language the first word is 'I,' and that word is the hardest." One leaf does not make a forest; Devika: "saying 'the soul is open' is easy; opening it before those your code chewed is hard."

The door, not the testimony. Satyavrat reads the leaf: "this is not testimony, but testimony's door; the door is open, walking inside remains." Below it a fine line surfaces: "the debt of listening remains."

The witness too. Ananyā asks "who will testify?" Satyavrat: "the one who did not speak on time, first — me too." The name-constitution's next page is now "not only of the criminals, but of the witnesses too."

● The examined witness

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "I" is rare in crime's language and hardest in atonement's.
- A confession is the door to testimony, not testimony itself.
- The witness who stayed silent must be examined too.



Satyavrat Mehta's Testimony

सत्यव्रत मेहताक गवाही *Satyavrat Mehtāk Gavāhī*

"The wind tried to blow the testimony away, the water to dissolve it — but the testimony was a leaf; it did not go."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The witness examines himself and names his own silence

The testimony behind the oath

Satyavrat Mehta's Testimony • सत्यव्रत मेहताक गवाही — card 1 of 2

No rank on the page. Satyavrat writes his own testimony — recalling that "striking out a mistake does not spoil the page; not striking it out spoils history." He puts no rank on it: "the heavier the rank, the more often a man hides behind it." The folk-code's line binds him: "whoever listens will also write the name of his own silence."

The shell of testimony. His first line: "many times I could have spoken on time, but did not." He confesses the process that let bodies rot and reports that replaced grief. "The document is only testimony's shell; if the inner voice is not heard, the paper becomes not justice, but polite silence." "This is the page behind the oath."

● The self-testimony

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Strike out the mistake; do not hide it — that is how history is kept.
- Rank makes the testimony a place to hide, not to stand.
- Unheard, the document becomes polite silence, not justice.

The caste-system of silence

Satyavrat Mehta's Testimony • सत्यव्रत मेहताक गवाही — card 2 of 2

Proof turned against people. "If the subtlety of proof works against caste, labor, the poor, the dead, and silence, then it is not justice but cleverness." He names his complicity: cutting the inconvenient truth as "procedural difficulty" was "my caste-system of silence" — "the number's convenience can become the name's murder."

Name the beneficiaries too. He demands his own punishment: "let the beneficiaries of my silence be named too — the name-watch is not half." As "the more he wrote, the smaller his body looked," he adds: "justice begins when the witness descends from his convenience and sits equal to the people."

The gripping hand. Būṛhbā sets the finale's question: "listening needs not only ears, but hands too; next time when the crocodile grips, the elephant needs not only a call, but a gripping hand." His testimony is stuck as the register's middle page: "silence, which now sits in the punishment of listening."

● The examined silence

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Proof turned against the weak is cleverness, not justice.
- Name the beneficiaries of silence, or the watch is only half.
- Listening will soon need hands, not only ears.



VOL-1 • FINALE

Chapter 100

Elephant, Crocodile, and the Child's Hand

गज, ग्राह, आ बच्चाक हाथ *Gaja, Grāha, ā Baccāk Hāth*

"The elephant's strength tires, the crocodile's grip loosens — only the child's hand does not tire."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The gaja-grāha retold — hearing the name is liberation

The story that turns its face

Elephant, Crocodile, and the Child's Hand • गज, ग्राह, आ बच्चाक हाथ — card 1 of 4

Who is the elephant? Bā asks for the gaja-grāha story again — "in Gaṛh Nārikel no story ends when heard once." The answer forms: "the trapped one is the elephant, the gripper the crocodile, and the one who hears the trapped one's name is the hand." Mīrā: "if anyone says 'I rescue you' without permission, that is not a hand, but a second crocodile."

Strike out and write. Ananyā misspells "grāha," laughs, and corrects it; Bā: "justice too is like this — do not hide the mistake, strike it out and write it right." For Ujjwal, drowned in the screen's water: "it is not your fault, it is your name." For the laborer, whose name became a wage-line: "the crocodile is not only a jaw, but a language too."

● *The turning story*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The hand is the one who hears the trapped one's name.
- Unasked rescue is a second crocodile.
- The crocodile is a language, not only a jaw.

The crocodile within the criminals

Elephant, Crocodile, and the Child's Hand • गज, ग्राह, आ बच्चाक हाथ — card 2 of 4

The elephant within. Būṛhbā: "sometimes an elephant is trapped within the criminals too — but whether it names its own crocodile must be seen." Baṭuknāth offers a title, rank, and lineage, not a name; only after long comes "Batuk" — "not liberation, the beginning of acceptance." Chandrapal says "commission," then "Chandrapal" — but "the name's debt remains."

The flight from the earth. Rāghav's inner elephant is voiceless before the un-erasing kabaddī line. Lau's elephant "wants to flee the earth" — his crocodile "the dream of a nameless future," believing "where there is no name, there is no smell of crime." The Channā stump laughs; Bā: "one who fears the name on earth seeks the nameless sky — but the name-watch can reach there too."

● *The inner reckoning*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A trapped elephant hides within the guilty too.
- A title is not a name; the name's debt outlives the saying.
- Fleeing to a nameless sky does not escape the watch.

Hearing is liberation

Elephant, Crocodile, and the Child's Hand • गज, ग्राह, आ बच्चाक हाथ — card 3 of 4

From earth to sky. The kabaddī cry rises "first in the earth, then the stump, then the stone, then the water's surface, then the sky." Satyavrat, hearing it, stands for the first time "not outside the game, but at its edge, like a watchman" — for "justice sometimes becomes a child's breath-line stretched between earth and sky."

The hand that waits. Ananyā crosses the line to the crocodile's shadow, which asks "will you rescue?"; she answers "first say the name," extends her hand "but does not grip — only waits." The elephant's voice comes — "present" — and the teeth loosen: "this is not rescue, this is justice's first touch. Gripping is not rescue; hearing the name is liberation."

● *The first touch of justice*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Justice is a child's breath-line between earth and sky.
- The hand waits for the name; it does not grip.
- Gripping is not rescue — hearing the name is liberation.

The child's hand and the mongoose's watch

Elephant, Crocodile, and the Child's Hand • गज, ग्राह, आ बच्चाक हाथ — card 4 of 4

Two leaves, a bowed star. By dawn the line is unerased and the green point has burst into two leaves, each holding a dewdrop "as if the night left its testimony as a keepsake." Far off a pale star bows — the invitation of another planet — and the children ready themselves for the next breath, having learned that "gripping is not rescue, hearing the name is liberation."

One watch, two forms. A coda names the village's oldest guardian, the mongoose (bijji) — the crocodile's opposite: "the crocodile eats the body, the mongoose saves it; the crocodile erases the name, the mongoose watches over it." "The child's palm and the mongoose's pounce are two forms of one watch — one holds the name from within, the other guards the body from without."

Strength in unity. "The mongoose's real strength was not in its teeth, but in its unity — one tires, another wakes; one generation ages, the next is born." So Vol-1 closes: the child's hand has calmed the elephant and crocodile, but "new water, new crocodiles, new names wait" — and on every veranda a mongoose stands awake, watching the road to the next volume.

● The unbroken watch

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The palm holds the name within; the mongoose guards the body without.
- The watch's strength is unity, renewed every generation.
- Vol-1 ends, but the watch continues into Vol-2.



VOL-2 • DREAM-SEQUENCE

Chapter 101

The Nameless Planet's Dream-Invitation

अनाम ग्रहक स्वप्न-आमन्त्रण *Anām Grahak Svapna-āmantraṇ*

"If a distant invitation demands the price of erasing history, then it is not a journey — it is a deal of forgetting."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A grief-free planet that demands the price of erasing history

The deal of forgetting

The Nameless Planet's Dream-Invitation • अनाम ग्रहक स्वप्न-आमन्त्रण — card 1 of 1

Grief without its memory. Āruṇi dreams of a white planet — no river, no cremation-ground, a number on every home instead of a name. The people smile "because they remember no loss of theirs; grief was erased — not its cause, but its memory." He grasps: "forgetting too is violence — when pain is forgotten, the criminal is freed from his account."

Flight eats the name. For Lau a memory-less planet is "the best market — no dead families, no old contracts"; but as he signs, his own name wipes from the page. "The dream of flight first eats the criminal's identity" — Baṭuknāth's title survives, "Batuk" erased; Chandrapal's percentage survives, "Chandrapal" gone.

Return with a name. The invitation is really "the crime-net's next proposal: in the name of securing man, make his history useless." A kabaddī line shines beneath Āruṇi's feet; Ananyā takes his hand: "cross the line, but return with a name." The shining planet becomes not the future, but a question.

● The erased history

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Erasing grief's memory frees the criminal from his account.
- The dream of escape first erases the guilty one's own name.
- Cross the line only if you return carrying a name.



Kabaddī Between the Planets in the Dream

स्वप्नमे ग्रहक बीच कबड्डी *Svapnamē Grahak Bīc Kabaḍḍī*

"Whether the boundary is of sky or soil — to return, both the breath and the name must survive."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The name-watch crosses the boundary of sky and soil

The breath that carries the name

Kabaddi Between the Planets in the Dream • स्वप्नमे ग्रहक बीच कबड्डी — card 1 of 1

A journey of consciousness. Only the children's shadows cross to the nameless planet — "the journey is of consciousness alone; no vehicle, no miracle, only a long breath in which fear, memory, and responsibility are bound together." Ananyā, knee trembling, recalls her mother — "if you are afraid, say a name" — whispers "Ujjwal," and steps.

Cruelty, not the name. The faceless, numbered guards say "grief is born from a name, drop it"; Mīrā answers: "grief is born not from a name, but from the cruelty done to a name." Of her own image on the wall: "this body is mine; make it proof, not spectacle." The image fades.

The body of self-acceptance. Satyavrat's "official, witness, law" won't open the line; only "I am a man who saw and stayed silent till too late" moves it — "the law's words become useful only when they take the body of self-acceptance." Ananyā whispers "present," and earth's water enters the memory-less planet.

● The crossing breath

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The only vehicle is a breath carrying memory and responsibility.
- Grief comes from cruelty to a name, not from the name.
- The law works only when it takes the body of self-acceptance.



The Name-Reading on the Dream's Nameless Planet

स्वप्नक अनाम ग्रहपर नाम-पाठ *Svapnak Anām Grahapar Nām-pāṭh*

"Reading names is not counting the dead — it is making their relationships, labor, and unfinished questions present again."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reading the name turns the serial-number back into a human

The name reads the number into a human

The Name-Reading on the Dream's Nameless Planet • स्वप्नक अनाम ग्रहपर नाम-पाठ — card 1 of 1

Behind the number, a bond. In a hall walled with serial-numbers, Ananyā reads the first name — and behind the number appears not a face but a relationship: "a mother with a lamp at the threshold, a child learning to row from a father." Mīrā adds after each woman's name: "without her permission, not her story."

The reckoning within. In his dream-court Baṭuknāth sees, "beyond his greed, his fear" — of losing honor. Chandrapal's self-pity only exposes his hypocrisy; every message Rāghav erased writes itself again and "speaks in his own throat." Lau: "a name stops the market"; Ananyā: "yes — because a name demands an account."

When memory returns, life begins. Āruṇi writes on the blank line — "whoever's name is not yet found" — and the wall's largest number breaks. The planet is not destroyed; "only its shine fades, and inside plain grey soil appears — when memory returns, the utopia ends, and the possibility of life begins."

● The re-humanized name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A read name restores the bond a number erased.
- A name stops the market because it demands an account.
- When memory returns, the false utopia ends and life begins.



Awakening: Gaṛh Nārikel Chooses the Earth

जागरणः गढ़ नारिकेल पृथ्वी चुनैत अछि *Jāgaraṇ: Gaṛh Nārikel Pṛthvī Cunait Achi*

"To choose the earth with its wounds is not defeat — it is accepting the responsibility to change the cause of that wound."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- To choose the wounded earth is to accept the duty to change the wound's cause

Garh Nārikel chooses the earth

Awakening: Garh Nārikel Chooses the Earth • जागरणः गढ़ नारिकेल पृथ्वी चुनैत अछि — card 1 of 1

No blue dust, only chalk. All wake having shared the same dream; on Ananyā's palm is "not blue dust, but the ordinary chalk-color of the school." Bā: "to go far, the body need not move; but on waking, the step must be placed on the earth itself." Satyavrat strikes out "official" and keeps only his name.

The ad unmasked. Āruṇi checks the source: "New-Horizon" is no real planet, but "the crime-net's propaganda-test — a campaign to measure people's fear, desire to flee, and anti-memory language," joining Broom's words, Lau's capital, and Rāghav's message-thread. "The dream was of story, but its cause lay in real crime."

The answer given here. The children decide: "we will not erase grief; we will change grief's cause; we will not free crime by leaving the earth." The criminals are given "the labor of returning names," not a pardon. Ananyā writes below the bud: "we choose the earth, because the answer must be given here."

● The chosen earth

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Waking, the step must land on the real earth.
- The escape-planet was a propaganda-test rooted in real crime.
- Change grief's cause here; do not flee to erase it.



Earth's First Watch

पृथ्वीक पहिल पहरा *Pr̥thvīk Pahil Paharā*

"To the traveler waking from the dream, the earth is not an old home, but a new responsibility."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The awakened travelers begin the watch of the chosen earth

The earth as responsibility

Earth's First Watch • पृथ्वीक पहिल पहरा — card 1 of 2

Nothing left nameless. The dream's nameless blue dust, falling on the Channā root, is drunk by the soil at once: "nameless dust does not stay on the earth; it must dissolve into the soil's history." "The earth takes all into itself, but leaves nothing nameless." Bā: "one who chooses the earth chooses his dead, his crime, his shame, his river, his failure — all."

Punishment as labor. Satyavrat adds to his affidavit: "leaving the earth will not bring liberation; liberation is sought by saving the name on the earth." The criminals are given the labor of returning names — Baṭuknāth learns "punishment is sometimes not insult, but labor"; Chandrapal, who cannot write, is told: "then listen; the children will write."

● The chosen ground

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The soil absorbs all, but leaves nothing nameless.
- To choose the earth is to choose its dead, crime, and shame.
- For the guilty, punishment becomes the labor of returning names.

The game of proof

Earth's First Watch • पृथ्वीक पहिल पहरा — card 2 of 2

The kind rule. Kabaddī becomes the earth's watch, with a kind rule: "whoever breaks the breath sits not out, but in listening" — so game and justice dissolve into each other. It becomes "the game of proof — how long can a lie hold its breath, and how long can truth run without breaking?"

The earth accepts the watch. The name-stones ring softly of their own accord, "collective assent risen from within the soil"; Bā: "the earth is accepting the watch." Satyavrat grasps that "when the earth itself accepts testimony, human institutions must be humble," and sits behind the children — "listening became his new rank."

The next throat. The community writes Earth's First Watch and learns "the only way to save a story is to give it to the next throat." A child begins: "I am on the earth"; a second answers "present"; a third, "the watch begins."

● The watching game

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- In the game of proof, the loser sits in listening, not out.
- When the earth itself accepts testimony, institutions must be humble.
- A story survives only by being given to the next throat.



The Seed's Testimony

बीजक गवाही *Bijak Gavāhī*

"The seed testifies — whose the soil was, and whose the hand."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The name-watch extends to a seed-watch

The seed keeps the village

The Seed's Testimony • बीजक गवाही — card 1 of 2

The whole village in a seed. "In the seed hides the whole tree, and in the tree the whole village; one who locks the seed in a box locks the village in a box." The granary-seed "is not sleep, but waiting — you cannot wake it with a number; you must call it by name." Bā: "if the seed is chewed, from where will words be born in the next generation's mouth?"

The seed asks no caste. Each seed's story is asked, not just its name — soil, water, hand, season, song, hunger. Būṛhbā: "the seed asks no caste; put rice in a tanner's or a Brahmin's hand, whoever gives soil, water, and labor, it grows with them — man alone planted a bamboo-fence in his own head."

● The watched seed

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The seed holds the whole village; a boxed seed boxes the village.
- A seed is woken by its name, not a number.
- The seed asks no caste; only man built that fence.

The seed's proof is its relations

The Seed's Testimony • बीजक गवाही — card 2 of 2

Relation, not substance. Stones are set beside the seeds — soil, water, hand, season, song, hunger, justice. Ananyā: "the seed's proof is not the seed alone; all its relations are its proof." Satyavrat sees Navya-Nyāya reborn in a child's voice: "not substance but relation, not word but intent, not the seed but the whole context." And the seed too has privacy: "something is saved, and only then does its dignity survive."

An acquisition-list. A government jeep brings a "Seed-Collection" project; the seed will go out "with a serial-number," not a name. Gop reads the tablet — code, geo-location, caste, "commercial potential": "this is not a protection-list, but an acquisition-list." Bā's test — "first sing its song" — meets silence: "in this is not the smell of soil, but the smell of a vault."

● *The relational proof*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The seed's proof is all its relations, not the grain alone.
- A serial-number replaces the name that acquisition wants gone.
- One who cannot sing the seed's song is a taker, not a keeper.



The Theft of the Seed

बीजक चोरी *Bijak Corī*

"The seed-thief does not steal the field — he steals the future."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Theft disguised as protection — the seed's sovereignty defended

Theft that folds its hands

The Theft of the Seed • बीजक चोरी — card 1 of 2

Two kinds of theft. "The seed-thief steals not the field, but the future." "Theft is of two kinds — one that happens at night and is caught by morning; the other that comes by day with paper, folds its hands, and is called not theft but protection." Surmaṇī Kākī brings "drowned-breath" rice "like a dying child to her chest"; Bā: "do not laugh at a rice's name — mockery is the first mask of ignorance."

Nameless goods. Mīrā reads the clause: the seed will be "anonymized" — village, caste, woman, field, labor, season, and hunger all removed, "then it is not a seed, but nameless goods." Bā, with fire: "first you took the land, then water, then the name, now the seed — next time will you acquire the womb too?"

● *The polite theft*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The seed-thief steals tomorrow's plate, not the field.
- The worst theft comes by day, with paper, calling itself protection.
- Anonymizing the seed turns a heritage into nameless goods.

The clause is the river

The Theft of the Seed • बीजक चोरी — card 2 of 2

The game's line. The children ring the seeds in a kabaddī circle; the official's shoe stops at it — "on the game's line, the law's shoe looks strangely helpless." Told the seed is "only gene-material," Surmaṇī Kākī answers: "gene or genie, first this is my mother" — and for a moment "the people's language showed science's blindness."

Ask, and the water answers. Satyavrat speaks at last: "if the seed is made of memory, labor, and community, then before acquisition the community's living consent is needed — and living consent is born not from closed paper, but from an open name-reading. Here the clause is the Kamalā-Balān; ask, and the water will answer." The foreign researcher refuses: "I will not take a sample; first I will listen" — the project's first inner crack.

Where will I grow? The code "The Seed's Testimony" is written: "a grain is the compact body of all it remembers." Then, from the opening soil, a dark question rises — "where will I grow?" — for the fields hold debt, chemicals, flood, and caste-division. The next watch reaches "the mouth of the soil."

● *The living consent*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Living consent comes from an open name-reading, not closed paper.
- The people's language can reveal what the vault's language hides.
- Stopping the theft is not enough; the seed still needs a place to grow.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 108

The Mouth of the Soil

माटिक मुँह *Māṭik Mūh*

"The mouth of the soil opens only when it is asked — where will I grow?"

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The soil asks where it may grow, and refuses the caste of land

The soil's question

The Mouth of the Soil • माटिक मुँह — card 1 of 2

Talk is what you hear. "The soil's mouth opens only when asked 'where will I grow?' — till then it stays silent, for it was always demanded from, never asked." "Talk is not what we say, it is what we hear"; the soil speaks "through the crumbling ridge, the crack's width, the drift of the sand." Its question: "you only ploughed, sold, and mortgaged me; when did you listen?"

The seed reads the palm. Harihar Jhā offers his "pure field" — never ploughed by the tanner-quarter. The seed-vessel rings; Surmaṇī Kākī: "this grain asks no caste in hunger." Ananyā: "what is the proof of your purity — did the soil say it, or only caste-fear?" The grain sticks in a cracked, labor-worn palm and shines: "the seed reads not caste, but the palm's lines."

● The listening soil

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Talk with the soil is hearing it, not commanding it.
- A grain in hunger asks no caste; the land has no purity to guard.
- The seed reads the lines of labor, not lineage.

The five soils

The Mouth of the Soil • माटिक मुँह — card 2 of 2

Grief, water, endurance, labor, memory. The seed is tested in five soils — the tanner-quarter's fallow, the marsh-edge, a widow's garden, a sharecropped field, and the stump's collective bed. Dhīramatī: "where the smell of the body's labor is, the soil lives; whoever wants only the smell of lineage, let him rot in a vault." Devika: "don't remove the fallow's history in the name of cleaning."

The crocodile of ownership. The soil answers from within — "I heard." But at dawn survey pegs, red paint, and a measuring-tape appear on the ridges. Ananyā: "we found a place for the seed to grow, but now the crocodile of ownership has come to the ridge" — raising the question of whose right: the owner's, the tiller's, the caste's, the state's, the company's, or the seed-hearing community's.

● The five beds

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The seed is tested in soils of grief, water, endurance, labor, memory.
- Cleaning must not erase the neglected land's history.
- Finding the ground raises the harder fight over who owns it.



The Memory of Water

जलक स्मृति *Jalak Smṛti*

"To forget water is easy; to forget water's memory is impossible."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Water keeps the last touch of those it could not save

Water keeps the last touch

The Memory of Water • जलक स्मृति — card 1 of 2

The coldness stays. "Paper can be changed, water cannot; what water touched once, its coldness stays within." The water testifies: "I could not keep the body, but I kept the last touch; I could not save the bone, but I saved the direction of falling; I remember the boat's shadow." Its rule: "give the name the right to flow, but not to flow unheard."

Touch has no caste. The children map the river as a path of loss, not a channel — "weeping too is a water-path." A tanner-elder brings a pot of water for ancestors never read in the grove; his wife: "today the water will wash their feet." Bā: "now justice has begun" — for "the caste-system can carve a name on stone, but in the river touch has no caste."

● *The remembering water*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Water keeps the last touch, the direction of the fall.
- The river is a path of loss to be mapped, weeping included.
- On stone caste can carve; in the river, touch has no caste.

The bottled river

The Memory of Water • जलक स्मृति — card 2 of 2

Wash your hands, don't write. The paniḍubbī tells Satyavrat, "don't write, wash your hands today"; letters rise on his fingers — "silence, delay, witness, debt." "A society that sticks to written paper fears water's memory." Āruṇi: "justice comes only when we accept the silence of the drowned as proof too."

This is not water, but color. Of the government map — river a straight line, settlement a yellow ring — the paniḍubbī laughs: "this is not water, but color." Then a vehicle brings "Sacred Memory-Water: Bottled Devotion." Ananyā: "the water is speaking, and these have come to shut it in a bottle"; Satyavrat: "where memory becomes water and is sold, the watch must be harder still."

● The commodified memory

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The drowned's silence must count as proof.
- The official map is color, not the river's living memory.
- When memory is bottled and sold, the watch must harden.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 110

The Witness of Fire

आगिक साक्षी *Āgik Sākṣī*

"The fire goes out, the ash gives testimony."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Burnt to erase memory, the paper turns memory to smoke

The ash gives testimony

The Witness of Fire • आगिक साक्षी — card 1 of 2

Smoke returns to its courtyard. "The burnt thing's smell cannot be locked; the smoke of a paper burned in secret returns to its own courtyard." Fire is of two kinds — "one on the veranda removing darkness; one hidden at night, greedy, fleeing its own shadow — the flames the same color, the ash not."

The lie's belly torn. Someone burns the name-registry copies; the fire tears the lie open — a file that read "encroached vacant land" shows its suppressed back-page, "land-valuation of the memorial-zone." "Fire eats the outer ink of a lie, but leaves the inner greed." Satyavrat: "the hand that burns a paper meant to save people's names writes its own confession."

● *The speaking ash*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Secret smoke returns to the burner's own courtyard.
- Fire strips the lie's outer ink and bares the inner greed.
- Burning the name-paper is itself a written confession.

The half-burnt names

The Witness of Fire • आगिक साक्षी — card 2 of 2

Guilty, but not alone. Hemnārāyaṇ gave the key, coerced by a hospital debt-list held over his son — "guilty, but not alone; behind his crime sits the crocodile of debt." Bā decrees a humane sentence: "a punishment where the man survives and the lie dies" — the labor of rewriting the burnt names, his debt raised in community-listening so the crime's root is seen.

The name of the nameless. A half-burnt page keeps only three fragments — "Sar..., Uj..., Nā...." Ujjwal's mother: "don't call a half-burnt name incomplete; call them all the name of the nameless." A new stone is set for "the half-burnt names," and the turn comes to the last witness: "the air is the hardest — it stays in no one's hand, but reaches everywhere."

● *The rescued names*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A coerced criminal has a crocodile of debt behind him.
- Justice lets the man survive and the lie die.
- A half-burnt name is not incomplete — it is the nameless one's name.



The Question of the Air

वायुक प्रश्न *Vāyuk Praśna*

"The smoke did not go to the sky, it wandered lane by lane — the air's question asks house to house."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The hardest witness — the air carries both word and rumor

The air carries word and rumor

The Question of the Air • वायु क प्रश्न — card 1 of 2

Everyone's, easiest to loot. "Soil, seed, water, fire come to hand; the air does not, so people think it is no one's — but what is everyone's is the easiest to loot." The breath-watch is hardest: "on the breath only one thing is placed — whoever speaks, its responsibility." "The word has roots, the rumor doesn't; what flies without roots falls into someone's courtyard."

Did you see, or hear? The air-watch forbids the unverified: no anonymous accusation, no insult flown with a dead name, no woman's story without permission. A tea-shop rumor is tested — "did you see this directly, or hear it?" — and "rumor has wings, not roots." The air writes over the antagonists: "first listen"; "the name will not be filtered"; "silence too is broadcast."

● The responsible air

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- What belongs to everyone is the easiest to loot.
- The word has roots; the rumor only wings.
- Verify before you fly it — and silence, too, is broadcast.

Breath as moral proof

The Question of the Air • वायु क प्रश्न — card 2 of 2

A song, or dust. Word-flags flutter around the stump; Bā: "a written thing that goes into the air can become a song; a lie that goes, becomes dust." In kabaddī the crossing voice appears "like a taut string — a lie breaks it, the name-watch makes it shine." A boy confesses mid-run — "an admitted breath does not break."

Breath on rent. The bud stirs a cosmic question — "how will the air be on the nameless planet?" Ira: "where air comes only from a machine, the word dies first; if we don't save the name in Earth's air, then on the nameless planet even breath will be got on rent." The air itself asks: "the thing you call breath, who will keep its watch?"

● The proving breath

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A truth in the air becomes song; a lie becomes dust.
- An admitted breath does not break in the crossing.
- Machine-rationed air makes the word — and breath — a rental.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 112

The Void of the Sky

आकाशक रिक्ति *Ākāśak Rikti*

"When the sky becomes empty, that is not relief — it is the greatest question."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The open sky as the largest vessel of listening

The whole sky demands an answer

The Void of the Sky · आकाशक रिक्ति — card 1 of 2

Fear, then a question. With the grove cut, the whole sky comes at once — "the small sky gives fear, the whole sky demands an answer." Emptiness is of two kinds: "the emptiness power makes swallows — a number for a name, a blank line for truth; the emptiness memory makes gives a place — left empty so someone can come."

What went up won't download. "No one holds a lease on the sky — to hear it, you must raise your neck." A rite is added: after each name, all look up, and the name rises into the sky's empty place. Chandrapal's data-grab fails: "what went up will not download" — "the sky gives neither erased proof, nor the certainty of escape."

● The unownable sky

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The whole sky presses a question the pieces never did.
- Power's emptiness swallows; memory's emptiness gives a place.
- What rises into the sky cannot be downloaded or erased.

The empty place waits

The Void of the Sky • आकाशक रिक्ति — card 2 of 2

A waiting place. Ananyā's empty place is "not an erased place, but a waiting place" — the sky as "the largest vessel of listening." Mīrā: "the sky's emptiness is also the place of the women whose story was suppressed inside the home"; that night they whisper their unspoken names up into the stars.

The drop that listens. On the dream-planet's artificial blue ceiling, spots fall — "the name's empty place." A dewdrop on the bud holds the whole inverted sky: "the sky is not far; the drop that listens, in it the sky descends." A blank space is left for "the next name," and a drum sounds from within the earth: "the sky heard, now the netherworld will answer."

● The waiting void

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The kept-empty place waits for a name, it does not erase one.
- The suppressed names rise into the open void above.
- The listening drop holds the whole sky within it.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 113

The Body of the Word

शब्दक देह *Śabdak Deha*

"The word too needs a body — a bodiless word gets lost in the air."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A word proves itself only when it comes down into action

A word needs a body

The Body of the Word • शब्दक देह — card 1 of 2

The lie's ready body. "A lie gets a body at once — file, seal, contract, tender, stage, donation-deed; but truth, if it does not come down into action, wanders bodiless, and the air carries it away." "The word's body is sweat, waiting, and the time spent hearing another's story."

The whole net of relationship. Writing "present" is not enough — you must be present; saying "justice" is not enough — you must cut the nexus of delay, caste, money, and fear. The children find the name's body is "not one thing, but the whole net of relationship" — stone, mouth, ear, and the time that stops for it.

● *The embodied word*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A lie is instantly embodied; truth must act to gain a body.
- The word's body is sweat, waiting, and time given to listen.
- The name's body is the whole net of its relationships.

The word without a body has a belly

The Body of the Word • शब्दक देह — card 2 of 2

Bodies for the words. Five words are given bodies: earth as "feet that bear the weight"; privacy as "a mirror — but whose hand holds it matters"; present as "an ear that gives time"; justice as "the smell of life, not only revenge"; name as "a stone that must return to a mouth, or it stays a monument, not life." Satyavrat: "a word's body without compassion is like a corpse."

Seek its body. A new rule: "no word accepted without a body." Ask the official "where is development's body?"; the trader "in whose hand is the reverence?"; the criminal "have you crossed the night of listening?" Then a bodiless word flashes — "contract." Būṛhbā: "seek the contract's body; if you don't find a body, you will find its belly" — for "a contract is written on whose bones, land, water, seed, and future."

● The bellied word

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A word made to protect the living, if it swallows them, is a crocodile.
- Demand the body behind every grand word.
- The bodiless "contract" has a belly — it is written on others' futures.



The Soul of the Meaning

अर्थक आत्मा *Arthak Ātmā*

"If the word's body survives but the meaning's soul is sold, the watch is incomplete."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The word's body survives, but its meaning is co-opted and sold

The word sold as a slogan

The Soul of the Meaning · अर्थक आत्मा — card 1 of 2

The eyes taken out. A "Present Campaign" prints the community's sacred words on banners and caps. The word is right, "but its eyes have been taken out — it answers no dead person, it only attracts a crowd; this is a word, but not my word." The same word sits in three places — "the dead's mouth holds tears, the government banner an account, the dream-planet's wall only emptiness."

Decoration, not heritage. "Meaning is in the thing the word touches"; Bā: "what a hand touches without trembling is not heritage, but decoration." Satyavrat: "those who hold rights over the word's body often loot the meaning's soul." Ananyā: "then the meaning-watch is ours."

● The hollowed word

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A word can keep its body while its soul is changed.
- Meaning lives in what the word touches, not the letters.
- Untrembling touch makes decoration, not heritage.

The court of reinterpretation

The Soul of the Meaning • अर्थक आत्मा — card 2 of 2

The positive image. A cap shows a whole green grove, not the cut stump — the wound hidden. Mīrā: "privacy was sold and called security; silence loaded and called dignity; now memory is polished and called heritage — this is the theft of meaning." Of justice: "if it chews years, the word remains, the meaning dies."

Renaming the crime. An official "reinterpretation" plan would rename "water-burial" as "water-heritage," "the dead" as "past-portion," "victim" as "stakeholder." Būṛhbā: "the murder of meaning has begun." Satyavrat rises: "when the criminal changes the word, justice must keep watch on language."

● *The renamed wound*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A "positive image" can bury the very wound it names.
- Justice that chews years keeps the word but kills the meaning.
- When the criminal renames the crime, justice guards the language.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 115

The Watch of the Throat

कण्ठक पहरा *Kaṇṭhak Paharā*

"The throat-watch is the hardest — what survives is the first to be sold."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The living voice cannot be caged and sold without consent

The voice is part of the body

The Watch of the Throat · कण्ठक पहरा — card 1 of 2

Storing is not hearing. A "Name-Voice Collection" device arrives, its fine print giving "sound-rights to the institution." "The voice is part of the body; becoming the air's does not make it nameless." "A box can hear, but its belly does not ache — storing and hearing are not the same."

Permission first. The rule answers it: "whoever reads a name will first hear; whoever hears will first take permission; whoever takes permission will first name their own greed." An old man refuses to re-read for the machine — "I will not fix my dead for a machine; a broken throat too gives full testimony" — and Ananyā: "clear weeping too is a voice."

● *The embodied voice*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The voice belongs to a body; the air does not make it nameless.
- A machine stores; only a living ear truly hears.
- A broken throat and even weeping give full testimony.

The ear of greed

The Watch of the Throat · कण्ठक पहरा — card 2 of 2

Weeping as goods. "Emotional sound is valuable, save it," a crook whispers; Devika names it: "weeping too is becoming valuable goods — when the voice is sold apart from the body, the dead becomes not nameless again, but goods." Satyavrat: "the present's right cannot be snatched in the name of the future; ownership over collective pain is injustice."

The belly that doesn't ache. Bā: "a name heard by the ear descends into the body; the box hears, the belly does not ache." The throat-watch is written — permission first, the living ear supreme — and the device is named "the ear of greed." Since the voice could not be caged, the next attack turns to writing and print.

● The refused device

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Selling the voice turns the dead into goods, not names.
- No future may seize the present's ownership of its own pain.
- The living ear is supreme; the machine only stores.



The Inheritance of Silence

मौनक उत्तराधिकार *Maunak Uttarādhikār*

"The name's enemy is not only the lying throat — sometimes it is the silence of the truthful."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Two silences — one to be named, one to be watched

Two kinds of silence

The Inheritance of Silence • मौनक उत्तराधिकार — card 1 of 2

Companion or bandage. "One silence saves power, another covers the soul; one is crime's companion, the other the wound's bandage; the first must be named, the second watched." Satyavrat: "when I could speak and didn't, that was a crime; but a victim's silence is a right — if this difference isn't understood, justice becomes a crocodile again."

The filled emptiness. An empty bowl is set out: "what was not said stays filled in it, and its weight is felt only by one who goes to lift it." Recognizing silence is itself a watch — "if a child hears only the speaking name, those silenced by fear, shame, caste, violence, or poverty are left out again."

● *The read silence*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Power's silence must be named; the wound's silence, watched.
- The complicit's silence is a crime; the victim's, a right.
- The empty bowl is full of all that was not said.

Silence cannot be stored

The Inheritance of Silence • मौनक उत्तराधिकार — card 2 of 2

Return the silence. Against a voice-troupe's plan for "enhanced presentation," a rule is carved in stone: "whoever's voice was snatched, first return their silence." "When a living person places their silence among us, it becomes a word — read not its letters, but its weight."

The throat within. A speechless girl draws lines on a leaf that become the kabaddī circle, and runs it "with the throat within" — no voice, breath held. The market's machines "cannot record silence"; in Lau's dream only an empty circle forms — "silence cannot be stored; where the market could sell sound, silence slipped from its hand." The next watch turns to the eye: "see, but do not eat."

● *The unstorable silence*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Restore a person's silence before restoring their voice.
- A living silence is a word — read its weight, not its letters.
- Silence cannot be stored or sold; it slips the market's hand.



The Debt of Memory

स्मृतिक ऋण *Smṛtik Ṛṇ*

"A heard name becomes a debt, and a debt has no funeral-rite — only repayment."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A heard name is a debt repaid by changed conduct, not flowers

A heard name is a debt

The Debt of Memory · स्मृतिक ऋण — card 1 of 2

A debt of gait. "A heard name becomes a debt, and a debt has no funeral-rite — only repayment." "A moneylender's debt bears interest; this debt bears gait — whoever heard must change their own walking." "A name without work is a stone; work without a name is air — both must be joined, then memory stands."

Straightening the ledger. Each heard name gets a bound task: beside a laborer's name, labor's dignity; beside a cheated youth's, a screen-caution; beside an insulted woman's, the privacy-watch; beside a caste-suppressed name, eating together. So the debt of memory "straightens the world's upside-down ledger" — where "the looter isn't written as the debtor, the dead is charged with the expense."

● *The debt of the name*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A heard name is a debt, cleared by changed conduct, not flowers.
- Join name to work; a stone and air alone cannot stand.
- The debt straightens a ledger written upside-down.

The tanner-woman's blank

The Debt of Memory • स्मृतिक ऋण — card 2 of 2

The absence made a name. For Gaṅgeśa's caste-suppressed "tanner-woman," whose full name was withheld, Mīrā leaves an honored blank: "make her absence the name; when it is found, fill it; but no one erase the blank." The memory-murder critique: "garlanding scripture's head is easy; a society that accepts Gaṅgeśa's intellect but cuts his life's inconvenience half-kills him — the knife hidden in the flower-garland."

Release for whom? A boy: "if dignity eats a name, it is no less than a crocodile." A "Memory-Debt Release Scheme" offers families an "honor-sum" to accept the official story. Ananyā: "did it come to free the debt, or to become its owner? — release for whom?" Satyavrat: "one who never understood it as a debt, their release-letter is a fraud."

● The honored blank

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A suppressed name is kept as a blank no one may erase.
- Honoring the mind while cutting the life is memory-murder.
- A buy-out from one who never felt the debt is a fraud.



The Right of the Body

देहक अधिकार *Dehak Adhikār*

"The name survived, the voice was heard — but without the body's right, all is half."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The first right over the body belongs to the body-bearer

The right of the body

The Right of the Body • देहक अधिकार — card 1 of 2

Not your exhibition. "The first right over the body is the body-bearer's." When the heritage-project lists "bone-like parts" and "women's memoirs" as collectibles, Mīrā refuses: "whose body went, their remains are not your exhibition." "One who doesn't write the body's name gets no right over the body's soil — the hand that touches without asking is a thief's, not a watchman's."

One lineage. "When another's claim over the body begins, caste, market, religion, camera, and law all look of one lineage." An old tanner-woman to the filming team: "write our hands, but first ask whom you give the right to touch us; who gave permission to earn from our insult?" The camera lowers.

● *The body's first right*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The body-bearer holds the first right over the body.
- The dead's remains are not an exhibition.
- Touching without asking is theft, not preservation.

The body-code

The Right of the Body • देहक अधिकार — card 2 of 2

Five rules. Ananyā writes a five-rule body-code: the body-bearer's first right; the dead's right with family, community, and dignity; caste-insult of the body is a memory-crime; no claim of research, art, religion, tourism, or revolution on a wound without permission; if the body cannot speak, the honor of its silence comes first.

Buried below the throne. "Society seats intellect on a throne and buries the body's story below." Collected soil, cloth, and bone are returned to the families — bathed "not in water, but first in the utterance of the name." An old caste-register opens by itself, asking "who will give proof of lineage?" — for "the name-watch is incomplete without the body-watch."

● *The body's charter*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A wound may not be claimed for research or tourism without consent.
- When the body cannot speak, its silence is honored first.
- Enthroning the intellect must not bury the body's story.



The Body of Labor

श्रमक देह *Śramak Deha*

"Labor's body is written on stone, but read by sweat."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Saving the dead's name while leaving the living laborer nameless

Where the master fears the name, he writes a number

The Body of Labor • श्रमक देह — card 1 of 2

A curtain over the name. "'Male 47, female 9' is not a count of humans — it is a curtain hung over the name; hiding the name does not kill the labor, it exposes the hider's fear." The widow of Jhagrū the mason, who fell building the pier but was written "absent from work": "the paper ate his presence."

The name behind the number. Gop's old sheets record gender but no name; Mīrā: "when you can write the body's sex, why not its name?" The children relabel the record — "unskilled" becomes "soil-knower," the muster-roll becomes "present" — for "the paper of names is not heavy; a nameless accident is heavy."

● *The hidden laborer*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A number is a curtain the master hangs over a feared name.
- Recording a body's sex but not its name is the hider's fear.
- The paper of names is light; a nameless accident is heavy.

A memorial without labor is a second crime

The Body of Labor • श्रमक देह — card 2 of 2

Seated apart. Bhagelū Pāswān's father built the bridge but was kept from the cooking-water by caste: "the bridge was built to join all, but its builders were seated apart under its own shade." The children write: "Navya-Nyāya's first lesson — the body's labor is not lower by caste."

Respect, not worship. Satyavrat questions the heritage job-offer — a contract with the name? wages on time? treatment if injured? — and rules: "saving the dead's name while leaving the living laborer nameless is not a memorial, but a second crime." The children wash the laborers' cracked feet — "not worship, which would make labor an idol again, only respect for exhaustion" — and set a blank stone for "one who works, but is not seen."

● *The named labor*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The body's labor is not lower by caste.
- A memorial that leaves the living laborer nameless is a second crime.
- Honor exhaustion without turning labor into an idol.



The Body of Justice

न्यायक देह *Nyāyak Deha*

"Justice's body is like a bud — soft, but it rises breaking the soil."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Justice given a body of clay, an ear, and an open chest

Justice must have a body

The Body of Justice • न्यायक देह — card 1 of 2

Idol or body. "All these days justice stayed in paper, in a seal, in the date's page; justice without a body becomes the crocodile's food again." "An idol demands worship — bow and move on; a body demands responsibility — you must stand before it." An old laborer-woman: "if justice wants a body, it must bear the smell of sweat too."

A journey of bodies. The families touch the old bridge-map wherever their people's feet fell — "the bridge's line becomes not a road, but a journey of bodies." A clay body of justice is kneaded from five griefs and pressed with the laborers' palms — bangles, cracked fingers, burnt skin — and even the erring engineer's hand: "if the mistake's hand won't mend, justice's body will be lopsided."

● *The embodied justice*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An idol wants worship; a body wants responsibility.
- Perfumed justice often comes to cover a rotten body.
- Even the erring hand must help mend justice's body.

Justice can weep

The Body of Justice • न्यायक देह — card 2 of 2

The ear on the soil. Satyavrat presses his ear to the soil — "the ear of hearing was added to justice's body." Bā: "it won't walk, it'll hear; whoever hears will teach the people to walk." The media is turned away — "this scene is not for consumption" — and the chest is left open: "names will settle again and again; justice's chest should be an open house, not a permanent decoration."

The crack. Bronze casting, tickets, and a digital idol are refused — "can you bear this body's smell?"; "if justice's body is sold in a screen, the crocodile returns." When a blank stone touches the clay chest, a crack forms; the potter: "a crack is not bad — if justice stays without a crack, how will the inner voice come out?" A dewdrop emerges: "justice's body can weep."

● *The weeping justice*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Justice listens before it acts; hearing teaches the walk.
- Justice's chest is an open house, not a decoration for sale.
- A crack is not a flaw — it lets justice weep and live.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 121

The Cage of Caste

जातिक पिंजरा *Jātik Piñjarā*

"The cage's bars are not of iron, but of habit — and habit shines brighter in the morning sun."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The invisible wall built around a living person's breath

The cage of habit

The Cage of Caste • जातिक पिंजरा — card 1 of 2

A wall called tradition. The cage's bars are "lineage, gotra, kitchen, marriage, touch, cremation, and food, with scripture's lock." "What society calls tradition is often an invisible wall built around a living person's breath — calling a wall tradition doesn't stop it being a wall; it only changes its name." Gaṅgeśa's question: "caste is not inference, but accusation; birth is not proof, but a cage; touch is not a fault, but the politics of fear."

The unheard throat. The tanner-woman rises as history's unheard throat: "one who called me impure by touch wore shoes made by my labor to go on pilgrimage; one who rejected me in marriage sought proof in the book of justice — tell me, who needs the proof?"

● *The habit-cage*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Caste's bars are habit; calling a wall tradition only renames it.
- Caste is accusation, not inference; touch is fear, not fault.
- The one called impure made the very shoes worn to the temple.

Caste is made by man, not soil

The Cage of Caste • जातिक पिंजरा — card 2 of 2

The same mud. A laborer's youth and a Brahmin elder press their hands into the same stump-mud — no purification, no water, no caste asked; both palms tighten with the same roughness. Bā: "the grove's body-grains give all the same color; caste is made by man, not by soil." The elder's eyes moisten — for the first time he sees his cage's bars.

Hear the name first. The new lesson: "before asking caste, hear the name; before claiming purity, see the labor; before writing justice, accept the touch." "When society cages a thinker's inconvenient life in an idol of honor, that is memory-murder." Baṭuknāth's secret letter to limit the matter turns black, one word growing on it — "touch."

● *The made cage*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The soil colors all hands alike; only man makes caste.
- Hear the name and see the labor before you ask the lineage.
- Caging a life inside an idol of honor is memory-murder.



Gaṅgeśa's Liberation

गंगेशक मुक्ति *Gaṅgeśak Mukti*

"Liberation comes not from a book, but from the return of the right to ask a question."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Freedom as the returned right to ask a question

Liberation is the right to ask

Gaṅgeśa's Liberation · गंगेशक मुक्ति — card 1 of 2

The crown and the knife. "Society puts a crown on a thinker's head and presses the inconvenience of his life beneath it — the book survives, the man is lost; this isn't called murder, but the nerve stays cut." To the three proofs the children add a fourth circle, "suppressed life": "if society accepts only the proof that saves its cage, justice stays incomplete."

One sentence of his life. The tanner-woman becomes "a full human awaiting a name." The question flashes twelve thousand fine lines within the stump; Bā: "one who writes twelve-thousand-books-worth, read even one sentence of his life."

● The freed question

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Liberation is the returned right to ask, not a book.
- A crown of honor can hide a knife cutting the life beneath.
- Proof that only saves the cage leaves justice incomplete.

Who owns the language of proof

Gaṅgeśa's Liberation · गंगेशक मुक्ति — card 2 of 2

Honor-murder. "In the name of preserving Gaṅgeśa's honor, his caste-breaking life was cut and a tidy idol made — memory's nerve cut." The story names the sanitizing tradition (Ramanath Jha, Udaychandra Jha 'Ashok') as its own question, not accusation: "to enthrone one and press his humanity underfoot is the caste-cage's whitest violence."

The guard at proof's door. Satyavrat: "if a caste-guard sits at proof's door, truth is killed before reaching inside — the real question is who owns the language of proof." The four keys: "perception without compassion is darkness; inference without humility is arrogance; word without responsibility is violence; justice without memory is incomplete." "One who fears the question is not the authority of justice."

● The owned proof

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Sanitizing a life into a tidy idol is honor-murder.
- The real question is who owns the language of proof.
- One who fears the question is not the authority of justice.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 123

The Leaf of the Tattvacintāmaṇi

तत्त्वचिन्तामणिक पात *Tattvacintāmaṇik Pāt*

"The Tattvacintāmaṇi's leaf is harder than paper — for logic is written on it, not fear."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The four doors of proof, and the leaf read by question, not by eye

The four doors of proof

The Leaf of the Tattvacintāmaṇi • तत्त्वचिन्तामणिक पात — card 1 of 2

The un-discussed fourth. The children map four soil-circles of proof — perception, inference, word, and non-apprehension. "Everyone discusses the first three; no one the fourth, for it asks where the un-found went and whom it suited." A leaf read "not by the eye, but by the question."

Power wearing the mask of word. "Caste's arrogance is not perceptible, its violence is." "A word that shows a man low is not word, but power." And a book that does not teach a man to see "is not twelve thousand, not even half a leaf's worth — the weight is the infinity of its questions, not the heaviness of its pages."

● *The doors of proof*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Non-apprehension asks where the un-found went, and whom it suited.
- Caste's arrogance is unseen; its violence is plain.
- A word that lowers a man is not word, but power.

The infinite leaf

The Leaf of the Tattvacintāmaṇi • तत्त्वचिन्तामणिक पात — card 2 of 2

From what is not found. The hardest door is non-apprehension: "from what is not found, truth too is born — the tanner-woman's full name not found is itself the proof that society's justice is incomplete." The leaves multiply beyond counting; Bā: "twelve-thousand-books-worth means the questions are infinite, not the pages heavy."

Proof's doorman. Two "Gaṅgeśa Study Council" scholars come to "scientifically edit" the tale; Ira: "proof needs a doorman — who? the caste-convenient? the name-eraser?" The leaf's shadow writes: "whoever was erased, their question remains." The tanner-woman's voice: "justice stays incomplete until the question gets a body" — for "the right to ask a question is part of the name-watch."

● *The unfound name*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- What cannot be found is itself proof of an incomplete justice.
- Guarding proof's door is where the powerful erase the weak.
- The right to ask is part of the name-watch.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 124

The Fire of Proof

प्रमाणक अग्नि *Pramāṇak Agni*

"In the fire of proof there is less burning, more light — what is true is refined and comes forth."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The fire that burns the comfort of the lie, not the body

The garland that becomes a noose

The Fire of Proof · प्रमाणक अग्नि — card 1 of 2

Two murders. "Society says 'we consider you great,' but cuts away the very thing that makes a man human — a garland is a garland only until it tightens on the neck." "Killing the body: blood flows, people see; killing the memory: one line is cut, no one sees — but what was in it never comes again."

Whose proof? On the leaf, letters shift — "proof" becomes "whose proof?", "justice" becomes "whose justice?" "When caste binds proof, justice goes blind." "Caste marks the body; soil makes all bodies its equal dust."

● The refining fire

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A garland of praise can be a noose that cuts the man out.
- Memory-murder cuts one line, unseen, and it never returns.
- Caste marks the body; the soil equalizes all as one dust.

Proof is more than the text

The Fire of Proof · प्रमाणक अग्नि — card 2 of 2

The wider proof. Satyavrat writes: "proof is not only the written text — oral memory, suppressed life, cut lines, caste-silence, and the people's pain too." Editing hands surface — one cutting the inconvenient line, one placing the book's garland; Ananyā: "immortal whom — him, or your caste's pleasing idol?"

Stay where life is inconvenient. The new lesson: "where life is inconvenient, stay longer; if a great name comes with its cut portion, read the cut portion first." "Gaṅgeśa's liberation comes not from the book, but from accepting his whole life" — and the tale turns to search for the erased woman's name.

● The whole life

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Proof includes suppressed life and cut lines, not just the text.
- Read the cut portion of a great name first.
- Liberation is accepting the whole life, not worshipping the book.



The Rice of Decision

निर्णयक धान *Nirṇayak Dhān*

"If a decision is planted like rice, its ear too bows down to give testimony."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A decision that must grow into food, an equal seat, and a name

The soil grows a decision

The Rice of Decision • निर्णयक धान — card 1 of 2

Until it reaches the plate. "A court writes a decision, but the soil grows one; a written decision stays locked in the page, a grown one reaches the plate — until then, it is only language." The proof's ash — "of the suppressed, the called-false, the caste-outcast, the killed-for-love, the memory-erased-for-honor" — is sown in the field caste once denied.

A paper grain. "If after justice hunger stays as it was, if the caste-cage stays, if a name keeps going nameless, then the decision is a paper grain — unplanted, uneaten." The tanner-woman-elder is honored on the ridge: "the soil speaks through your palm, so to you too."

● *The grown decision*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A written decision is language until it reaches the plate.
- Justice that leaves hunger and the cage is an unplanted grain.
- The one caste lowered holds the soil's own voice.

Co-proof

The Rice of Decision • निर्णयक धान — card 2 of 2

Not wife, but co-proof. The children rewrite the tanner-woman from "wife" to "co-proof" — "proof's other half; without the co-proof, Navya-Nyāya is incomplete." Satyavrat, a fistful of rice in his trembling hand: "if a decision doesn't become food, an equal seat, or the right to a name, it is not justice, but the language of the system."

The boundary as a game. Ananyā crosses the caste-line on a kabaddī breath to take seed from the elder's hand — "a boundary that justice stops at, turn it into a game." The plough is held in turns across caste. Bā: "the ear of rice is heavier than justice; when it bows, the decision has borne fruit." The register reads only: "today justice descended into the field."

● The planted justice

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The erased woman is co-proof; without her the philosophy is incomplete.
- A decision that is not food, seat, and name is only system-language.
- Turn the boundary justice stops at into a game to cross it.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 126

The Justice of Grain

अन्नक न्याय *Annak Nyāy*

"The justice of grain is decided not on the plate, but on the field-ridge."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Justice's first body is grain — a share, not charity

Charity or a share

The Justice of Grain • अन्नक न्याय — card 1 of 2

A sentence, or rice. "Before a hungry belly all scripture is incomplete, all constitution incomplete, all proof incomplete — a justice that did not become rice is only a sentence." "Charity is rice thrown from above, the giver stays above; a share is rice eaten sitting together, both in the same row."

The grower's name first. A "hunger-register" is opened — "the hungry need not charity, but a share" — and the schemes are refused: a donor-plaque fund, a "digital grain-pass," and memory-less foreign seed. Ananyā: "not the giver's name first; the one who grew it, cut it, carried it, and the hungry — their names first."

● The shared grain

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A justice that never becomes rice is only a sentence.
- Charity keeps the giver above; a share seats both in one row.
- Name the grower and the hungry before the donor.

No purity greater than hunger

The Justice of Grain • अन्नक न्याय — card 2 of 2

Member, not poor. A communal granary makes whoever eats a "member," not "poor" — "the body's dignity begins with the plate." The caste-question dissolves over one grain; Bā: "eat; if this grain spoils your lineage, the lineage is very weak." The old pandit weeps: "there is no purity greater than hunger."

Hunger testifies. The empty plate itself gives evidence — "a long sound that settles not in the ear, but in the chest, like being hungry oneself." Satyavrat: "till today I wrote the dead's name; now I will write the living hunger's name."

● *The named hunger*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The one who eats is a member, not a beggar.
- There is no purity greater than hunger.
- The empty plate is itself the proof.



The Name of Hunger

भूखक नाम *Bhūkhak Nām*

"An empty plate is heavier than a full granary — in it, hunger's name speaks."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Living hunger comes out of the room of shame into a public right

Naming living hunger

The Name of Hunger • भूखक नाम — card 1 of 2

Harder than the dead's name. "Writing the dead's name is hard; writing living hunger's name is harder — the dead don't resist; living hunger feels shame, hides, and blames its own body." The hunger-names: "the hearth's fast," "hunger to save father's voice," "the holiday's hunger."

The belly stopped by lineage. A high-caste widow won't stretch her hand — "my household would say, lineage lost"; Bā: "a lineage that silences a daughter in hunger is already lost." Ananyā, to the man hiding his poverty at the back of the line: "saying you are hungry is not an insult."

● *The named shame*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Living hunger hides and blames itself; naming it frees it.
- A lineage that shames a daughter's hunger is already lost.
- To say you are hungry is not an insult.

The grain of right

The Name of Hunger • भूखक नाम — card 2 of 2

Right, not charity. "Not charity's name, but the grain of right." A trader offers sacks for a name-plaque; Ananyā: "the plaque will be of hunger, not of the sack-giver." The communal kitchen is "the partnership of hunger, not the picture of hunger" — no photographs of the eaters.

A granary is built to be emptied. Bā: "a full granary and a hungry village is injustice — a granary is built to be emptied"; the children write, "keeping grain moving is dharma." One grain is left in the plate: "never call hunger fully ended; while one grain remains, we will not drop the watch."

● *The moving grain*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The relief is a right shared, not a charity displayed.
- A full granary beside a hungry village is injustice.
- One grain kept means the watch is never dropped.



The Name of Thirst

प्यासक नाम *Pyāsak Nām*

"Thirst too needs a name — without a name, thirst is only a statistic."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Water carried a caste; thirst's silence was endured the longest

Water has a caste

The Name of Thirst • प्यासक नाम — card 1 of 2

Silence endured longest. "Hunger makes noise, thirst stays silent — and because of its silence it is endured longer." "On water, society sets not pity but a claim of ownership — whose well, whose ghat, whose pitcher, whose caste." Thirst's names: "the stopped throat," "the separate vessel."

A dry throat asks nothing. "One forbidden to touch is easily forbidden to drink; and one forbidden to drink, even their voice dries up — for from a dry throat no question rises." Mīrā: "without the body's right, there is no water-right."

● The caste of water

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Thirst is endured longest because it stays silent.
- Society claims ownership of water, not pity for it.
- A dry throat cannot raise a question.

The well breathes

The Name of Thirst • प्यासक नाम — card 2 of 2

One line. "This well's history and the nameless planet's future are on one line" — caste stops water on Earth, capital on the planet, "a foreign hand on thirst's throat." A "water-donation for a name" app is exposed: "this is thirst's mule account."

Draw till it clears. "Opening the well too is punishment." The old woman whose mother's pitcher was broken draws the first, muddy bucket; Bā: "at first water comes muddy, like memory — keep drawing, it will clear." At the communal water-reading each says "I share the thirst," spilling a palmful "for those not allowed to drink" — for "the watch of thirst stays incomplete until all the earth's wells, rivers, ponds, and tears are free."

● *The freed water*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Caste stops water on Earth; capital would sell it on the planet.
- Opening the shut well is itself a form of justice.
- Muddy at first like memory, the water clears as you keep drawing.



The Oath of Salt

नूनक शपथ *Nūnak Śapath*

"The oath of salt is the oldest — from a mother's milk to a laborer's sweat, one and the same taste."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The oldest oath — one taste from mother's milk to laborer's sweat

One taste, many insults

The Oath of Salt • नूनक शपथ — card 1 of 2

Salt in every body. "Mithila has no sea, yet salt is in every body — the mother's milk, the laborer's sweat, the woman's tears, and the dead body's last dampness; it is one taste." "One in taste, many in insult — the hand that makes the bread, its salt is pure on the tongue, its pitcher-hand impure; the purity-claim is the theft of labor."

Walking on his salt. A Dalit elder: "the bread my hand made was eaten by those who wouldn't drink water in my courtyard." A laborer's brother, of the man who fell building the pier: "his sweat is on the iron pier; those who cross the bridge walk on his salt."

● The salt of the body

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- One salt, one taste, in every body — milk, sweat, tears.
- The purity-claim is repeatedly the theft of labor.
- Those who cross the bridge walk on the fallen laborer's salt.

Salt becomes the taste of the oath

The Oath of Salt • नूनक शपथ — card 2 of 2

Shared, not sold. A "memory-salt" product is refused — "will it hold Ujjwal's mother's half-cooked lentils, the laborer's sweat, the Dalit elder's question? if not, it is market-salt, not memory-salt." From that day salt is shared, not sold.

The living oath. A simple oath: "the salt I eat, I won't forget its labor; the tears I see, I won't mock their taste; the name I hear, I won't make a product; the bread I share, I won't keep caste in its line." Ananyā: "salt asks for no oath; salt becomes the taste of the oath." Būṛhbā: "one who has known the taste of salt will take a while to leave the earth."

● The tasted oath

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Memory sold as a product loses the taste that made it real.
- The oath is a way of living, not a formality.
- Salt asks no oath — it becomes the oath's taste on the tongue.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 130

The Justice of Taste

स्वादक न्याय *Svādak Nyāy*

"If the taste seems changed, know it — justice has descended onto the tongue."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The body remembers what taste it got, and what was snatched

The plate as record

The Justice of Taste • स्वादक न्याय — card 1 of 2

Hunger has no caste. "The body remembers what taste it got, what was snatched, and what it was made to believe was false." "A dignity that asks hunger its caste is not dignity, but the body's insult." At the communal meal a name is said before each morsel — "the meal becomes not a ritual, but the body's record; taste becomes the smallest and densest proof of memory."

Whose sweat in the wrapper? "Memory-feast" packets — labelled "memory-salt," "water-burial greens" — are refused, their smell artificial: "whose taste is this? who was hungry? whose labor's sweat is in this wrapper?"

● *The remembered taste*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The body records what taste it was given and denied.
- Asking hunger its caste is the body's insult, not dignity.
- A taste sold as a packet has lost the labor inside it.

The justice of serving

The Justice of Taste • स्वादक न्याय — card 2 of 2

The one who serves last. The women who "serve everyone and eat what is left" prompt a rule: "the justice of taste is incomplete without the justice of serving" — whoever cooks tastes first, whoever serves sits in the line. Satyavrat takes the last plate: "after all whose names were eaten, whose grain was snatched" — his rank goes back, his body comes into the line.

Memory returns through smell. The leaves are buried in the soil, each marked with a single letter — "whoever digs the leaf must complete the word." A mark in the ash turns the watch toward smell: "taste stays on the tongue, but memory returns through smell — whose kitchen burned, their name comes first as a smell."

● The served justice

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Justice of taste is incomplete without justice of serving.
- The one who cooks tastes first; the one who serves sits down.
- Taste stays on the tongue; memory returns through smell.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 131

The Shared Plate

साझा थारी *Sājhā Thārī*

"The salt of the shared plate takes the same color on every tongue."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Eating in one line — the hardest test of justice

Touch and stay

The Shared Plate • साझा थाली — card 1 of 2

The wires shine at mealtime. "Hearing hunger-thirst stories separately is easy; eating in one plate is hard — however broken the caste-cage, its wires shine again at mealtime." "In kabaddī you touch and return; at the plate you touch and stay — there the difference between game and life begins."

Fear: lineage; hunger: human. Bā to a hesitating Brahmin: "you who accept Gaṅgeśa in scripture, fear his life?" His two lines are recorded — "fear: lineage" and "hunger: human" — and greens and jaggery are exchanged across years of distance.

● The one line

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The caste-cage's wires shine brightest at the shared meal.
- At the plate you touch and stay, unlike the game's touch-and-run.
- Beneath the fear of lineage is the human's plain hunger.

The fear that must be named

The Shared Plate • साझा थाली — card 2 of 2

Name the one who could not sit. The women held back by home-fear name it — "home," "shame," "the daughter's marriage," "the village's mouth" — and are recorded, not blamed: "if justice doesn't write the incomplete fear, the next generation will take that fear as dharma."

The same taste on one earth. Satyavrat takes the last plate — "the mouth that read law must first learn the equality of food" — his rank melting between two bodies. The leftover grains are "offering, not waste," mixed into the soil. "Liberation is not only hearing a name, but the capacity to take the same taste on the same earth."

● *The named fear*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Record the fear of those who could not sit, without blame.
- Unwritten fear is passed down as dharma to the next generation.
- Liberation is sharing the same taste on the same earth.



The Republic of the Kitchen

रसोइक गणराज्य *Rasoik Gaṇarājya*

"Where the plate is shared, fear is halved."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A shared plate is not a shared kitchen — caste must break at the hearth

A shared plate is not a shared kitchen

The Republic of the Kitchen • रसोइक गणराज्य — card 1 of 2

The fire inside the home. "A shared plate does not make a shared kitchen — a kitchen where caste stays tied, its plate's sharing is only a festival." "The fire inside the home is no less cruel than the court outside" — the hand that ploughs is called impure, and "the woman who fills everyone's belly all day, her own hunger is asked last."

Each thing tells its story. Every ingredient carries its tale — the flood-widow's chiuṛā, the tanner-youth's greens, the Brahmin elder's ghī poured in "as the acceptance of shame, not apology." Sāumya: "no camera in the kitchen — this scene is to be lived, not watched."

● *The unshared hearth*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A shared plate over a caste-bound kitchen is only a festival.
- The home's fire can be as cruel as the court outside.
- The kitchen is to be lived, not filmed as a spectacle.

Whoever scrubs, their hand is pure

The Republic of the Kitchen • रसोइक गणराज्य — card 2 of 2

No work is low. The men are assigned cutting, grinding, and scrubbing; Āruṇi: "one who can build a bridge, why can't he wash a colander?" Mīrā's rule: "no one's work is called low." The nameless stone is served first — "first eats the one whose name is written nowhere."

The real test at the sink. The true test hides at the dish-washing: those who claimed high caste take the ash and scrubbing — "one who can't scrub a dish can't write justice." The kitchen-constitution: "whoever eats, cooks; whoever cooks, eats; whoever eats, scrubs; whoever scrubs, their hand is pure."

● *The kitchen's charter*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- No hand's labor is low; the bridge-builder can wash the pot.
- The one whose name is nowhere is served first.
- Whoever eats cooks and scrubs; the scrubbing hand is pure.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 133

The Call of the Videha Drama Festival

विदेह नाट्य उत्सवक बुलाहट *Videha Nāṭya Utsavak Bulāhaṭ*

"The answer to a call is given not with a drum, but with preparation."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The story is invited to the stage — and must keep its breath

Give the chapters breath

The Call of the Videha Drama Festival • विदेह नाट्य उत्सवक बुलाहट — card 1 of 2

Not a summary. A festival invites Gaṛh Nārikel to the stage. Ananyā refuses a mere synopsis: "a summary is like the crocodile — it chews the body and leaves the bone; drama needs a body, so give the chapters breath." "The real character is breath — whose breath broke, their name was sought; whose name was found, they were called present."

Only breath-holders act. The kabaddī players — who touched the breath-line between Earth and the nameless planet — become the actors: "only those who can hold their breath will act." The old chapters become "acts," each with a scene, a name, a pause, and a breath.

● *The breathing story*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A summary leaves only the bone; drama must keep the body.
- The true protagonist is breath — the found name is "present."
- Only those who can hold their breath are fit to act.

Don't make the villain a clown

The Call of the Videha Drama Festival • विदेह नाट्य उत्सवक बुलाहट — card 2 of 2

The crime stays heavy. "Don't turn the villain into a clown; making him a clown makes the crime light, and the audience laughs and goes home." Baṭuknāth's part goes to a quiet player who lowers his eyes "so the audience sees when the law's foot slips"; Chandrapal is played "not as a fraud, but the emptiness inside a man who became one."

The washed stage. The drama's rules: no grief shown without permission; the nameless get the first seat; the foreign audience hears first and claims to understand later. Water sits center-stage — "whoever enters will first say the name of their reflection." Būṛhbā: "if the root is true, the leaves become names, not applause."

● The honest stage

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Caricaturing the villain makes the crime light and forgettable.
- No one's grief is staged without their consent.
- Wash the stage — enter only by naming your own reflection.



The Play-Text of the Kabaddī Players

कबड्डी खेलनिहार सभक नाट्य-पाठ *Kabaḍḍī Khelanihār Sabhak Nāṭya-Pāṭh*

"Before learning the play-text, the kabaddī players learn to count their breath."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The whole story rewritten as a play whose hero is breath

Not audience, but witness

The Play-Text of the Kabaddi Players • कबड्डी खेलनिहार सभक नाट्य-पाठ — card 1 of 2

Present, not ghosts. The drama is named "Pahrā" (The Watch); its hero is breath. "The dead are not made into ghosts to frighten — they are called present; and the fraud is given the inner emptiness, not the villain's outer color."

The one who lifts the weight. The pivotal edit: "not audience, but witness — one who sits and watches is an audience; one who watches and lifts the weight is a witness." No caste is written before any name: "caste is not a character, it is a cage — the cage will hang empty on the stage."

● *The watching witness*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The dead are called present, not turned into ghosts.
- A witness lifts the weight; an audience only watches.
- Caste is not a character but an empty, hanging cage.

Whoever has breath left, their story is left

The Play-Text of the Kabaddi Players • कबड्डी खेलनिहार सभक नाट्य-पाठ — card 2 of 2

The whole story replayed. The scenes recap the novel — the yellow notice "leaking sweat, not fire"; Gaṅgeśa's question descending as light ("life without justice, dead logic"); the memorial-app coin blackening; the nameless planet's numbers; the elephant-crocodile finale where "the children pull the elephant not by hand, but by name," each name loosening the blind jaw.

Earth again. In the finale a new bud is set out; the frauds may touch it only after writing their own name without greed. On the last line, Bā: "whoever has breath left, their story is left" — "kabaddī moved from the earth's circle into memory's orbit." Ananyā: "today the story became a play-text; tomorrow it will demand a body."

● *The unending game*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The elephant is freed by the name, not the gripping hand.
- The fraud may touch the new bud only by naming himself honestly.
- Whoever has breath left, their story is left — the game only changes form.



The Staging of the Videha Drama Festival

विदेह नाट्य उत्सवक मंचन *Videha Nāṭya Utsavak Mañcan*

"When memory climbs the stage, the calendar loses."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The play performed — the audience becomes witnesses

When memory climbs the stage, the calendar loses

The Staging of the Videha Drama Festival • विदेह नाट्य उत्सवक मंचन — card 1 of 2

No high, no low. "A date can be eaten by paper, but a name that has entered the throat, no year-count can erase." No red curtain, only a round field: "where the story of the name is played, there's no high-low between stage and audience — the moment a height forms, the watcher and the sufferer separate, and the story becomes a spectacle."

A runner of the name. The villains are shown truthfully, not comically — Baṭuknāth's book of dry-leaf questions, Chandrapal's screen showing his own incomplete name, Lau's "where is my name?" "Acting is not a lie if it gives the suppressed truth a body to walk — the player becomes a runner of the name."

● *The staged memory*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A name in the throat outlives every calendar.
- A raised stage splits the watcher from the sufferer.
- Honest acting lets suppressed truth walk on its own feet.

Applause must be stopped

The Staging of the Videha Drama Festival • विदेह नाट्य उत्सवक मंचन — card 2 of 2

A collective lung. In the finale each kabaddī catch is remembrance, not violence — "when a breath breaks, the whole field joins their breath." The children withhold the applause: "applause is the end of a performance; the night that must not end, its applause must be stopped."

The village begins. The audience takes over — "in my home too there's a name that wasn't in the play" — and the stage expands into the people's throats. Bā: "the root watched the play; when the root accepts the staging, the story returns to the soil." The play returns into the novel, "not tired, but more full of breath."

● *The unended night*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The game becomes a collective lung sharing one breath.
- Applause ends a show; this night was not meant to end.
- Where the play ends, the village's own telling begins.



The Silence After the Applause

तालीक बादक सन्नाटा *Tālīk Bādak Sannāṭā*

"The price of real acting is not applause — it is the silence after the applause."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The real reward is the weight that stays after the clapping

The silence is the real reward

The Silence After the Applause • तालीक बादक सन्नाटा — card 1 of 2

Pain rings for justice. "When applause is struck on people's pain, the listener must be careful — pain rings not for praise, but for justice." The actors carry a guilt-after-acting — the elephant-player's gripping hand, the lawyer-player washing his face: "the character's soot doesn't leave even after acting ends."

Come forward. The director's thank-you sticks in his throat: "I won't comment; let all whose names were left out come forward." A woman asks after her living daughter whom the home won't name; Ananyā: "one whose name was silenced is no less than a dead person; write it."

● *The weighted silence*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Pain applauded must make the listener more careful, not proud.
- A played character's guilt clings after the acting ends.
- A silenced name is no less than a dead one — write it.

The river's authorship

The Silence After the Applause • तालीक बादक सन्नाटा — card 2 of 2

The banks of many villages. An unscripted second performance begins as the audience adds names — "however much of the story was told, that much remains." Ira: "the story from water-burial, its authorship is like a river; the banks belong to many villages, yet the river flows, undivided."

The right stays in the hand. Mīrā guards it: "open-space doesn't mean anyone breaks anyone's privacy — the drama may be the people's, but the right to the body and the memory stays in the individual's hand." "Videha" is redefined: "crossing beyond the body and returning to the body's dignity." The 132 acts became "not a story now, but a seed."

● *The flowing story*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Shared authorship flows like a river, undivided among its banks.
- The body's and memory's right stays with the individual.
- Where the drama ends, the village begins.



The Testimony of the Spectator

दर्शकक गवाही *Darśakak Gavāhī*

"When the spectator becomes a witness, the drama does not stop even when the curtain falls."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The watcher becomes a witness and confesses their own share

When the spectator becomes a witness

The Testimony of the Spectator • दर्शकक गवाही — card 1 of 2

Who sat in the chair. "The curtain covers the stage, not the story that entered the watcher." "In a role a person becomes another; in a name he can't flee himself — the real question is not who became what on stage, but who was sitting in the chair."

Small crimes, one jaw. Spectators confess their own share — the clerk who hid the laborers' real count, the ad-writer whose words drew money from the fearful ("language too has teeth"). "Small crimes together make a big crocodile — someone stopped a marriage over caste, someone stayed silent, someone said 'not my family's matter' and withdrew."

● *The witnessing watcher*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The curtain hides the stage, not the story that entered you.
- A role lets you be another; your name does not.
- Small withdrawals together form one devouring jaw.

Not a role, but your own name

The Testimony of the Spectator • दर्शकक गवाही — card 2 of 2

The name of the silence. "No person is only one name — but the name-watch is necessary, for staying nameless one becomes a lie again." People write not their name but the name of their silence — "fear," "greed," "caste," "shame": "these are not reasons, but names; don't hide behind the reason."

People's-writing. "If the spectator doesn't testify, the drama stays half" — so the next act adds the spectators' testimony, "not a role, but their own name." Mīrā guards it: "whoever's testimony was given, its owner is the witness; the stage is only its servant." The story rises "from the stage to become people's-writing."

● *The named witness*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A person is never only one name, yet must not stay nameless.
- Name your silence; do not hide behind the reason for it.
- The witness owns the testimony; the stage only serves it.



The Procession Beyond the Stage

मंचसँ बाहरक जुलूस *Mañcasā Bāharak Julūs*

"The procession that came out of the stage, no hall could pull back inside."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The drama spills out of the hall into homes and across the sea

A crowd can be controlled, testimony cannot

The Procession Beyond the Stage · मंचसँ बाहरक जुलूस — card 1 of 2

Acting as truth's servant. "If the court becomes a drama, justice dies; if a drama becomes a court, memory speaks — in the first, truth is called acting; in the second, acting becomes truth's servant." "A crowd stays before the stage; testimony steps off the stage and settles in the people's homes."

The color won't wash off. Testimony spreads to the tea-shop and bus-stand; an actor keeps his ghost face-paint on: "till my father's name is fully written, this color won't wash off." The register's third question to each spectator: "where will this story go with you?"

● *The spreading testimony*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A crowd can be managed; testimony that entered a home cannot.
- A drama-as-court lets acting serve the truth.
- The witness carries the story home, not out of the hall.

As much as you print, that much is left out

The Procession Beyond the Stage • मंचसँ बाहरक जुलूस — card 2 of 2

Permission before print. Mīrā guards the page — "private testimony won't go outside the stage; permission before printing" — and Devika: "don't sell a piece of grief; hear the full context." The tribute-app is blocked by the constitution's line: "the name won't be sold." Satyavrat, at the empty stage: "the right of testimony is older than the court."

Print the admission. Ira's rule: "as much as you print, that much is left out; but what's left out must be printed as an admission — else the printed page itself becomes a new silence." A letter from the diaspora children signals the procession crossing the sea: "we too will play the drama, but first we'll hear the names."

● *The honest page*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Ask permission before printing; grief is not sold in pieces.
- The right to testify is older than the court.
- Admit what is left out, or the page becomes a new silence.



The Theatre of the Road

बाटक रंगमंच *Bāṭak Raṅgamañc*

"The story that stepped onto the road needs no stage and no ticket — only an ear that listens."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- On the road no one looks big or small in the day's equal light

The theatre of the road

The Theatre of the Road • बाटक रंगमंच — card 1 of 2

The day's equal light. "On the stage the light falls from above; on the road the light is only what the day gives — and in that equal light no one looks big, no one small." The market and bus-stand become stages; the conductor reads: "the name not on the ticket, is he not a passenger? the name not entered in life, is he not a human?"

The wall's answer. At the court-verandah a girl holds a blank page: "one whose life was suppressed, in which column is their proof?" The old wall sheds a little lime — "the wall's answer." A medicine-shopkeeper confesses profiteering; Mīrā: "the first breath of testimony can begin with a fault, but it won't end there."

● *The road as stage*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The road's equal light makes no one big and no one small.
- A name absent from the ledger still belongs to a human.
- Testimony may begin in fault, but does not end there.

A name stopped becomes fire

The Theatre of the Road • बाटक रंगमंच — card 2 of 2

No center to attack. "One who reads a name does not go to incite; but if the sound of a name is stopped, it can become fire — power knows this well." The children: "we don't incite, we read names." "When society speaks without a center, the map of conspiracy blurs — no master, no single leader, no account; to whom is the message sent?"

Out of the grip. The antagonists are foiled — Baṭuknāth's own page writes itself "present"; Chandrapal's app opens only a blank; Rāghav's message splits into "moving" and "theatre." Lau realizes: "the memory that plays on the road can't be bought with another planet's contract."

● *The unstoppable name*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Reading a name is not inciting; silencing it makes the fire.
- A centerless movement leaves no target to control.
- Memory played in the open cannot be bought or bought off.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 140

The Moving Assembly

चल चौपाल *Chal Chaupāl*

"If the game declares no win or loss, know it has become memory's watch."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The road never closes — the drama on it keeps moving

The moving assembly

The Moving Assembly • चल चौपाल — card 1 of 1

The road never closes. "The drama inside a house ends; the drama on the road keeps moving — because the road never closes." The boundary is "drawn not on the soil, but by someone's pen" — the name on this side counted living, the one fallen "rejected." The "Chal Chaupāl" needs only "an open space, a listening ear, and a name not yet fully heard."

Life's turn. A boy writes: "drama is not what's on the stage; drama is what forces life to hear its own lie." Bā: "now it's life's turn — the real theatre is the kitchen, the field, the office, the court." When a police notice lands on the stump's edge, Būṛhbā turns the next day toward "the kabaddī of paper": bringing a name back by stealing breath from the law's own lines.

● *The unending assembly*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The house-drama ends; the road-drama moves on, for the road never closes.
- The living/rejected line is drawn by a pen, not by the soil.
- The real theatre is life itself — kitchen, field, office, court.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 141

The Verandah's Verdict

बरामदाक फैसला *Barāmadāk Phaisalā*

"The verandah's stone bears shoes all day, and at night it pronounces the verdict."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Delay eats not time, but the body — the verandah as the court's unheard ear

A date is a piece of the body

The Verandah's Verdict • बरामदाक फैसला — card 1 of 2

Waiting has no section. "The verandah is not a place, but a state — the state between inside and outside; those who sit there are neither plaintiff nor defendant, only waiting — and waiting has no legal section."

Justice eats the body. "A date is not a piece of time, but a piece of the body — one who got twenty-three years of dates, his twenty-three years of body are divided among the slips; when justice delays, it eats not time, but the body." Each crumbling date-slip is joined to a life-event, and "the verandah became not a calendar, but a person's age."

● *The devouring date*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The verandah is the waiting state, outside every legal section.
- A date is a piece of the body divided among the slips.
- Delayed justice eats the body, not merely time.

The verandah is the court's unheard ear

The Verandah's Verdict • बरामदाक फैसला — card 2 of 2

Small fears, long injustice. "Small fears together make a long injustice" — the clerk's "fear of saving my job"; the advocate who lays his coat on the stone: "we learned the language of law, but not the language of hearing justice." Āruṇi: "if proof stays only in paper, the poor's life stays forever unproven."

The name of waiting. "The court's verandah is not outside the court, but its unheard ear — when the ear opens, the verandah becomes the court." The old client leaves: "today I got no verdict, but I got the name of waiting." And the records-room's door begins to tremble.

● The unheard ear

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Many small fears together weave one long injustice.
- Proof kept only in paper leaves the poor forever unproven.
- The verandah is the court's unheard ear, awaiting its opening.



The Dark of the Records-Room

रेकर्ड-घरक अन्हार *Rekarḍ-Gharak Anhār*

"In the dark of the records-room it is not files, but stopped-and-kept time that rots."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Locked time rots, and a name cut is a future cut

Time that stands, rots

The Dark of the Records-Room • रेकॉर्ड-घरक अन्हार — card 1 of 2

The heavy breath. "A cupboard is a small dark-house where people's years are locked — outside children grow old, inside not a day passes; time that stands, rots." The peon: "not the lock is old, the inner breath is heavy." "If the record's dust doesn't touch the judge's body, he keeps thinking himself clean."

Social death in a dispute. The files hold "social death hidden inside legal disputes" — a torn wedding-invitation in a land-file, a surname changed in the school-register: "cutting a name is not cutting letters, but cutting a person's future."

● *The rotting time*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Locked years rot while the world outside grows old.
- The record's dust must touch the judge, or he feels clean.
- A cut name is a cut future, not just cut letters.

A file for which someone waits is alive

The Dark of the Records-Room • रेकॉर्ड-घरक अन्हार — card 2 of 2

Half a name. "The file for which someone still waits, breath held, is alive." An old woman: "if the man himself was lost, how will his file not be lost?" — and, of the half-burnt page: "half a name is also a name, if someone hears it whole."

Voice into paper. Devika: "a file not found doesn't mean the person is finished" — a separate register for lost files. Satyavrat's order records "the oral testimony of waiting parties"; at those words he pauses — "the entry of voice into legal paper is hard" — but he writes it, the pen-tip trembling, then steady.

● *The living file*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A file someone still waits for, breath held, is alive.
- A file not found does not mean the person is finished.
- Let the living voice enter the legal paper.



The Testimony of the Waste-Sack

रद्दी बोरक गवाही *Raddī Borāk Gavāhī*

"On paper called waste, someone's last hope of life may be written — so tearing it is the greatest crime."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Discarded paper is dark soil from which testimony rises

Not waste, but insulted paper

The Testimony of the Waste-Sack • रद्दी बोराक गवाही — card 1 of 2

The illegible eye. A thumbprint is marked "illegible": "the paper isn't illegible; illegible is the eye that never practiced reading grief." "The thrower thinks 'I buried it,' the soil knows 'I planted it' — the waste-sack is a dark soil, and testimony rises from it."

Made absent. Of "original record unavailable," Āruṇi: "not the original record unavailable — the original human was made absent." A page with only "hear me" and a thumbprint: "if the name isn't left, protect the sentence — sometimes a person leaves just one call."

● *The buried seed*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The eye that can't read grief is the illegible one, not the page.
- What is buried as waste is planted as testimony.
- When the name is gone, protect the one remaining call.

A warning, not a museum

The Testimony of the Waste-Sack • रद्दी बोराक गवाही — card 2 of 2

Erasing is the trouble. The peon lays down his broom: "no one said old paper holds old weeping too." Fearing to be named, he hears: "writing a name is not trouble; erasing a name is trouble." Of records marked "irrelevant": "one that can change a person's life, how is it irrelevant?"

Human testimony. Mīrā's guard: "protect the testimony, don't sell the witness's body — the light of truth may not tear the dark of privacy." The empty sack is kept "not like a museum, but like a warning," the box relabeled "Human Testimony": "what was thrown as waste returns as the first witness."

● *The recovered record*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Writing a name is not the trouble; erasing it is.
- Truth's light may not tear the dark of privacy.
- The discarded record returns as justice's first witness.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 144

The Journey of the Name

नामक यात्रा *Nāmak Yātrā*

"Once the name left the file, no 'rejected' seal could shut it again."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The recovered names travel from the file back to their homes

The name lives on the threshold

The Journey of the Name • नामक यात्रा — card 1 of 2

A copy, not the name. "The cupboard holds a copy of the name; the real name lives on the threshold, where a lamp burns and someone waits — a name not returned to the threshold is half, even if written whole on paper." "The soil keeps the footprint, and when someone calls the old name, gives it back."

Return, don't display. The dignity-ethic: "carrying news is one thing, carrying dignity another; making a procession of someone's wound is a kind of loot — return the name, don't make a spectacle." The rule: "no face without permission, no quote without context, no testimony without dignity." Satyavrat: "process that doesn't protect the human is only a latch; let this list be a door, not a latch."

● *The homeward name*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A name unreturned to its threshold is half, however whole on paper.
- Carry dignity before news; a wound is not a spectacle.
- Process that doesn't protect the human is only a latch.

The crocodile eats the body, not the name

The Journey of the Name • नामक यात्रा — card 2 of 2

A rebirth, not information. The team reaches Jasodā Devī's home; her niece: "that name still lives?" — "the name's journey from paper to home is not information, but rebirth." Her file-line, "my field is my body without my name," meets the village's living memory. "Before correcting a name, ask — mangling a name while saving it is also violence."

Ropes of fear. The clerk writes his own "statement of silence": "injustice is tied below by ropes of fear; the system that suppresses names first suppresses the employee's throat." "The crocodile eats the body, not the name; when the name travels, the crocodile's teeth are left behind" — and the homeless names are kept in the grove.

● The traveling name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Returning a name home is a rebirth, not mere information.
- The system that suppresses names first silences its own clerks.
- The crocodile eats the body; the traveling name escapes its teeth.



The First Crack in Fear

डरक पहिल दरार *Ḍarak Pahil Darār*

"Fear doesn't break at once — first a crack forms, and through the crack the light enters."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Fear breaks not at once, but through a crack that lets the light in

The first crack in fear

The First Crack in Fear • डरक पहिल दरार — card 1 of 2

Whom are you protecting? "The first crack forms not from the victim's scream — heard for years, yet the pot stayed whole — but where the criminal himself asks his companion: whom are you protecting?" Fear speaks many tongues — "laughter, anger, a religious slogan, a rule-citation — but wherever it goes, it weakens its own true form."

The tired conscience. "The palace of lies cracks not always from outside; sometimes from the tired conscience of one sitting inside." An old advocate, long silent: "you'll change the lock, but where will you lock the name? — I'm not switching sides; I'm recognizing my side, late."

● *The cracking fear*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The crack forms when a criminal asks whom he is protecting.
- Fear wears many masks, weakening its form wherever it goes.
- The palace of lies often cracks from a conscience inside it.

Silence becomes testimony

The First Crack in Fear • डरक पहिल दरार — card 2 of 2

The paper was read. The clerk stands firm: "the file wasn't shown, it was read; the paper called waste held a human's petition." The peon: "I called it waste; now I say — it wasn't waste." Satyavrat: "if the rule erases a human's name, the rule must be re-interpreted — I'm returning the process its human."

The direction of fear reverses. The four-word watch — privacy, permission, context, dignity — proves stronger than the antagonists' plotting. Mīrā: "write the name of the fear too; the fear-spreader's identification begins the day people ask, whom are you protecting?" Those who once terrified the victim now fear the paper.

● *The speaking silence*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A written statement of silence turns silence into testimony.
- Privacy, permission, context, dignity outlast the plotters' schemes.
- The fear that terrified the victim now turns on the guilty.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 146

The Stain of the Seal

मुहरक दाग *Muharak Dāg*

"The seal's stain is not on the paper — it is darkest on the hand that pressed it."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The mark that overwrites a human's own body-mark

The stain is on the hand

The Stain of the Seal • मुहरक दाग — card 1 of 2

Verified, or stalled. "When the seal falls on a petition, it becomes the mark of the body — 'verified' changes a life, 'rejected' stalls one." Of a lie that redrew a field's boundary: "the lie that ate the body was called verified." The thumbprint pressed down beneath the seal — "the office's mark climbed over the human's body-mark."

The hand's print stays. "Is the hand guilty, or the seal? the seal is wood, it doesn't move itself; the hand that lifts it moves from hunger, fear, an order — but the hand's print stays forever that hand's, whatever the cause." "A system that would erase the ink must first erase the hand — and erasing the hand is impossible."

● *The marked hand*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A seal makes a life move or stall; a lie is stamped "verified."
- The office's mark can overwrite a human's own body-mark.
- The seal is wood, but the stain stays on the hand forever.

Show the human's line again

The Stain of the Seal • मुहरक दाग — card 2 of 2

Made pile by pile. "Injustice isn't done once; it's made pile by pile — mangle the name, change the date, doubt the attendance, block the copy, say the paper's incomplete; the victim tires, and the file is declared victorious." The question "who is above?" rings "like a spade" — each "above" a face that saved itself by calling itself the system.

The ink becomes dust. A hidden "order of B.H." is found "like an iron nail in the file's dark." Satyavrat: "hasn't the village already burned? some fire burns inside the body for years." The register's line: "when the seal climbs over the human, the first justice is — show the human's line again" — and "the ink that wrote lies is now becoming dust."

● *The restored line*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Injustice is built pile by pile until the victim simply tires.
- Each "above" hides behind the word "the system."
- The first justice is to show the human's line again.



The Knock on Every Door

घर-घरक दस्तक *Ghar-Gharak Dastak*

"A knock given with permission opens a bigger door than one given with command."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A knock given with permission opens a bigger door than a command

A knock, not an order

The Knock on Every Door • घर-घरक दस्तक — card 1 of 2

Asking is trust. "An order pushes; a knock asks — a door opened by pushing shuts again; a door opened by asking becomes a door of trust." Mīrā: "we're not announcing, we're listening. The knock should be the first touch of dignity, not noise."

The soil's memory. At Suramaṇī Devī's home, a preserved seed, a broken bangle, and a lump of field-soil speak louder than paper — "land's proof is not only the survey book, but the soil of memory." At Rāmeśvar Sāh's, a twelve-year-old calendar stopped the day he last went to court: "the household says — time stood still that day."

● *The asked-for door*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A pushed-open door shuts again; an asked-open door becomes trust.
- Land's proof includes the soil of memory, not just the survey book.
- A household's stopped clock can testify like any document.

Closed doors are also an answer

The Knock on Every Door • घर-घरक दस्तक — card 2 of 2

The stomach was unfinished. Phulkumārī's scholarship file reads "incomplete proof"; her mother: "that year she left school — the proof wasn't incomplete, the stomach was." She asks that the story be written "not as pity, but as a right." Closed doors receive no forced knock: "respect the fear, not the fear-spreader" — only a note left: "come find us when you wish."

Mixing lies into the crowd. The antagonists shift tactics: "easier to defeat truth than to mix lies into its crowd." Mīrā's five-rule safeguard holds — every account heard twice, copies kept separate, accusation-language distinguished from experience-language, no one declared guilty by association, and suspected falsehood investigated, not silenced.

● *The honored refusal*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A closed door is answered with respect, not force.
- It is easier to defeat truth than to mix lies into its crowd.
- Investigate suspected falsehood; never dismiss it by rumor.



The Recognition of Adulteration

मिलावटक पहिचान *Milāvaṭak Pahicān*

"Hold the true beside the paper — adulteration opens its own mouth."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Hold the true beside the false — adulteration opens its own mouth

Testing protects the true

The Recognition of Adulteration • मिलावटक पहिचान — card 1 of 2

Not distrust, but protection. "Investigation doesn't mean distrust — it means protecting what's true, and not letting false in among the true crowd; if unchecked, one lie eats the credibility of a hundred truths." "One who told the truth pauses, trembles, looks away; a rehearsed story flows in one breath without a stumble."

No answer for the soil. A claimant calling himself "Bhola Mandal" tells a too-smooth story; asked the smell of his lost field's soil, he only says "soil, like soil" — unlike one who has truly lost land. Confronted gently, he admits he's Bhikhan Sah, paid two hundred rupees by Raghav's people: "changing a name can change even someone's death."

● *The tested truth*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- One unchecked lie can eat the credibility of a hundred truths.
- Truth stumbles and trembles; a rehearsed story never does.
- A person with no answer for the soil has never truly lost land.

The scratch that marks the fake

The Recognition of Adulteration • मिलावटक पहिचान — card 2 of 2

The household name. Jagmaya's aged receipt reads "Harimohan Jha," but she says "at home we called him Mohan" — a household name a false witness rarely invents, and the record confirms the missing edge of a real file. Three coached youths, questioned separately, contradict each other completely: "same handwriting, three stories, zero memory."

A confession, kept safe. Murari the photocopier admits he was threatened into making false copies — but left a tiny hidden scratch on each, "so they'd one day be caught apart from the real seal." Bhikhan is not publicly shamed; his confession is recorded separately: "the person, not guilty in the crowd; the statement, tested on its own."

● *The hidden scratch*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A household name is what a coached liar rarely thinks to invent.
- Separate questioning reveals what one rehearsed story hides.
- Even a forced forger can leave a mark meant to be caught.



The Map of the Web

जालक नक्शा *Jālak Nakśā*

"However big the web, the knot sits in a small place — and the watcher looks only for the knot."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- However big the web, the knot sits in one small place

Smoke, scratch, key, seal

The Map of the Web • जालक नक्शा — card 1 of 2

A path, not a mark. "A web is never one hand's — one gives thread, one ties the knot, one casts it; catching only the thrower lets the web form again." Smoke, a scratch, a key, a seal — separate clues become, mapped together, "not a mark, but a path" between two doors, and a person stands behind each.

Four institutions. Three circles are drawn — Raghav's veranda, Murari's shop, the court's records-room — later joined by Batuknath's ashram, whose religious seal is found beneath the very same loose floorboard as a court file number. Āruṇi: "the crocodile doesn't walk on four legs, but on four institutions."

● The mapped web

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Catching only the thrower lets the same web form again.
- Separate clues, mapped together, become a path between two doors.
- The crocodile here walks on religion, law, business, and fear.

Trembling too is proof

The Map of the Web • जालक नक्शा — card 2 of 2

Fear and gain, mixed gray. The clerk Kailash Prasad confesses: bribery "isn't always money — sometimes a promise to block a transfer, hope for a son's job, a threat to ruin a case." "The gray zone between fear and gain — that's where a file goes missing." The team enters the records-room with restraint, not a crowd: "four people, an open list, a public reading on return."

The unperformed confession. Bhikhan Sah returns his bribe money and gives an unrehearsed, halting confession, ashamed and looking away: "this brokenness is real; one who trembles confessing their own crime, that trembling too becomes part of the proof." Even the forger Murari's remorse is recorded honestly: "guilt, noted; cooperation, noted — a person is never wholly black or wholly white."

● The graded truth

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Bribery is not only money — it can be fear or false hope.
- Enter with restraint: a small team, an open list, a public reading.
- A trembling, unrehearsed confession is itself part of the proof.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 150

The Shadow of the Seal

मुहरक छाया *Muharak Chāyā*

"The rubber can be erased, but the handle remains — and in the empty handle rests the heaviest weight."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Rubber erases; the wood handle and its grip-marks remain

A boundary no one saw drawn

The Shadow of the Seal • मुहरक छाया — card 1 of 2

The pressure stays. "Once the rubber is erased the letters go, but not the mark of pressure — one who thinks erasing letters saves the crime forgets that the hand's pressure sits deeper than the letters." "A seal's roundness measures one boundary: inside it, 'verified'; outside, 'rejected' — but no one had yet seen the hand that drew that boundary."

Two sanctities, one shadow. "Ashram and court — two separate sanctities — met in the shadow of one seal." A junk-dealer's discarded scrap — half-round, a reversed letter on its cut edge — matches the scratch on the master list's seal. A torn donation-register surfaces names: Chandrapal, Raghav, an anonymous "legal service board," and a fragment — "Bha...la..."

● *The unowned shadow*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A hand's pressure outlasts the erased letters it left.
- Someone drew the boundary between "verified" and "rejected" unseen.
- When two sanctities share one shadow, both grow suspect.

I'll make seals, not the sin of seals

The Shadow of the Seal • मुहरक छाया — card 2 of 2

"Settlement-service." Suramaṇī Devī's late husband's entry in the donation-register reads "settlement-service" — a euphemism, the clerk explains, for land surrendered through a wearied lawsuit and logged as ashram charity. "When religion's cloth is draped over injustice's body, the wounded fears even to touch it."

A father's warning. Ramesh Muhariyā, son of the old seal-maker Bhānu Lāl, opens his father's hidden register: "special round seal, temporary court, re-cut, reused under the ashram's name." His father's dying words return to him: "I will make seals — but I won't make the sin of seals."

● *The maker's warning*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "Settlement-service" can be the soft name for a hard loss.
- Religion's cloth over injustice makes the wounded afraid to touch it.
- A craftsman can refuse complicity even after his death.



The Hand That Runs the Seal

मुहर चलौनिहार हाथ *Muhar Calaunihār Hāth*

"The seal does not move itself — it has the name of the hand that runs it."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The seal does not move itself — a hand runs it, and the hand has a name

Small hands, one large harm

The Hand That Runs the Seal • मुहर चलौनिहार हाथ — card 1 of 2

The safest umbrella. "'Order from above' was for years the safest umbrella — under it many hands stayed dry, but many names got wet." "The peon's hand, the clerk's hand, the broker's hand — each thought their part small; but small hands together, if they cause one great harm, cannot use smallness as an excuse."

Fear becomes testimony. "When fear becomes a witness, even its trembling becomes a kind of proof — there's a difference between the trembling of fear and the trembling of a lie." Coded letters in Bhānu Lāl's register — court, Chandrapal, Raghav, ashram — are matched date by date to real events: a missing file, a filed petition, a car at Raghav's veranda that same night.

● *The umbrella's cost*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An umbrella that keeps hands dry can leave names soaked.
- Small complicities, joined together, forfeit the excuse of smallness.
- A trembling confession carries its own kind of proof.

The instability was his use

The Hand That Runs the Seal • मुहर चलौनिहार हाथ — card 2 of 2

No fixed post. The umbrella-carrying messenger is identified — Rāmlakhan Sahāy, once a court clerk, once Chandrapal's accountant, once an ashram driver: "his post was never fixed; perhaps that instability itself was his use — where no post is clear, the crime too stays conveniently unclear."

A mirror between two hands. Rāmlakhan echoes Bhikhārī Lāl's earlier words exactly — "I was only carrying the paper" — and an invisible mirror stands between them: one a court peon, one a private network's courier, the same complicity in different directions. Satyavrat: "if the seal falls into the wrong hand, that is not rule, but the discipline of theft."

● *The unclear post*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An unfixed job title can be exactly what makes a crime unclear.
- "I was only carrying it" can hide behind two very different jobs.
- A seal in the wrong hand turns rule into the discipline of theft.



The Source of the Order

आदेशक स्रोत *Ādeśak Srot*

"An order is not born from one mouth — it is born from a meeting, and the meeting has no signature."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- An order is born not from one mouth, but from a meeting with no signature

Checking the soft words

The Source of the Order • आदेशक स्रोत — card 1 of 2

Softer sounding, harder done. "'Service,' 'process,' 'relationship,' 'settlement' — the softer these words sound, the harder the act they may hide; checking language is no less necessary than checking the accused." "If the decision happens before the paper, the court becomes only a stage, and the real conversation is written elsewhere."

The symbol repeats. Red-bordered slips in Bhikhārī Lāl's old box read "stop the file," "delay the copy," "write original not found" — unsigned, but marked with the same small symbol found on Bhānu Lāl's register and the torn donation-book. "Even a code speaks its meaning one day, if read with patience."

● *The checked language*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Softer words can carry the hardest acts; check the language too.
- A decision made before the paper turns the court into a stage.
- A repeated unsigned symbol is itself a form of testimony.

Voluntary, under coercion

The Source of the Order • आदेशक स्रोत — card 2 of 2

Three ledgers. Mahāvīr Pāṭhak — once Baṭuknāth's scripture-reader, later the ashram's silent accounts-writer — is questioned with respect, not accusation, and yields three hidden ledgers: "Meeting-Memory," "Service-Thought," "Settlement-Formula," full of coded entries — "southern farmer," "widow across the river," "piece of the grove." One reads: "direct claim on the grove-piece is difficult — awaken memory of religious use; let the public-good language run."

The word that hid force. A fourth hidden page shows arrows linking court, office, veranda, and ashram, centered on one phrase: "main word: voluntary." Jagmaya recognizes it at once: "yes — my Mohan's hand trembled, and the paper said voluntary." Mahāvīr's incomplete apology is refused as a substitute for full testimony: "forgiveness cannot stand in for the witness; tell it whole first."

● The hidden coercion

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- "Public good" can be the phrase that opens the door to a claim.
- A trembling hand and the word "voluntary" do not belong together.
- An apology cannot substitute for the full, unbroken testimony.



The Name Behind the Symbol

संकेतक पाछाँ नाम *Saṅketak Pāchā Nām*

"A name rests behind the symbol, and behind the name, another symbol — the watcher must stand in between."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A name is behind the symbol, and behind the name, another symbol

An empty peg is its own witness

The Name Behind the Symbol • संकेतक पाछाँ नाम — card 1 of 2

Not certainty, honesty. "An empty peg is itself testimony — where no one was, someone was; this is not a play of words, but the language of absence." Mīrā's rule: "we seek the name behind the symbol, but we will not turn a guess into a name — leaving what we don't know empty is also honesty."

What voluntary is not. A pouch holds a page reading "voluntary" beside a trembling thumbprint. Suramaṇī Devī answers: "telling a hungry person 'you gave gladly' is not voluntary; telling a frightened person 'write of your own wish' is not voluntary; surrounding a lone widow and taking her thumb is not voluntary."

● The honest gap

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An empty peg where no one was is itself a form of testimony.
- Leaving the unknown unnamed is honesty, not weakness.
- "Voluntary" taken from hunger, fear, or isolation is not voluntary.

Possibility named as possibility

The Name Behind the Symbol • संकेतक पाछाँ नाम — card 2 of 2

Do not blur the person. A faded name might be "Phulmatī" or "Phulkalī" — Ananyā insists: "when the letters are unclear, do not blur the person." Her granddaughter Kamalā brings a pouch: soil, a thumb-stained cloth, and the word "voluntary" — half-erased.

One letter, many possibilities. A new code-letter "Ba" surfaces from a stain. Devikā whispers "Baṭuknāth?" but Mīrā holds the line: "not a name — a possibility; many names begin with Ba." Mahāvīr Pāṭhak warns against loading the letter onto his old teacher, but Suramaṇī Devī's answer cuts clean: "if one trusted like a father let a stranger's thumbprint be forced onto a child, then the word 'father' too must be examined."

● The unrushed letter

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A single letter can suggest many names; name only what is proven.
- Reverence is not a shield against examination.
- Careful, staged listing — memory, symbol, primary name — resists both silence and rush.



The Baba's Word

बाबाक वचन *Bābāk Vacan*

"A baba's word is untouchable only while it stays reverence — the moment it becomes checkable, the word becomes paper."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A word stays untouchable only as long as it stays reverence

The kitchen hears more than the court

The Baba's Word • बाबाक वचन — card 1 of 2

The soft voice, heard loudly. "The kitchen's ear hears more than the court's, because no one thinks the kitchen a threat." An old cook, Śāradā Jhā, testifies without being summoned: "the baba spoke softly, but everyone heard it loudly" — hints rather than direct names: "the southern man is stubborn," "convince the widow," "keep the paper simple."

My hands rolled the bread. "I thought it was a matter of religion then; I understood later — my hands rolled the bread, but the decision cooked in someone else's stomach." Satyavrat's note becomes the day's method: "seek the active hand hidden inside the passive word."

● The overheard order

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A place thought harmless can hear the most.
- A hint spoken softly can still be heard by everyone as command.
- Passive phrases in official language often hide an active hand.

Charity does not forgive the crime

The Baba's Word • बाबाक वचन — card 2 of 2

A slip of the tongue, kept. A clerk's kept chit reads: "Baba said — move the donation-deed's date to last month." It is not a signature, but a written shadow of a spoken order. Satyavrat trembles holding it: "if the decision came before the paper, the court became only a stage."

The light of charity. Mahāvīr protests: "the baba was called a benefactor — he cleaned the village pond, opened a school." Suramaṇī Devī answers plainly: "the light of charity does not forgive the darkness of crime; one who cleans a pond gains no right to dirty someone's paper." Under this, Mahāvīr admits for the first time: "we kept some people outside the word 'society.'"

● The unearned light

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A slip kept for years can be the written shadow of a spoken order.
- A decision made before the paper turns the court into a stage.
- Good works do not purchase the right to wrong someone's paper.



The Ledger of Service

सेवाक खाता *Sevāk Khātā*

"If the ledger of service and the ledger of silence are in one hand, both accounts must answer."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- If the ledger of service and the ledger of silence share one hand, both accounts must answer

Aid that demands silence is a rope

The Ledger of Service • सेवाक खाता — card 1 of 2

A gift, or a leash. "Charity is white, yet a black condition can hide in its shadow — the condition never spoken is the heaviest, for it is written on the mind, not the paper." "If a hungry stomach is fed on the condition of silence, that is not food, but a leash."

What was given, what was taken. Mahāvīr's "Service-Expense" ledger lists real aid — grain, medicine, cloth — matched to real families, but never the land or claim quietly traded away beside it. Ananyā: "what was given, they wrote; what was taken, they hid."

● *The leashing gift*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An unspoken condition on charity is heavier than any written one.
- Aid demanding silence is not food, but a leash.
- A ledger can record what was given while hiding what was taken.

The silence-feast

The Ledger of Service • सेवाक खाता — card 2 of 2

My silence paid my roof. A clerk admits some aid papers were later bound to "resolution papers" — he never signed them, but saw the bound file and stayed quiet: "my household ran on that silence." Villagers recall being told, "whoever's hand brought the medicine, don't open your mouth about their name."

In exchange for grandmother's land? A final entry reads "Baba's Prasad: Silence-Feast," dated the same week as Phulkalī Devī's coerced deed. Suramaṇī Devī: "telling one whose home was lost to forget it is committing the harm a second time." Kamalā sets her grandmother's soil beside the ledger and asks, softly: "in exchange for grandmother's land — a silence-feast?"

● The bound silence

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Silence, too, can be paid for — in medicine, food, or protection.
- Telling the wounded to forget repeats the original harm.
- A quiet, unrehearsed question can hold more force than any accusation.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 156

The Debt of Charity

दानक ऋण *Dānak Ṛṇ*

"The whitest cloth of charity wraps the heaviest debt."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The whitest cloth of charity often wraps the heaviest debt

A plate on sand

The Debt of Charity • दानक ऋण — card 1 of 2

The gift that steals the question. "A half-raised hand is often not fear alone, but the mark of a remembered kindness — one who received aid once can lose, for life, the right to ask a question; this is the gentlest form of bondage." Kailash Mandal: medicine truly saved his father's life, yet "the debt-talk around it spread so far that we grew ashamed even to speak of our own land."

Decision taken from the poor. Sakuni Khātūn's mother was told, "charity is enough for the poor; let the educated read the papers" — Suramaṇī Devī: "this is not charity — it is a plate set on sand; the food is visible, but the ground gives way underfoot."

● The gentle bondage

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A kindness once received can be used to silence a lifetime of questions.
- Aid that removes someone's voice from their own decisions is not charity.
- "Enough for you" is often the sentence that steals a say.

The reversed debt

The Debt of Charity • दानक ऋण — card 2 of 2

Beneficiary and trafficker. Satyavrat refuses easy equivalence: "one who ate while hungry, and one who traded on that hunger — the two cannot sit on the same scale." Rāmlakhan's own confession is neither excused nor condemned outright: "bound crime" — complicity born of his own family's need.

The giver made a debtor. Nirmalā Kumhārin gave clay pots in exchange for grain, yet was told "this is service, not trade" whenever she asked about payment — "the poor's labor was rewritten as the rich's kindness." A hidden "Consent" ledger and a locked iron chest are revealed, guarded now by rules of privacy before disclosure.

● The rewritten labor

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The exploited and the exploiter cannot be weighed on one scale.
- Naming complicity as "bound crime" neither excuses nor erases it.
- Calling a poor person's labor "service" can rewrite it out of history.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 157

The Iron Chest

लोहेक संदूक *Lohek Sandūk*

"The iron chest was a transaction in the house's darkness — now it becomes testimony in the village's light."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A locked chest opened with rules of privacy, copying, and witness

Consent is not the same as agreement

The Iron Chest • लोहेक संदूक — card 1 of 2

One voice, one thumb. "Agreement carries two voices; consent sometimes carries only one voice, and the other's mere thumbprint — a thumbprint makes no sound, so its silence is mistaken for assent." The chest is opened only after rules: no single hand, a full inventory, privacy for personal matters, copies for criminal ones.

The thinner, darker book. Beside the thick "Food-Distribution" ledger sits a slimmer, darker one — "Consent" — recording assurances taken *after* aid: "will honor the baba," "will not raise a land claim." Satyavrat: "if consent follows crisis, then the crisis itself was made into a document."

● The silent thumb

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A silent thumbprint is too easily mistaken for a voiced yes.
- Opening a hidden record requires rules before it requires answers.
- Consent taken right after a crisis turns the crisis into leverage.

An unsigned mark of power

The Iron Chest • लोहेक संदूक — card 2 of 2

The shelter and the boundary. Phulkalī Devī's paper reads: "temporary shelter, in exchange for suspended boundary-dispute" — Mīrā: "one whose home was flooded was given shade; in exchange, the shade over their field was blocked." Kamalā waits outside, honoring the privacy rule, tracing her grandmother's name in the dust.

The repeated names. The same witness names recur page after page — "encircled consent," not free agreement. A trident-like mark, unsigned, appears throughout: "the baba rarely signed directly; this mark was taken as his word." Devikā: "an unsigned mark of authority is more dangerous than a signature — no one can be held to deny it."

● The unsigned power

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Shelter given in exchange for a silenced land claim is not charity.
- The same repeated witnesses reveal encirclement, not consent.
- An unsigned mark of power is harder to deny than any signature.



The Matching of the Consent-Copies

सहमति-कापीक मिलान *Sahamati-Kāpik Milān*

"Only through matching the consent-copies did it first become clear — even a signature can be hijacked."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Matching the ledger to living memory, family by family

Family by family, word restored

The Matching of the Consent-Copies • सहमति-कापीक मिलान — card 1 of 2

Not silence, but seized. Kailāsh's sister recalls: his sick father's thumb was pressed to the page while he lay fevered, no price of the medicine ever named — the ledger's "voluntary silence" is corrected: "a sick night makes voluntary consent doubtful." Mīrā: "weeping too is part of testimony, but conclusions come from detail, not tears."

Three restored sentences. One by one the true sentences return: "my father took the medicine, not silence"; "my mother took the grain, not the road"; and Kamalā's, for her grandmother: "she took shelter — not the field." Three families, one recovered grammar.

● *The restored sentence*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A sick person's thumbprint is not the same as a free choice.
- Weeping belongs in testimony, but conclusions rest on detail.
- Aid taken is not the same as a right surrendered.

A dead man's name

The Matching of the Consent-Copies • सहमति-कापीक मिलान — card 2 of 2

Reading the melody, not just the name. Hariballabh's father, who sang at kīrtan, "could read a name, not the maneuver behind it" — Satyavrat: "reading a name is not enough; reading the method is necessary." Rāmlakhan admits he "wrapped people's fear in soft words," though the order behind him stayed always unnamed: "'the baba's wish' — but whose wish, no one said clearly."

The gravest find. One entry's date falls after its bearer's recorded death — "the consent of a dead man?" The chamber goes cold. Of eighteen matched names: five show clear coercion, three turned silence into a vow, two saw temporary aid become a permanent land surrender, four share repeated witnesses, one bears a dead man's name, three remain incomplete. Chandrapal's name hovers, unspoken, at the center of every line.

● *The uncovered forgery*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Reading only the signed name misses the method behind it.
- "The baba's wish" without a clear source is an order with no owner.
- A dead man's name on a consent paper reveals outright forgery.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 159

A Dead Man's Consent

मृतकक सहमति *Mṛtakak Sahamati*

"A dead man's consent — the world's cheapest paper, and its most expensive crime."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Where the death-date and the consent-date leave a gap, the crime's body shows clearest

The gap between two dates

A Dead Man's Consent • मृतकक सहमति — card 1 of 2

Four pillars, not one memory. "A date does not lie, whatever the paper says; where the gap between a death-date and a consent-date appears, the crime's body shows clearest." Jagdish Mahto's consent is dated twenty days after his recorded death. Mīrā builds four pillars — death-date, funeral-memory, neighbor's testimony, consent-date — "one memory is not a conclusion, but four together show a lie's feet."

The body's incapacity, the paper's presence. Sonā Jhā's copy claims her silent presence at the ashram, but her son's letters prove her leg-wound kept her in Kāśī that entire month. Satyavrat: "the letter holds the body's incapacity; the copy holds the body's presence — this conflict does not open a file, it opens a crime."

● The dated crime

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A single memory proves nothing; four independent pillars together do.
- A body's proven incapacity contradicts a paper's claimed presence.
- Dates, unlike people, do not know how to lie convincingly.

A trembling hand knows its way home

A Dead Man's Consent • मृतकक सहमति — card 2 of 2

Signature versus forgery. Rukmiṇī Devī's real signature, held beside the copy's straight, hard hand, tells its own story. Devikā: "in a real signature the hand trembles, but the letters know their way; in the forged hand, the hand doesn't tremble, but the letters never reach home."

A stolen mark of authority. A locked chest reveals a distinctive unsigned mark — three lines, a half-moon, a dot — appearing across donation, service, and "authority" ledgers in three different guises: compassion, debt, and pressure. Devikā: "one mark wearing three forms — not a trinity, but a tragedy." A pouch of forged seal-copies confirms it: "people see the mark, not the hand."

● The stolen mark

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A trembling real signature still knows its own path; a forgery doesn't.
- The same authority-mark can serve compassion, debt, and pressure at once.
- People trust a mark; a forger only has to copy the mark, not the hand.



The Shadow of the Warehouse

गोदामक छाया *Godāmak Chāyā*

"When the warehouse opens, it is not trade — it is the belly of shadow-justice that shows."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- When the warehouse opens, it is not trade but the belly of shadow-justice that shows

A rented key, an unspoken name

The Shadow of the Warehouse • गोदामक छाया — card 1 of 2

The rice-sacks and the thumbprint. "A sack holds rice, but the small box hidden behind it holds no rice — it holds someone's thumbprint. Whose body is gone, who forged their consent?" A servant named Dhīrū, trembling, hands over a key he was told to guard "so rats don't reach the papers" — his first sentence gives the warehouse a name behind it: "the master said the goods are Chandrapal Bābū's, but the care is mine."

Four questions, five columns. Mīrā's method: "who benefits, who orders, who are the people, what is the object, and whose shadow — though no name — falls here?" Inside, a wall-map's red-blue-black lines match yesterday's red thread exactly, and a ledger entry beside a dead man's name reads plainly: "forged mark: expense adjusted."

● *The counted names*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A hidden box behind ordinary goods can hold a stolen consent.
- Ask who benefits and whose shadow falls — not only whose name is signed.
- A ledger's plain language can itself become the clearest confession.

Categorized as prey, not as people

The Shadow of the Warehouse • गोदामक छाया — card 2 of 2

"Old," "widow," "far," "dead." A hidden box of practice-signatures and pre-stamped blank pages bears thumb-strips labeled not with names but with categories — "old," "widow," "far," "dead," "sick." Suramaṇī Devī, voice hardening: "here even a person's name was reduced — this is not identification, but a hunting classification."

Laughter inside, weeping outside. A coat pocket yields a half-burnt note: "Chandrapal Bābū's verbal instruction: the page must not leave." Servant Dhīrū's second statement: "inside there was laughter, outside there was weeping" — devastating in its plainness. Mahāvīr Pāṭhak surrenders the chest publicly: "the sanctity of a mark is saved not by its worship, but by exposing its abuse."

● *The exposed belly*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Sorting people by category ("old," "widow") for exploitation is itself a crime.
- "Laughter inside, weeping outside" names a whole system in one sentence.
- A mark's sanctity survives by exposing its abuse, not by hiding it.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 161

The Phone's Captivity

फोनक कैद *Phonak Kaid*

"Whoever the phone imprisons has no bail — until the voice's owner is caught."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- No fear has a bail bond until the voice's owner is caught

"Tell no one" is a lock from within

The Phone's Captivity • फोनक कैद — card 1 of 2

The third fear. "Fear comes to the body, to the home, and to the name; from the first two, one can flee — from the third, one falls silent, and silence is the cheapest room a fraudster owns." An elderly client receives a night call: a commanding voice claims his name is in a serious case, orders him to stay home and share no one, and calls it "house arrest." Ananyā: "a captivity that surrounds not the body but the mind — its lock is fear."

The voice's fake seal. "A seal falls on paper; a voice's mark falls on the ear — court-voice, police-voice, bank-voice. A fraudster doesn't forge a seal, he forges a voice — and catching a voice's forgery needs no ink-test, only questions." A grandson's hidden recording reveals a smooth, commanding demand: money to a "secure account," or the house will be sealed.

● The silencing fear

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Fear for one's name silences where fear for body or home would make one flee.
- A confident voice can forge authority the way a seal forges paper.
- "Send it now, tell no one" is the oldest sign of exactly this fraud.

Together we speak — the lock weakens

The Phone's Captivity • फोनक कैद — card 2 of 2

Questions defeat authority's costume. When Mīrā, calm and firm, demands the caller's branch name, rank, written order, and office address, the voice turns curt — then vanishes. "Questions do not exist without justice; fraud does not exist without fear." The elderly man stands upright for the first time: "I was captive in the phone — now the voice has fled."

A six-stranded trap, community-answered. Ānanyā names the pattern plainly for teaching, not imitation: "fear, secrecy, time-pressure, personal information, an act of false authority, and isolation." The village's real answer becomes its lasting lesson: never answer alone, write down what is demanded, never share a secret number, never send money in haste, and remind every elder — "no court sits on a phone call."

● The shared answer

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Calm, specific questions can unravel a false authority faster than fear can.
- Fraud runs on isolation and haste; togetherness and patience defeat it.
- "No court sits on a phone call" — the community's own protective rule.



The Seal of the Voice

आवाजक मोहर *Āvājak Mohar*

"A voice too carries a seal — and the first way to break that seal is to ask its name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A voice too can be sealed — and the first way to break that seal is to ask its name

A forger fears the question

The Seal of the Voice • आवाजक मोहर — card 1 of 2

The unforgeable thing. "Forgery has its own craft — it copies the outer form first, a seal's roundness, a paper's color; then it copies the inner rhythm, an officer's patience, a bank's dry words. But forgery can never copy one thing: responsibility. So forgery fears the question." "What is true gives its name, its post, its office, a written order. What is forged rushes, asks for secrecy, and ends with: 'you ask too many questions.'"

A voice's mark of trust. The village builds a new tool: not a sword, not a stick — only the question. Mīrā: "when any voice claims the authority of government, police, bank, religion, doctor, or guru over a person's own judgment, that is a voice's forged seal." A shared register begins — number, time, name claimed, demand, fear-sentence, response — as many households report near-identical calls.

● *The unforgeable trust*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Forgery can copy form and rhythm, but never responsibility.
- What is true gives its name and post; what is forged asks for silence.
- A single honest question can be a stronger tool than any weapon.

The same troupe, many masks

The Seal of the Voice • आवाजक मोहर — card 2 of 2

Acting turned to hiding. Devikā, comparing many households' calls: "these are not separate plays with separate characters — they are one troupe's many masks." The village's own drama-actors, ashamed, recognize the difference: "we wear masks to make fear visible for a moment; these people make fear with a voice alone, and never take the mask off."

The careful witness. Sakunī reports what she saw near a suspect's rented room, disciplined into fact: "write only what you saw; keep guesses separate." A cheap recorder is found holding rehearsed fear-phrases in different voices, one script. The bank confirms the elderly client's money split into three transfers — a false name, a dead man's identity, and "M. Prasad Service" — prompting a village-wide oath: never hear a threatening call alone.

● *The disciplined witness*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Recognize a fraud troupe's many masks as one method, not many crimes.
- Report only what was directly seen; keep inference clearly separate.
- A shared oath — never alone, always written down — outlasts any single scam.



The Mark of the Removed Paper

हटायल कागजक निशान *Haṭāyal Kāgajak Niśān*

"A paper is removed, not its mark — the remover's own haste is itself the mark."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A paper can be removed; its mark cannot — the remover's own haste leaves the trace

Dust is the oldest witness

The Mark of the Removed Paper • हटायल कागजक निशान — card 1 of 2

What is absent can be measured. "Dust sits quietly for years, and it remembers the weight of every hand that touches it — the one who lifts a page forgets the dust, but the dust never forgets." A scratched lock, a broken dust-line beneath shelf seventeen, and two faint bare-footprints lead to an empty string-loop where a file once sat: "absent, yet still able to be measured."

A trembling confession, seated with care. A faint pressure-mark on a register page reads only "P...ma..." A young clerk, Parmanand, is questioned not standing but seated — "let truth find room in his body" — and confesses he opened the door on a claimed "order from above," was handed a bag, and never looked inside: "did you not see, or did you not wish to see?"

● *The remembering dust*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An absent object can still be measured by the space it leaves.
- A trembling witness is treated with seated care, not standing pressure.
- Not looking away from wrongdoing is its own form of complicity.

A living man's death-paper

The Mark of the Removed Paper • हटायल कागजक निशान — card 2 of 2

The carbon remembers. A hidden carbon-copy impression, reversed but legible, reveals: "death certificate attached," "heir absent," "mortgage re-verification," and "M. Prasad Service." The named man, Nāgeśvar Jhā, is very much alive and merely too ill to attend the grove that night.

One who hears his own name. Bedridden but awake, Nāgeśvar asks quietly: "I am hearing my own name right now. Who declares dead a man who can still hear his own name?" Two teams form calmly: one records his living testimony, one asks the bank about "M. Prasad Service" — confirmed as an outside payment channel draining his account in small, repeated amounts, "so the pain is felt only later." A tiny code, "17/C," surfaces from the carbon's edge.

● *The living testimony*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A carbon impression can outlive and outlast the paper it copied.
- A living man's own testimony is the surest answer to a false death-paper.
- Small, repeated losses are designed to be felt only later, and less sharply.



The Belly of Chandrapal's Shadow

चन्द्रपालक छायाक पेट *Candrapālak Chāyāk Peṭ*

"A small number can open a large lock — if the reader has stayed awake all night."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A web is known not by its mouth, but by its belly, where every thread finally meets

"Service" is the most dangerous word

The Belly of Chandrapal's Shadow • चन्द्रपालक छायाक पेट — card 1 of 2

Violence closes doors; service opens them. "The most dangerous word is not a word of violence — it is 'service,' 'assistance,' 'consultation,' 'facility.' Hearing violence, people shut their door; hearing service, people open it themselves." "Everyone knows' — in these three words hides half the crime in any village; the gap between knowing and admitting is where a thief opens his shop."

Joining threads, not fighting. The code "17/C" is decoded: an old cataloguing system where "C" held disputed inheritance, mortgage, and death-certificate files — "not a number, but the alley of death-papers." Parmanand, questioned gently, recalls the caller once slipped and said "C section" before catching himself: "don't say the name, don't say C."

● *The opened door*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Soft words like "service" open doors that threats never could.
- The gap between what everyone knows and what anyone admits shelters crime.
- Join scattered facts patiently; let the sequence itself speak the verdict.

The predator's own map

The Belly of Chandrapal's Shadow • चन्द्रपालक छायाक पेट — card 2 of 2

Identifying the living. A receipt from Nāgeśvar's home bears the seal "Chandrapal Consultation Center" for "document verification assistance." In the office's "C-room," a screen reads: "death/living verification requires identification" — Devikā, sharply: "who gave this office the right to verify someone we can see is alive?" Envelopes marked "M. Prasad Service" sit inside an internal drawer, not an outside agency's own office.

A map of the vulnerable. A wall map marks elderly households, absent sons, mortgaged land, and pension accounts in red — "not a government map, but a predator's map." Two elderly women waiting there confirm the same threats: thumbprints demanded or pensions stopped, phone calls warning a name will be "cut." Chandrapal is absent, but a half-drunk cup of tea on his desk speaks: "an absent man can still be present through his half-drunk tea."

● *The exposed belly*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A map that targets the vulnerable by category is a predator's map.
- The right to verify someone's death belongs to no office over living witnesses.
- Absence does not erase presence — small traces still speak.



The Body of the Shadow

छायाक देह *Chāyāk Deha*

"When a shadow is caught, one question stands — where is the body? And a body is always found in some storehouse."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- When a shadow is caught, one question stands: where is the body?

Calling a name trembles the guilty

The Body of the Shadow • छायाक देह — card 1 of 2

Two places, not one. "Crime needs two places — one where it is written, and one where it is kept; the writing place is an office, the keeping place a warehouse. One who looks only at the office sees half the crime." A dead man's own hidden hearing helps them: Nāgeśvar Jhā reveals a locked room's overhead vent, quietly noting, "I was once declared dead — but a dead man's ears hear a great deal."

Read before you break. Mīrā refuses to force the lock: "we will not break the door — we will read in front of it. Whoever's name is inside, we will call it out loud." Names are called one by one; at the third calling, something shifts audibly within. Through the vent, a box marked "C-17" becomes visible — the first sighting of a body behind the shadow.

● The called name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Crime needs both a place to be written and a place to be kept.
- A dead man's ears can still hear — testimony can come from unexpected places.
- Calling a guilty name aloud can shake a hiding place more than force does.

Following the shadow to the river

The Body of the Shadow • छायाक देह — card 2 of 2

A receipt under the mat. A delivery receipt found beneath a suspect's mat reads: "cargo: four boxes, night watch, destination: C warehouse." The courier is named — not a junk dealer, but, as Suramaṇī Devī puts it, "a buyer of names' bones."

The first thread of hope. A scrap of paper reading only "original copy safe" offers real hope: the true records may yet exist, uncorrupted. An old boatman confirms boxes were carried across the river by night to a half-sunken storehouse at Tamarind Ghat. Mīrā insists on discipline over triumph: "evidence is found — not victory."

● *The hopeful thread*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A single note — "original copy safe" — can carry real hope forward.
- Naming a person's true role (not softening it) restores clarity.
- Evidence found is a reason for discipline, not premature celebration.



The Storehouse of Tamarind Ghat

इमली घाटक कोठार *Imalī Ghāṭak Koṭhār*

"There is no waste in the storehouse — only stopped fear, left to rot."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- There is no waste in the storehouse — only stopped fear, left to rot

Let the air out first

The Storehouse of Tamarind Ghat • इमली घाटक कोठार — card 1 of 2

See, then identify, then witness. Satyavrat's rule before opening: "see before you lift, identify before you touch, and only then call a witness — enthusiasm must never outrun evidence." The storehouse is opened with witnesses present, and Mīrā insists: "let the air out first — even a paper's captivity needs breath."

Weakness, or circumstance? Inside, the "C-17" box holds layered envelopes: Nāgeśvar's true mortgage deed (long claimed "unavailable" in court), a draft confession, and two widows' "consent" papers written in one hand. A misspelled name becomes its own testimony: "one who truly knows a name does not misspell it." A list of elderly households marked "alone," "son abroad," "won't listen," "fear comes quickly" prompts Āruṇi's anger — Mīrā reframes it: "not weakness — circumstance; this is society's failure, not theirs."

● The named circumstance

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Even paper deserves care: let its held air out before handling it.
- A misspelled name in a forged document reveals the forger's distance.
- Elderly isolation exploited by fraud is society's failure, not the victim's fault.

Five red ledgers

The Storehouse of Tamarind Ghat • इमली घाटक कोठार — card 2 of 2

The unbled murder. A hidden iron box yields five ledgers: names and sums; markers like "call complete," "fear established," "family isolated"; and — starkest of all — the phrase "dead-ready" written beside a living man's name. Suramaṇī Devī, trembling: "one who kills the living on paper commits murder without blood."

Three silences, three colors. The final, thinnest ledger closes with: "new voice-list ready; next shipment: across the river." When Harichaan arrives to protest the search, his pattern of unwitting silences — on the box, on the phrase "dead-ready," on the next shipment — is recorded precisely: "the first silence was defense, the second fear, the third connection."

● *The unbled murder*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Writing "dead-ready" beside a living name is murder without blood.
- A person's pattern of silence can itself become distinct testimony.
- The investigation protects victims' privacy while exposing the method fully.



The Voice from Across the River

नदी पारक आवाज *Nadī Pārak Āvāj*

"A voice may come from across the river, but it is the people on this side who drown."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The voice becomes distant, but it is people on this side who drown

A mother knows breath, not just tone

The Voice from Across the River • नदी पारक आवाज — card 1 of 2

What forgery cannot copy. "A voice can be forged — its tune, its pause, its pitch. What cannot be forged is breath. A real son's voice laughs and forgets mid-sentence; a forged voice only ever fears, and fears at one unchanging pace." "Tell no one" becomes, in Mīrā's words, "a prison with no walls, no lock, no guard — only one sentence, and a person shuts their own door."

Empty your own boat first. Crossing the river in careful order rather than a crowd, an old boatman's small wisdom becomes the day's method: "whoever leaves water sitting in their boat blames the current — empty your own boat first." Mid-river, a live scam call reaches Āruṇi's phone; put on speaker for the whole boat to witness, the caller demands secrecy and urgency — until Āruṇi's calm question, "who is my father?", meets only silence.

● *The unforgeable breath*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A real voice's breath — its pauses and laughter — cannot be forged.
- "Tell no one" builds an invisible prison with no walls at all.
- Examine your own doubts and biases first, before blaming outside forces.

Grief made into evidence

The Voice from Across the River • नदी पारक आवाज — card 2 of 2

Water before testimony. At Madhukānt Jhā and Kamalā Devī's home, a mother had just been deceived by a voice impersonating her son. Mīrā offers water before any question — dignity in process. The father notices what the mother, in her fear, could not: "the tone was our son's, but the breath was not — our son laughs mid-call; this voice was purely fear."

Data, or a household's breath? A young local worker, caught and questioned with care, moves through denial, minimization, and distance before admitting he supplied personal details to a distant operation: "I only sent data," he says. Satyavrat answers firmly: "calling a household's circumstance 'data' hides half the crime — what was sent was not data, but a family's own breath." A scripted line — "Ma, hurry, I'm trapped" — is recognized by Kamalā Devī as the exact words used against her, turning private grief into public, protective evidence.

● *The protected grief*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Offering care and water before questions restores dignity to testimony.
- A shared, familiar tone is not enough; true intimacy is in the breath.
- Naming human circumstances "data" hides the real weight of the crime.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 168

The City's Throat

शहरक गला *Śaharak Galā*

"The city's throat gets caught, not its neck — the neck always stays higher up."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The city's throat is caught, not its neck — the neck always stays higher up

Grief becomes a list, then a price

The City's Throat • शहरक गला — card 1 of 2

Noise is the best curtain. "A whisper is heard in the village; a scream in the city goes unheard by anyone. So whoever wants to hide takes a room not in the village, but between horns and loudspeakers — a crowd is their door." "What is sold there is not goods, but grief — whose son is far, whose pension is stopped, whose case hangs unresolved — this becomes a 'list.'"

A worker's honest confession. Nareś, a village service-center worker, admits he was persuaded by smooth-talking visitors to scan old registers in exchange for "free system cleaning" — and copies of the data left without his knowledge. Mīrā's sharp question cuts through: "was that a junk price, or an information price?"

● *The priced grief*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A crowd's noise is the best hiding place for those who exploit it.
- Personal hardship, once listed, becomes a commodity to be sold.
- A worker's honest confession opens the door to real accountability.

Following the name to the city

The City's Throat • शहरक गला — card 2 of 2

Same office, new name. The team traces an old receipt to a city office renamed "Mitra Data Solutions" — same street, same computers, same register. A voice recording plays inside: "a warrant has been issued against you." Devikā: "this is not acting — this is acting's criminal form."

A discipline of restraint. A folder marked "C-Group: Rural Elderly" is found, alongside a screen reading "Chandra 2: old file active." Satyavrat cautions against rushing: "Chandra 2 may be Chandrapal, or may not be. We will not turn a guess into a verdict." Evidence is secured through proper witnesses and local police, not seized on impulse.

● *The disciplined trace*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A renamed office at the same address is itself telling evidence.
- A convincing recorded threat is acting turned to crime.
- A possible clue is not a verdict — patience protects the innocent.



Chandra Two's Doorway

चन्द्र दूक दरबज्जा *Candra Dūk Darbajjā*

"A messenger is caught at the doorway; the inner room keeps changing its own lock."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A messenger is caught at the doorway; the inner room keeps changing its own lock

The theft of trust

Chandra Two's Doorway • चन्द्र द्वक दरबज्जा — card 1 of 2

Trust once stolen rarely returns. "The greatest theft is not of money, but of trust. Taking a name people open their door to — an uncle's, a priest's, an elder's — and using it to open a phone line is looting a village's oldest wealth. Money can return; trust once stolen rarely does for years."

"Tell no one at home." At a city office called "Chandra Service," a worker is overheard whispering to an elderly client: "tell no one at home, or the work will stop." Satyavrat writes it down at once: "building isolation — the crime's first act." A file titled "old trust-list" matches, category by category, the vulnerability-list found earlier in the village.

● The stolen trust

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Stolen trust, unlike money, rarely returns within years.
- "Tell no one" is recognized as the first deliberate act of a fraud.
- A matched list across two locations reveals a single, coordinated method.

The name behind the name

Chandra Two's Doorway · चन्द्र द्वक दरबज्जा — card 2 of 2

A name too big to question. Chandramohan, the office's front, denies knowledge before his own words betray him: "we did not yet mention 'Chandra 2,'" Satyavrat notes — "what a guilty mind hears first, it often says itself." A phone reveals contacts including "Chandra 1," and the room falls silent.

The bright moon's dark spot. "Look at the moon: the brighter it is, the more visible its spot." A ledger reveals the network had already studied the village — including a red-lined entry for the very grove where the children hold their watch. Suramaṇī Devī: "Chandra Two is found — now find Chandra One. But be careful: the brighter the name, the clearer its stain will show."

● The clearer stain

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A guilty mind often reveals itself by what it assumes was already said.
- The brighter a name shines, the more clearly any stain upon it shows.
- Discovering you were already being studied is itself important evidence.



Chandra One's Shell

चन्द्र एकक खोल *Candra Ekak Khol*

"Remove the shell, and Chandra One and Chandra Two are one darkness split in two."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Remove the shell, and Chandra One and Chandra Two are one darkness split in two

The oldest lock is a fatherly voice

Chandra One's Shell • चन्द्र एकक खोल — card 1 of 2

Awakening old fear, not making new. "'Uncle,' 'priest,' 'court' — these words make the village bow its head without thinking. That bowing was good when responsibility stood behind the voice. Now the voice remains, but responsibility has flown — and the bowing that's left is no longer a neck, but a snare." "The thief does not create new fear. He touches fear the system has stored in us for years."

A five-step script. In a back room, an elderly scribe named Mohanlal Jhā is found running the network's voice-scripts — a written page titled "pressure on a mother's mind: five steps" lays bare the method with chilling clarity, prompting Devikā's quiet verdict: "this is a school for crime." Hearing Kamalā Devī's own suffering read aloud, even Mohanlal's hand begins to tremble.

● *The awakened fear*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A fatherly voice remains powerful even after its responsibility is gone.
- Fraud rarely invents fear — it reawakens fear already stored within us.
- Hearing a victim's real suffering can crack even a hardened accomplice.

The remedy is to speak

Chandra One's Shell • चन्द्र एकक खोल — card 2 of 2

A composite mask, not one man. "Chandra One" proves to be not a single person but a method: a red folder holds recordings of a priest's sermon, a court announcement, a bank manager's formal tone, and a fragment of an old speech by Chandrapal himself, blended into one authoritative "paternal voice." Satyavrat: "whether Chandrapal is alive or dead, the power of his voice still binds people."

Silence broken together. The village's true remedy is not silence but speech: "once the mantra is known, its fear is already half-dead — and fear spoken aloud to ten ears shrinks by half again." Kamalā Devī steps forward publicly: "my money is gone, but my fear has come back to me — I will not carry it alone anymore." One by one, other women follow, breaking the isolation the fraud depended on.

● The spoken remedy

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A feared "authority" can be a composite mask, not a single real person.
- Naming a fear aloud to others is itself protection against it.
- Collective, public speech is the direct antidote to enforced isolation.



The Invisible Court of the Grove

चन्ना गाछीक अदृश्य अदालत *Cannā Gāchīk Adṛśya Adālat*

"The invisible court has no seal — fear is set down there, not sworn away."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A court with no seal, where fear is set down — not sworn away

Speaking a fear reveals its limit

The Invisible Court of the Grove • चन्ना गाछीक अदृश्य अदालत — card 1 of 2

The unbounded shrinks when spoken. "There is one way to measure fear: speak it aloud. As long as it stays inside, it keeps enlarging its own measure. Spoken to ten ears, its edge is seen for the first time — and what has an edge is no longer boundless." Yet the deepest respect is held for what cannot be spoken: "where a story would strip someone bare — a woman's, a debt's, a household's — write only the pattern, never the name."

Three threads, three distances. Mīrā announces plainly: "there is no official verdict here — only names heard, fears heard, and years of solitary weight set into a shared voice." Three colored threads mark every testimony precisely: red for what was seen firsthand, yellow for what was heard from another, black for fear or inference alone — "a society that binds fear and proof into one knot ends up catching neither the guilty nor protecting the innocent."

● *The measured fear*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Fear kept silent enlarges itself; spoken aloud, its true edge appears.
- Protect what cannot be named — write the pattern, not the person.
- Keep the seen, the heard, and the feared in three distinct threads.

Silence was the trap, not the shield

The Invisible Court of the Grove • चन्ना गाछीक अदृश्य अदालत — card 2 of 2

The pressure at the threshold. Kamalā Devī testifies first: "I thought bearing the fear alone would protect my family. Now I know that bearing fear alone only traps it further." A veiled woman, keeping her name private, describes debt and pressure at her own doorstep after her husband's death — recorded not as a name but as "pressure at the threshold," for "justice does not strip a victim bare a second time."

A scribe's offered repair. An old scribe, Śivnārāyaṇ Miśra, admits he once wrote fear-inducing scripts for a fraud network — and now offers, unprompted, to write their opposite: a plain-language protection pamphlet. Satyavrat notes the four repeated words beneath every distinct story: "isolation, authority, urgency, silence — together they form the crocodile's mouth."

● *The offered repair*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Isolation, not the crime itself, is often what convinces people to stay silent.
- A person who once caused harm can be given a genuine path to repair it.
- Isolation, false authority, urgency, and silence are one recurring pattern.



The Reading of the Knots

गाँठक पढ़नाइ *Gāṭhak Paḍhanāi*

"When fear has come out, its knot must be read — and a knot is always three colors."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A knot pulled by force only tightens further — read it slowly instead

Never a jerk, always a question

The Reading of the Knots • गाँठक पढ़नाइ — card 1 of 2

Three distances to the truth. "Red means no distance between my own eyes and the event. Yellow means someone stands between — a teller. Black means only my own inner dark stands between. All three face toward truth, but each stands on different ground." Mīrā insists: "asking a question is not disbelief — I ask because what you say matters to me."

A trembling that is history, not lie. A black knot, unlabeled by name or date, reads only "fear of the police station." Mīrā refuses to judge it: "this is not personal fear — it is history's surviving tremor." A red knot — a farmer's contested land records, contradicting each other on paper — becomes the day's method: "put the papers face to face with each other, before the courts ever would."

● The three distances

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Asking a careful question honors testimony; it does not doubt it.
- An unexplained fear may be a survived history, not a personal flaw.
- Confronting contradictory papers with each other can itself be justice.

A written trail, and a new danger

The Reading of the Knots • गाँठक पढ़नाइ — card 2 of 2

A child's fear counted equally. A young boy, Phulesar, asks shyly whether his own fear — being threatened with labor instead of school if he studies — belongs in any color at all. Devikā answers gently: "both black, for it is fear; and red, for your body stands here today." Mīrā: "this invisible court is not only for fraud — it is for every fear that eats a person's future."

The first solid thread. An elderly pancayat clerk, Rāmkeval Pāsvān, breaks his silence with a fifteen-year-old register bearing a clear signature: "Madhukar Mīśra, special survey assistant." He recalls the survey marked vulnerable households — widows, the elderly, families with absent sons — a list that, unknowingly, seeded the later fraud. Mīrā insists on care even here: "a red thread does not end the inquiry — it opens its door."

● The honored fear

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A child's fear for their own future deserves the same careful hearing.
- A long-buried, honest witness can finally supply the first solid thread.
- New evidence opens an inquiry further — it does not close it prematurely.



The Watch Over the Register

पंजीक पहरा *Pañjik Paharā*

"The register stayed silent fifteen years, but its signature never once slept."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The register stayed silent fifteen years, but its signature never slept

"Special attention" — two meanings

The Watch Over the Register • पंजीक पहरा — card 1 of 2

The same words, different hands. "In an office, 'special attention' means: give this household more care. Out in the market, the same words mean: this household is easier prey. One phrase, two meanings — the only difference is whose hand holds it." "Getting a document is half the victory; keeping it safe is the whole victory" — so the fifteen-year register is copied three times, each held by a different, transparent keeper before any celebration begins.

A young man's careful offer. A young computer worker, Nīlmaṇi, offers to scan the register but adds his own safeguard: "I will password-protect every copy — nothing shared by messaging app." His and others' new rule crystallizes the village's growing discipline: "what travels quickly can be sold just as quickly."

● *The kept document*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The same phrase can mean protection in one hand, prey in another.
- Obtaining evidence is half a victory; safeguarding it is the whole victory.
- Careful, offered safeguards can come from the community's own members.

Our right to keep our own watch

The Watch Over the Register • पंजीक पहरा — card 2 of 2

A visitor's polished demand refused. A smooth, well-dressed representative arrives, urging the register be "deposited" at a central office "for social peace." Mīrā's plain questions — will there be a receipt, a stated reason, the named people's consent, public access to the copy? — dry up his polished request completely. The crowd, for the first time, answers together in a quiet, clear voice: "our right."

A threat becomes a footprint. That night, a shadow is caught reaching for the register; it flees, leaving only an unsigned note: "open the old matter, and a new case will follow." Mīrā refuses to fear it into silence: "a threat is not proof's enemy — it is proof's own shadow. If I fear it, it consumes me; if I record it, it becomes the wrongdoer's footprint." By morning, the original, its copies, and the note are all safe — kept not by one guard, but by a whole, wakeful community.

● *The community's watch*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Careful, specific questions can dissolve a polished demand for control.
- A threat, recorded rather than hidden, becomes evidence against its sender.
- Shared, transparent safekeeping protects better than any single guard.



The Threshold of the Invisible Court

अदृश्य अदालतक चौखट *Adṛśya Adālatak Caukhaṭ*

"The court's threshold is not stone — it is made of a circle's shared courage."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The court's threshold is not stone — it is made of a circle's shared courage

When paper says "absent," the body becomes proof

The Threshold of the Invisible Court • अदृश्य अदालतक चौखट — card 1 of 2

Present in body, absent on paper. "When a paper writes a person 'absent,' the body itself becomes testimony." A daughter-in-law, Sonā, whose land case always listed her "not present," though she walked three miles before dawn every hearing, shows her own hands — cracked, sun-darkened, torn by rice-water: "I was present. Absent were only those who weren't in their chairs to see me."

One who names their fear is half free. An old client, Bholārām, recounts twenty-three years of postponed dates through his own family's history — a son's schooling, a daughter-in-law's death in childbirth, a mortgaged field — and asks, "the verdict?" His answer: "the verdict was written on my own body." Mīrā's principle: "one who names their fear becomes half free of it."

● *The bodily proof*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A body's lived reality can testify where paper falsely claims absence.
- A person's own life-history can itself become a form of evidence.
- Naming a long-held fear aloud begins to loosen its grip.

An unnamed objection is itself suspect

The Threshold of the Invisible Court • अदृश्य अदालतक चौखट — card 2 of 2

The same fraud, old and new. A young mobile-repair worker recounts his father's fear-driven exploitation almost losing their savings, comparing it directly to the old paper-based seal fraud: "the old paper-seal and the new digital voice are not so different — both read a person's fear, both sell the law's name." An elderly woman, long silent, has her thrice-misspelled name spoken correctly by the whole gathered crowd at once — "the correction of a name, the first step of justice."

Courage without a name is no objection at all. A stranger, sent from Baṭuknāth Hariharan's circle, objects loudly that the gathering has "no legal standing" — but refuses to give his own name. Satyavrat answers simply: "legal value we will examine later. Right now, humanity is what counts." Mīrā records it plainly: "an unnamed objection — trust in a seal, distrust of a person."

● *The named courage*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Recognizing an old crime's new form is itself a form of protection.
- Publicly correcting a wronged name is justice's first real step.
- An objection given without a name reveals more than it hides.



The Seal-Bearer's Name

मुहरबाहकक नाम *Muharabāhakak Nām*

"Dew fell, yet the letters on the stone did not fade — only forgetting can erase a name, not damp."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- One who carries the seal is also the doorway between truth and deceit

A son's true test

The Seal-Bearer's Name • मुहरबाहकक नाम — card 1 of 2

Poverty is not the crime. A deceased seal-bearer's name, Dīnbandhu Jhā, surfaces in a hidden notebook — a poor, humble man who long carried a small wooden box of wax, ink, and brass seals between offices for others' orders. His son Śaśibhūṣaṇ arrives, at first defensive: "my father was poor. He did what he was told." Bholārām answers gently: "if a poor man's hand was used in wrongdoing, poverty is not the fault — but the hand's history must still be known."

A dignity restored, not accused. Mīrā seats the son at the circle's edge, not its center: "no one's father is made a criminal here without cause. Here, we read what the name did." Śaśibhūṣaṇ, moved, brings his father's actual remaining belongings — cloth, seals, a small diary — unprompted: "I thought them useless. But I came, hearing the name."

● The honest son

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A poor person's coerced role does not excuse the crime, but explains it.
- Justice seats the accused's family at the circle's edge, not its center.
- Bringing forward one's own family's evidence is an act of real courage.

Whispers are a direction, not proof

The Seal-Bearer's Name • मुहरबाहकक नाम — card 2 of 2

The disciplined method. Codes in the diary — initials, colors, dates — prompt a whisper of a powerful name; Mīrā holds the line firmly: "a whisper is not proof. A whisper is a direction. Direction needs a rule before it can be followed." Āruṇi matches diary dates against the registrar's own dates — several align precisely, turning coincidence into a genuine question.

Truth over family shame. A visiting stranger pressures Śaśibhūṣaṇ to sell off the evidence and protect his father's reputation by silence. Mīrā's answer: "shame falls on one who hides truth. One who gives it places their father rightly in history." Śaśibhūṣaṇ hands over the box himself: "examine it. If my father was only a tool, write that. If he knew, write that too. But do not write a lie."

● The refused shame

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A whisper only points a direction; it must never substitute for proof.
- Matching independent dates can turn coincidence into a real question.
- Giving up comfortable silence for truth restores a family's real honor.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 176

The Darkness of the Service-Ceremony

सेवा-समारोहक अन्हार *Sevā-Samārohak Anhār*

"The final list is written on the smallest page, and casts the largest shadow."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Applause can hide the very theft it seems to be applauding

Light can wear darkness as its clothing

The Darkness of the Service-Ceremony • सेवा-समारोहक अन्हार — card 1 of 2

Applause silences the question. "Stage-light is not always darkness's enemy — often darkness comes dressed in that very light. Garlands, songs, lamps, announcements all keep eyes turned upward, so that beneath the table a page can quietly be changed. Applause drowns a question's voice." Villagers recall a charitable "service ceremony" where their names were read aloud with honor — while their actual land and mortgage papers were altered behind the stage.

The separated line. Women recall being seated in a separate line and told simply: "raise your hand when your name is called, be photographed, press your thumbprint" — with no time given to read what was signed. Mīrā names it plainly: "where a woman's signature is taken without her reading it, that is not charity opening a door — it is seizure."

● *The honored theft*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A dazzling public ceremony can be exactly where a private theft hides.
- Applause and celebration can silence the very questions people should ask.
- An unread signature taken from anyone is never true consent.

The cloth remembers what people forgot

The Darkness of the Service-Ceremony • सेवा-समारोहक अन्हार — card 2 of 2

An object's honest witness. A recovered ceremony-cloth, stained with wax and ink from the very table where papers were signed, becomes physical evidence: "an object will testify, if asked the right question." Satyavrat insists it be handled with respect, "not as trash, but as the very skin of the crime's own stage."

A note that shakes the light. In Dīnbandhu's box, his son finds a hidden note: "after the stage reading, change the original." Satyavrat cautions patience even here: "the initials are known; the verdict is not yet." Bholārām's own realization closes the chapter with quiet grief: "then I understood I was honored, only so my own paper would stay silent." Śaśibhūṣaṇ signs and hands over the note himself, standing upright for the first time.

● *The remembering object*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A stained cloth or object can outlast memory as honest testimony.
- Being publicly honored can itself be the method of silencing someone.
- Even a painful family truth, offered freely, restores real dignity.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 177

House-to-House Papers

घर-घरक कागज *Ghar-Gharak Kāgaj*

"When a court begins to walk house to house, know that justice has found its feet."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- When a court begins to walk house to house, justice has found its feet

One person, four names

House-to-House Papers • घर-घरक कागज — card 1 of 2

A thumbprint's true meaning. "A thumbprint stays true, but the meaning built around it can become a lie. Aid is spoken, consent is written; a treatment loan, a scholarship's rights-surrender — paper becomes crime's mask." A widow's actual signed paper reads "voluntary consent" though she recalls only being told "aid for weak families" on stage.

Chamarū, Chandū, Chandramohan. One villager's true name appears in four different, mismatched forms across a stage-announcement, a medal, a registry, and a mortgage deed. He states plainly: "I am one person. In paper, I became four pieces." Āruṇi writes: "when a name is not stable, a right is not stable either."

● *The fractured name*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A true thumbprint can still be attached to a false written meaning.
- Legal language read in darkness becomes a weapon, not a protection.
- One person split across four mismatched names loses hold of their own rights.

Not blame, but honest reckoning

House-to-House Papers • घर-घरक कागज — card 2 of 2

A widow's own words. The deceased seal-bearer's widow, Rāgiṇī Devī, speaks for the first time in public: "my husband did not understand everything — some he understood, some not — but by his last days he was afraid." She hands over a torn note reading: "don't give copies; keep the originals upstairs" — asking only, "write his fault as it is, and write his fear too, or the crime won't be understood whole."

A method, not one man. A former volunteer reveals he was told by name — Chandrapal — to collect villagers' original papers under the guise of "safekeeping," never returning copies. Satyavrat's conclusion: "this is becoming not one person's crime, but a whole method." A quiet space is left at the center of the gathering for whoever the paper had made vanish.

● The named method

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A grieving widow's honest testimony can separate genuine fault from fear.
- Naming both a person's guilt and their fear gives the fuller truth.
- A single crime revealed to be a repeated method changes how it must be answered.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 178

The Upper Chamber

ऊपरक कोठरी *Ūparak Koṭhari*

"The upper chamber's whisper is fire in dry leaves — one spark, and the whole village catches."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A locked room's silence, once opened, becomes the whole village's memory returned

Dust is a forgetting, not a fault

The Upper Chamber • ऊपरक कोठरी — card 1 of 2

Opened with witnesses, not force. "Dust is not fault, only a thin sheet of forgetting — but when someone deliberately lets dust settle and keeps the window shut, dust itself becomes proof's own guard." A long-sealed archive-room is opened only with proper witnesses present, each strike of the lock's breaking timed and recorded, before anyone touches what lies inside.

"Original copy" — two words that shouldn't sit together. Inside, hidden folders reveal a woman's file marked "complete rights transfer" attached beneath an aid application she never fully understood — a mismatched thumbprint stamped where a true signature should be. Mīrā, quietly: "here the thumbprint is not speaking — it has been made to lie."

● The guarded dust

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Deliberately allowed dust and silence can themselves become an accomplice.
- A break-in for justice's sake must still be timed, witnessed, and documented.
- "Original" and "copy" used together in one confused phrase is itself a warning sign.

A stolen voice, not a translation

The Upper Chamber • ऊपरक कोठरी — card 2 of 2

Whose language is missing? Women's applications are found marked only with clipped notes — "husband absent," "son abroad," "widow," "illiterate" — never their own words. Āruṇi asks pointedly: "where is the language of the one it was 'explained' to?" Devikā answers: "this is not translation — this is the theft of a voice."

A hidden ledger of erased names. A locked, sealed register uses only codes — no names — to record transactions, prompting the sharp observation: "until now people were saving names; in this ledger, names were deliberately erased." Three elderly women sit calmly on the stairs, their quiet presence alone enough to stop anyone from interfering with the ongoing search.

● The stolen voice

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Clipped labels replacing a person's own words is a theft of voice, not aid.
- A ledger stripped of names down to codes reveals deliberate erasure.
- A community's calm, dignified presence can itself protect an investigation.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 179

The Seal's Footprints

मुहरक पगचिन्ह *Muharak Pagacinha*

"A seal's footprint does not dry like ink — it keeps showing the road."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A seal's footprint does not dry like ink — it keeps showing the road

The seal is an innocent child; the hand is not

The Seal's Footprints • मुहरक पगचिन्ह — card 1 of 2

Trust turned into merchandise. "The seal is like an innocent child — wherever the hand carries it, it goes. The fault lies not in the rubber, but in the finger that presses it without reading, that sells trust, or stays silent from fear." An old clerk admits plainly: "some things were read, some were merely trusted, and some — trust itself was sold."

One event, two records. At the tehsil office, a woman's land-transfer entry is dated to the very day she was told, on a public stage, she was only receiving "aid" — the registry instead reads "voluntary rights-surrender." Āruṇi: "one day, two stories — one public, one hidden."

● *The sold trust*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The instrument of harm is innocent; responsibility lies in the hand that used it.
- "Trust was sold" can be the plainest, most damning confession of all.
- A single day's event recorded two contradictory ways reveals deliberate deception.

Following the money's own footprints

The Seal's Footprints • मुहरक पगचिन्ह — card 2 of 2

A photograph that speaks louder than words. At the registration office, an official photograph meant to show consent instead reveals, plainly, "silent coercive body-language" — a hand pressing down on a shoulder just out of clear view. Mīrā names it without hesitation: "this is not consent in this photograph — this is the body-language of pressure."

Rupees leave a footprint even when names hide. At the bank, transferred funds are traced splitting quietly into three separate accounts — one tied, however indirectly, to a familiar name's shadow. Āruṇi's closing line: "the name stepped back, but money's own footprint remained." A grieving woman's final words settle the chapter: "it was not only my field that was taken from me — it was my trust."

● *The traced footprint*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An official photograph can itself reveal coercion in its unspoken body-language.
- Money leaves a traceable path even when the responsible name stays hidden.
- The deepest theft in fraud is often trust itself, more than any single possession.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 180

The City's Account

शहरक खाता *Śaharak Khātā*

"An account opens in the city, but its roots are planted in someone's own courtyard."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- An account opens in the city, but its roots are planted in someone's own courtyard

The body of the crime, not just its footprint

The City's Account • शहरक खाता — card 1 of 2

A trust's bright words, a dark trail. At a polished city accounting office, a trust's stated purpose reads beautifully — aid for the poor, widow rehabilitation, scholarships. Mīrā's method cuts through the shine: "however bright the purpose, we will trace where the money actually went." The donation list reveals funds arriving right after the very land transfers the villagers had been deceived into signing.

A shortened name is dangerous exactly where it should be accountable. An accountant admits, hesitating, that a courier regularly delivered ledgers with instructions like "merge these accounts under service-donation, no separate mention." Satyavrat: "an abbreviation is dangerous precisely where a full name could be held responsible." His fear is treated honestly: "fear too is testimony, but fear must not be allowed to strangle the truth."

● The bright purpose

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A charity's stated purpose can be beautiful while its money trail is not.
- An abbreviated name in a ledger often hides exactly who should be accountable.
- Fear is real testimony, but it must never be allowed to silence truth.

A threat becomes evidence, not silence

The City's Account • शहरक खाता — card 2 of 2

The digital crocodile leaves footprints too. Leaving the office, a threatening message arrives with a photo of the team taken outside the bank the previous day. Rather than panic, the team immediately documents everything — time, number, image, exact words — before backing up copies. Devikā: "this is not fear. This is evidence."

Even a false name still leaves a real trail. At the cyber crime office, a young officer initially dismisses the threat as "common" — until Mīrā's calm question, "does calling it common make the pain smaller?", changes his attention. He confirms even a temporary, falsely registered number leaves traceable digital footprints: "yes — the digital crocodile leaves paw-prints too."

● The documented threat

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A threat, calmly and immediately documented, becomes protective evidence.
- Dismissing fear as "common" does nothing to lessen the harm it causes.
- Even fraudulent digital identities leave traceable footprints behind.



The SIM's Shadow

सिमक छाया *Simak Chāyā*

"A SIM's shadow moves without a body — numbers change, intent does not."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A SIM's shadow moves without a body — numbers change, but intent does not

Stealing a name to threaten with it

The SIM's Shadow • सिमक छाया — card 1 of 2

The deepest insult imaginable. "When a living threat is sent under a dead person's name, this is not merely paper dishonesty — it is stealing memory's own body. The very name a family lights a lamp to honor becomes, in the marketplace, a tool of fear." A young shop owner, questioned gently, admits SIM cards were registered using elderly and even deceased villagers' identification, under the guise of a "free service camp."

A child's innocent question opens the door. A young boy unknowingly reveals a hidden box of blank SIM envelopes and photographs — including one of an elderly woman who had passed away two years prior. Devikā responds to the shop owner's fearful tears with balance: "not knowing does not wash away wrongdoing, but telling the truth now separates it from hiding the truth."

● *The stolen name*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Using a deceased person's name to threaten the living is memory's own theft.
- A child's innocent question can open doors adults have carefully guarded.
- Honest confession, even late, is meaningfully different from continued concealment.

Order, not a crowd, protects the truth

The SIM's Shadow • सिमक छाया — card 2 of 2

Recorded presence outweighs a threat. When intimidating visitors arrive to film the gathering, Devikā calmly narrates aloud, for the record: "time, location, three men, one motorcycle, filming." The would-be intimidators, once documented, quickly lose their nerve — "when fear is seen, it changes shape; when fear is written down, it is recognized."

Structured testimony, not a mob. As more villagers step forward with similar stories, Mīrā insists on order over emotional chaos: "a crowd will break the truth. One name, one thumbprint, one account, at a time." A grandson's grief over his deceased grandmother's misused identity closes the chapter with quiet clarity: "a name does not die — but it can be made to serve wrongly."

● *The ordered testimony*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Publicly documenting an intimidator's presence can itself defuse the threat.
- Structured, one-at-a-time testimony protects truth better than a chaotic crowd.
- A name does not truly die, but it can be wrongfully put to use after death.



The Door of the Hariharan Service Center

हरिहर सेवा केंद्रक दरबाजा *Hariharan Sevā Kendrak Darabajā*

"The service center's door distributes aid by day, and settles its hidden accounts by night."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- By day the service center distributes aid; by night, it settles its hidden accounts

An elderly watchman finds his true courage

The Door of the Hariharan Service Center · हरिहर सेवा केंद्रक दरवाजा — card 1 of 2

"Order from above" finally questioned. An old, gentle watchman, long told simply "orders from above," is asked plainly by Satyavrat: "above — meaning the roof, the office, or fear itself?" For the first time, he opens the center's door willingly, revealing bundled applications where the same handwriting appears attached to many different people's supposed consent.

Standing between duty and truth. When a network affiliate arrives to reclaim control of the archive, the elderly watchman physically stands between him and the cabinet: "today, the key stays in my hand." Threatened with losing his job, his answer carries quiet dignity: "I kept the key for years and lost my name. What good is keeping the job now?"

● *The courageous watchman*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Asking exactly what "orders from above" means can finally unlock silence.
- One person's quiet stand can protect evidence more than any confrontation.
- Losing one's good name matters more than losing a job built on silence.

Consent's thumbprint, someone else's sentence

The Door of the Hariharan Service Center · हरिहर सेवा केंद्रक दरवाजा — card 2 of 2

One thumbprint, many different hands' words. Multiple villagers' "consent" forms bear varied thumbprints but identical handwriting throughout — proof, as Āruṇi notes, that "the consent belonged to the people; the sentences belonged to someone else." A structured, orderly line — organized by the women themselves — lets each person calmly confirm or deny what they were told, avoiding chaos.

Two systems, one shared purpose. A sealed digital drive is handled with the same careful protocol as the paper evidence — photographed, witnessed, left untouched until proper process — Satyavrat noting "old paper and new digital proof: different dignity, same purpose — protecting truth from being broken." One grandson's closing words honor his late grandmother plainly: "her name did not die — it was only made to serve wrongly."

● The shared purpose

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Identical handwriting across many different people's forms reveals deception.
- An orderly, self-organized line lets truth emerge without chaos.
- Old paper and new digital evidence deserve the same careful, protective handling.



The Face Inside the Phone

फोनक भीतरक चेहरा *Phonak Bhītarak Cehrā*

"The face inside the phone stays hidden, but breath's own rhythm cannot hide."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The face inside the phone stays hidden, but breath's own rhythm cannot hide

Proof deserves the same dignity as a person

The Face Inside the Phone • फोनक भीतरक चेहरा — card 1 of 2

A grandmother's face is not a spectacle. "A grandmother's face in its wrinkles is not entertainment — it holds a household's years, a lineage's song, and a grandchild's trust. Making a false voice from that name is not merely technical crime — it is breaking the threshold of relationship itself." A sealed pen-drive is opened only under strict, witnessed protocol: "we will see, we will connect, we will record — but turn no one's grief into spectacle."

A hand, a laugh, a fan's rhythm. Camp photographs reveal a coercive edge just outside the frame; a "returned phone" video shows elderly villagers' devices quietly taken back after a photo op. In the darkest folder, a threat recording carries, faintly, a familiar laugh — recognized at once by an old caretaker: "that's the city gentleman's laugh."

● *The dignified proof*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A stolen name for a false voice breaks the threshold of relationship itself.
- Evidence must be handled with the same dignity owed to the person it concerns.
- A recognized laugh or rhythm can be as telling as any face.

Fear too asks permission

The Face Inside the Phone • फोनक भीतरक चेहरा — card 2 of 2

A neighbor's true voice, finally recognized. A recording of an elderly woman weeping, "I'm afraid of the police, please let me go," is instantly recognized — not a stranger's voice, but Somrī Kākī's own, from a village neighbor who had stayed shut indoors for days, said to be simply "unwell." Mīrā sends only two women to check on her gently: "no crowd. Only ask. No pressure."

A grandson's quiet grief. A blurred hand recurs across the evidence — long nails, a black thread bracelet, a small wound by the ring finger — matched to an old photograph. Deepak, grandson of the deceased woman whose voice was stolen, turns away from her photo rather than toward it: "today I did not see grandmother's face — I saw the theft of grandmother's name."

● *The permitted fear*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A frightened voice, once identified, deserves gentle care, not further exposure.
- Sending only two people quietly, without pressure, can restore real safety.
- Grief for a stolen name can be sharper than grief for a lost face.



The Mask of the Voice

आवाजक नकाब *Āvājak Nakāb*

"A voice's mask is not made of cloth — it is made of habit, and habit's own pattern gets caught."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A voice's mask is not made of cloth — it is made of habit, and habit's own pattern gets caught

A lamp toward truth, not the verdict itself

The Mask of the Voice • आवाजक नकाब — card 1 of 2

Community memory as the first court. "A stolen voice, like a stolen name, takes hold of a person's very existence. A mother knows her child's turn in sleep; an elder recognizes a son's voice in any crowd. So when a machine copies a voice, community memory becomes its first court — but this court moves by order and evidence, never by anger."

Analysis, not verdict. The cyber officer, Vinīt Jhā, cautions clearly: "a voice-match is not final proof in court — but it can certainly be a guiding lamp. Ears can be swayed by emotion; machines too can err. So we will never read a voice alone — always with time, place, phone, photograph, and witness together." Mīrā underlines it: "the ear's justice will not be decided by a crowd. It will be decided by careful order."

● *The guiding lamp*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A voice-match is a lead toward truth, never a verdict by itself.
- Emotional certainty is not the same as verified evidence.
- A community's own memory can serve justice best when it stays disciplined.

Even the guilty are heard, not chased down

The Mask of the Voice • आवाजक नकाब — card 2 of 2

Names shortened to hide, not to change. As matched evidence accumulates — a familiar hand, a familiar laugh, a familiar fan's rhythm traced from the service center to a distant city room — a young local man, Bishambhar, is recognized among the crowd. Mīrā refuses any pursuit: "whoever doubts themselves need not flee. Standing at the place of testimony does not lessen guilt, but speaking the truth can save one's name."

A fear that leaves its own receipt. Bishambhar's own phone rings mid-gathering; before he can hide it, a single word — "sir" — escapes, caught by the recording equipment still running. Āruṇi writes plainly: "suspicion present, did not flee; a call came, the time recorded." Ananyā adds: "fear, too, leaves its own receipt." That evening, Bishambhar comes forward on his own, offering a partial name — "Master," possibly "Madhaveś" — and his own wounded hand as evidence.

● *The offered truth*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Standing firm at testimony's place, though not proof of innocence, opens a path to it.
- Fear itself, recorded honestly, becomes its own kind of evidence.
- Coming forward voluntarily with a partial truth is a genuine first step.



The Master's Room

मास्टरक कमरा *Māṣṭarak Kamarā*

"The room opened, and the master became smoke — but even smoke needs a path."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The room opened, and the master became smoke — but even smoke needs a path

Procedure opens before any lock does

The Master's Room • मास्टरक कमरा — card 1 of 2

Documented before touched. Before any door is opened, a formal record is written first — time, witnesses present, condition of the lock, photographs — for "before the room of truth is opened, first the process itself must be opened." Above a renamed shopfront, "Master Media Service," a small rented room reveals coaching notes for distinct rehearsed personas: "grandmother-voice: gentle, trusting, no crying"; "police-voice: harsh, cite a law"; "bank-voice: don't say the OTP, but pressure for confirmation."

Reading relationships, not merely voices. Mīrā, reading the notes, grows stern: "this is not a study of language — it is a map of relationships. A grandmother's voice for a grandson, a farmer's voice for a son, a police voice for fear, a bank voice for trust — all four paths poured into one purse." Deepak finds a small paper strip bearing his own late grandmother's name and details — evidence he is asked to grieve over, but never to touch himself.

● The opened process

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A search for truth must open its own procedure before any physical lock.
- Rehearsed "voices" for family roles reveal a map of relationships, not just sounds.
- A grieving relative is allowed to feel loss without being allowed to disturb evidence.

A name shortened, a trail not shortened

The Master's Room • मास्टरक कमरा — card 2 of 2

Initials only, until confirmed. A pencil-drawn diagram links the service center, this room, a city account, and a trust — ending in only two bare initials. Satyavrat insists: "record the letters, not their meaning" — refusing to let a guess sit in a witness's chair. A rent register lists the tenant's name with one letter conspicuously missing: "Madhaveś" instead of "Mādhaveś." Devikā, quietly: "the name changed, not the wall."

A voice belongs to memory, not the market. A passing train's rumble matches, timing for timing, the very sound heard behind past threat calls — turning coincidence into confirmed evidence. The "master" himself has fled, but Deepak's words fix the chapter's true center: "even after grandmother died, they kept using her voice." Mīrā's answer becomes principle: "for this, we will write a voice's own right — even a deceased person's voice remains a family's memory, not goods for any market."

● The unshortened trail

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Shortening a name to hide is a tactic; it does not shorten the trail of evidence.
- Matched timing, like a passing train, can turn coincidence into real confirmation.
- A person's voice, even after death, remains family memory, never a market good.



Madhvesh's Real Name

मधवेशक असली नाम *Madhaveśak Asalī Nām*

"The truest name is written on the thinnest paper — the kind everyone calls waste."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The truest name is written on the thinnest paper — the kind everyone calls waste

Naming without blaming a whole village

Madhvesh's Real Name • मधवेशक असली नाम — card 1 of 2

A crime, not a caste or a clan. Mīrā sets the day's rule firmly: "today we search for a name, but no crowd will rise against that name. People commit crimes; the shell of a name is only what they wear to hide." Old school records reveal a name reshaped year by year — Madhukar Mādhav Miśra, then Mādhaveśa, then Madhaveśa — each change made deliberately by the boy's own father to distance the name from "village, poverty, and his mother's memory."

A mother's warning, chalked on a wall. At the family's abandoned home, an unfinished sentence remains chalked on the wall: "don't sell your voice." A neighbor recalls it was written by the boy's mother, before her death, when his gift for mimicry first drew mocking laughter. What began as a child's talent for voices became, years later, the very crime investigators now trace.

● The reshaped name

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A crime belongs to the person who commits it, never to their caste or village.
- A name reshaped year after year can itself become evidence of intent.
- A mother's early warning against her child's own path can prove tragically prophetic.

One bee caught, but where is the honey stored?

Madhvash's Real Name • मधवेशक असली नाम — card 2 of 2

Protecting a child's old record. Even while tracing the crime, the team insists on care: "a criminal's own childhood privacy is not to be sold in the marketplace, even after guilt is found." A childhood talent-show photo — the boy imitating voices to a delighted audience — is handled respectfully, not paraded.

The unfinished chain. A trembling Bishambhar reveals the accused's own resentment: "'Madhukar' reminded him of the village and his mother — 'Madhaveśa' sounded like paper, the city, and trust." One name has been found, but a larger structure remains: connections to Maheśvar (a relative), to Dhruveś, and to the city account are all marked "confirmation pending," for, as Mīrā insists, "an honest trail includes what is still missing."

● *The honest gap*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Even a proven wrongdoer's childhood record deserves basic privacy.
- Resentment toward one's own origins can help explain, without excusing, a crime.
- A trail that honestly marks its own gaps is more trustworthy than one that hides them.



The Queen Inside the Hive

छत्ताक भीतरक रानी *Chattāk Bhītarak Rānī*

"The queen inside the hive never visits a flower herself — only the buzzing gives away her address."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Society's own assumption that women are weak becomes the criminal's strongest vault

A name read is not a crime confirmed

The Queen Inside the Hive • छत्ताक भीतरक रानी — card 1 of 2

Clearing the innocent comes first. Mīrā opens firmly: "hearing the word 'queen' will not accuse any woman. If criminals use a woman's name as a shield, our first task is to remove the shield — not to strike the shield itself." An account bearing an elderly woman's name, Rānī Devī, is investigated with care rather than suspicion toward her.

A mismatched thumbprint tells the truth. Visited at her actual home, Rānī Devī denies any knowledge of large transactions — and her own crooked, work-worn thumbprint plainly does not match the smooth print used on the account. "The name is real," an officer concludes, "the thumbprint is false." Mīrā's answer becomes the chapter's principle: "therefore, the woman is not the criminal — the crime was done to the woman."

● *The mismatched print*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A name appearing in fraud records does not make its bearer a suspect.
- A mismatched thumbprint can itself prove a person's innocence.
- The crime was done to her, not by her — the distinction matters completely.

A vault built from presumed weakness

The Queen Inside the Hive • छत्ताक भीतरक रानी — card 2 of 2

Three masks, one method. Three separate "queen" accounts emerge — an elderly woman's real but stolen name, a young woman's name used though she has lived abroad for years, and an entirely fictional "women's aid committee" with no real members. Mīrā names the pattern precisely: "a society that presumes women weak gives criminals exactly the strong vault they need — a name presumed safe to steal from unnoticed."

Justice begins by clearing names. A grandson's simple request — "clear my grandmother's name" — becomes the day's first task before any pursuit of the actual culprit. Mīrā opens a formal "name-clearing list," beginning with Rānī Devī: "justice must first wash away the soot from the innocent's forehead, before it ever searches for the guilty."

● *The presumed vault*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Presuming a group weak can be exactly what makes them a target for exploitation.
- Multiple disguised identities reveal one coordinated method, not separate incidents.
- Justice's first duty is clearing wrongly implicated names, before pursuing guilt.



Maheshwar's Seal

महेश्वरक मुहर *Maheśvarak Muhar*

"A blue seal is not a stamp — it is a wound left on the body of the paper."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A blue seal is not a stamp — it is a wound left on the body of the paper

One seal, deliberately worn as three masks

Maheshwar's Seal · महेश्वरक मुहर — card 1 of 2

Fragmenting a name to exhaust the search. The same official seal appears in three subtly different forms across documents — "Maheśvaranātha," "Maheśvara Nātha," and simply "M. N. Sevaka." Satyavrat observes: "when a criminal wants to protect their identity, they rarely erase a name completely — they split it into three or four forms, so the investigation itself grows tired."

A craftsman's honest testimony. An elderly seal-maker, summoned respectfully, examines the seal's flaw with real expertise: a consistently compressed letter reveals it was machine-cut, from a specific shop near the city station — the very neighborhood already tied to the voice-fraud room. His memory adds a crucial detail: an unnamed young courier once collected three custom seals on someone else's authority, refusing to sign for them himself.

● *The fragmented identity*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Splitting one name into several slightly different forms can exhaust an investigation.
- A skilled craftsman's careful, expert testimony can be genuinely decisive evidence.
- Someone refusing to sign for an official's own item is itself worth noting.

Blank letterheads, and a watchman's late courage

Maheshwar's Seal · महेश्वरक मुहर — card 2 of 2

An old, troubling practice. The title "key-keeper" surfaces in an old donation register — an unfamiliar role tied to a locked iron chest holding certificates, seals, and troublingly, pre-signed blank letterheads: a practice, an elder recalls, going back to Baṭuknāth Hariharan's own era, when "donors would sign first, and the document would be written in afterward."

A confession finally offered. An old, long-avoided watchman, Gadādhara, arrives unsummoned and confesses: the iron chest still exists, hidden behind cement sacks, and he still holds a second, rusted key he was once told "never to use." Mīrā insists on patience even at this threshold: "justice's feet slip when it hurries. Tonight, only a watch is kept. The chest opens tomorrow — lawfully, with witnesses present, and with respect paid first to whatever names it contains."

● The offered key

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Pre-signed blank documents reveal a troubling practice reaching back generations.
- A long-silent witness's voluntary, late confession is real courage, not mere convenience.
- Even at a breakthrough's threshold, patience and lawful process must not be abandoned.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 189

The Iron Chest

लोहेक पेटी *Lohek Peṭī*

"A key can rust — but testimony does not."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A key can rust — but testimony does not

Opened as testimony, not curiosity

The Iron Chest • लोहेक पेटी — card 1 of 2

Order before urgency. The chest is opened only before a full witnessed assembly — panchayat members, police, a bank representative, two women from the local committee, and the children who have kept the name-watch throughout. Mīrā insists: "nothing leaves in anyone's pocket. The crowd stays outside. Opening this chest is not curiosity — it is testimony."

A blessed leaf, misused. Beneath a ceremonial dried coconut leaf lie stacks of pre-signed blank letterheads — spaces left empty exactly where a name should be written in later. Mīrā's ruling: "a crime can begin on a blessed leaf. The leaf is not guilty — read how it was used."

● *The witnessed opening*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Opening sensitive evidence requires full witness, not private curiosity.
- A blessed or ceremonial object can still be misused for wrongdoing.
- Even sacred symbols deserve scrutiny of their use, not blind trust.

A laborer's unfinished record

The Iron Chest • लोहेक पेटी — card 2 of 2

"Absence," not death. Among bundled thread-pouches sorted by color — red for women, blue for bank, black for phone, yellow for laborers — a torn page bears the name Biseśar Pāsvān, a bridge worker whose death was recorded only as "absence," never officially closed, under an old institutional seal. "Before his soul finds rest," the register itself seems to say, "his name must first be heard."

Small silences, kept for years. The elderly watchman Gadādhara, overwhelmed, admits: "I didn't know all of this was here." Satyavrat looks on him not harshly but with compassion: "small fears, kept for years, are what keep such a chest alive. A criminal's hand may be large, but the lock is often held shut by an ordinary person's silence." A pouch of counterfeit thumbprint rubber pieces is found last — devastating, final proof of systematic identity theft.

● The unfinished record

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A death recorded only as "absence" leaves a name unable to rest.
- An ordinary person's small, fearful silence can keep injustice alive for years.
- Compassion for a frightened witness does not mean excusing complicity.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 190

The Blue Register

नील पंजी *Nīl Pañjī*

"The color of the blue register spread beyond anyone's watch — for fear keeps no lock of its own."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The color of the blue register spread beyond anyone's watch — for fear keeps no lock of its own

A map of exploitable fear

The Blue Register • नील पंजी — card 1 of 2

Not a name-list, but a fear-list. The register's most devastating column is headed simply "Fear": entries read "son abroad," "widow," "child's upcoming marriage," "government aid needed." Mīrā, quietly: "this register does not hold names — it holds instructions for breaking a person."

Victims, not suspects. A page of women's names is marked, disturbingly, with notes like "convinced," "frightened," "stopped," "called again." Mīrā's firm ruling: "these women are victims, not suspects. Whoever's name opened an account is not necessarily the criminal. Whoever's thumbprint was stolen — blaming them would make us an accomplice to the crime."

● *The mapped fear*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A register that lists people's fears is a blueprint for exploitation, not aid.
- A stolen thumbprint's owner is a victim; blaming them repeats the harm.
- Care and firm ruling together protect the vulnerable from being doubly wronged.

Restoring a name, not just reading one

The Blue Register • नील पंजी — card 2 of 2

An insult, not a name. One entry reads only "well-woman" rather than a true name — quickly recognized as belonging to Hulāsī. Mīrā rules immediately: "this is not a name — it is an insult. If her real name is found, it will replace this word in the register itself."

A mark leading toward the chair. A note signed only with a small mark — two circles joined by a diagonal line — reads: "register secured. Order given verbally. No page opens without asking the chair." Gadādhār recognizes it at once: "that is Dhruveś's mark — he rarely signed his own name, saying a mark is safer than a signature." The chapter closes pointing toward an empty chair that somehow still commands.

● *The restored name*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An insulting label used instead of a true name deserves formal correction.
- A criminal's own preference for anonymous marks over signatures reveals guilt.
- An unoccupied chair can still command obedience — authority need not be present in person.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 191

Dhruvesh's Chair

ध्रुवेशक कुर्सी *Dhruveśak Kursī*

"A chair rules even while empty — until its true name is finally spoken."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A chair rules even while empty — until its true name is finally spoken

A forbidden room finally opened

Dhruvesh's Chair • ध्रुवेशक कुर्सी — card 1 of 2

What the excluded overhear. "A forbidden room speaks loudest to the very person kept outside its door." Gadādhara, who was never permitted inside, admits he still absorbed its sounds over years: "sometimes a phone's ring at night, sometimes a low man's voice, sometimes the drag of a chair being pulled." The room is entered only with the same full protocol as before — witnessed, photographed, nothing touched before it is fully documented.

A thread that leads back to the grove. A blue thread caught in the chair's wheel matches the very register's binding — and clinging to it, a small clump of soil that, remarkably, resembles the earth near the grove itself. No one rushes to conclusions: "soil and thread noted; source-testing required," Satyavrat writes plainly, resisting the pull toward premature certainty.

● The overheard room

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A room forbidden to someone is often the room they've listened to most closely.
- Careful documentation must precede even the most tempting physical evidence.
- A striking clue (matching thread and soil) still requires formal confirmation, not assumption.

Instructions for fear, hidden beneath comfort

Dhruvesh's Chair • ध्रुवेशक कुर्सी — card 2 of 2

A script for exploiting grief. A drawer yields a small note: "mother alone — voice gentle" — a direct echo of the register's "Fear" column, now revealed as literal performance instructions for a fraudulent caller. Satyavrat records plainly: "the crime was not only information — it was rehearsed performance," while carefully guarding the actual recorded evidence from being played publicly: "a victim's voice will not be opened for everyone's ear."

Prayer used to disguise fear. Behind the chair, a dried garland and incense-ash suggest a small, private shrine — even here, in the room where fear was manufactured. Mīrā's judgment is unflinching: "where incense is used to hide fear, that is not prayer — it is a curtain." A hidden envelope beneath the cushion, marked only "Dhru.," finally links Maheśvara's old letter, Madhukar's appointment note, and a torn fragment of Nanda Āruṇi's own long-lost report — three generations of the same unfinished harm, gathered under one silent chair.

● *The disguised fear*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Written instructions for exploiting a victim's grief reveal deliberate, rehearsed cruelty.
- Protecting a victim's actual recorded voice from public exposure remains essential, even amid discovery.
- Religious symbols used to mask wrongdoing turn prayer into a curtain, not a comfort.



The Voice of the Closed Recorder

बन्द रेकार्डरक स्वर *Banda Rekārḍarak Svar*

"The voice of the closed recorder rises highest of all — for now no one can stop it."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A recorder is not a toy — its silence has waited long enough to be heard

A captured voice deserves a protected hearing

The Voice of the Closed Recorder • बन्द रेकर्डरक स्वर — card 1 of 2

Dignity before disclosure. Before any file is opened, Mīrā sets firm terms: "a recorder is not a toy. It may hold a victim's weeping, a criminal's threat, a forged order, or someone's private shame. Every sound within it may become the court's own paper, so it will not be played for every ear." A visiting sound-analyst, Abhaya, removes his shoes before entering — even dust, Mīrā tells him gently, "is testimony here; don't discard it, only set it aside."

Fear-labeled folders. Inside, file names read like a map of manipulation: "soft_mother," "law_fear," "son_abroad," "admit," "chair_night." Playing the first brings a woman witness to tears; Mīrā halts it instantly: "if anyone's memory scatters, the hearing stops. Justice's pace cannot outrun a person's own body."

● *The protected voice*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Sensitive recorded evidence deserves the same dignity as the people it concerns.
- Even dust and small details can serve as testimony worth preserving.
- Justice must stop the moment it causes a witness further distress.

An old fear, still trembling in the room

The Voice of the Closed Recorder · बन्द रेकोर्डरक स्वर — card 2 of 2

A name from the past resurfaces. Amid the recordings, an old case name suddenly surfaces — "don't open Biseśar's matter now" — startling everyone present. The long-buried past and the present fraud, it becomes clear, are threads of the very same web.

An honest recognition, offered freely. The elderly watchman Gadādhara, listening from outside, recognizes a mixed voice: "like Madhukar Bābū, but sometimes Dhruveśa wrote him what to say." That evening, the grove receives not the recorder itself but an empty clay bowl in its place. "A voice needs no shape," a child explains, "it only needs an empty place to be heard."

● *The empty vessel*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An old, unresolved case can resurface unexpectedly within new evidence.
- Honest recognition offered voluntarily is real courage, not mere convenience.
- A symbolic empty vessel can honor testimony without displaying it publicly.



The Face of the Voice

आवाजक चेहरा *Āvājak Cehrā*

"A voice shows its face only when the person standing behind the breath is counted."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A voice shows its true face only when the person standing behind the breath is counted

A lead, patiently pursued

The Face of the Voice • आवाजक चेहरा — card 1 of 2

Comparison, not verdict. "No one will be declared guilty on the ear's confidence alone," Mīrā insists. "Voice must be joined with time, place, device, witness, and sample together." The technician Abhaya explains: "if breath-pauses, cut-off patterns, and background sounds match between two voices, the comparison strengthens — but the final judgment belongs to the legal process."

A trembling on the fifth sentence. Madhukar, asked to read five plain sample sentences, falters visibly on the last: "whatever is said, that is what I'll say" — his voice carrying, unmistakably, the strain of someone long used to being another's puppet.

● *The patient comparison*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A voice-match strengthens a lead but never substitutes for a full legal verdict.
- Matched breath-pauses and speech patterns can reveal what words alone conceal.
- A witness's involuntary hesitation can itself speak louder than their answer.

"First trust, then fear"

The Face of the Voice • आवाजक चेहरा — card 2 of 2

Two recordings, one phrase. An old inauguration-ceremony video surfaces, capturing Dhruveśa leaning to say: "first trust, then fear." The very same phrase, in the very same rhythm, is found in the sealed threat-recording — spoken by Madhukar under instruction. Two very different settings, one identical, damning cadence.

A trembling, freely given confession. Confronted gently with only the phrase — not accusation — Madhukar finally admits: "I did not see a face, I heard a voice... like Dhruveśa Bābū's." Mīrā corrects him with care: "not 'like' — if you are certain, say certain; if not, write your own doubt. Hiding doubt inside truth is where lies begin." His full, signed statement follows, hand shaking as he writes his own name.

● *The honest phrase*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An identical spoken phrase across two very different settings can be powerful evidence.
- Distinguishing "certain" from "like" is the honest core of real testimony.
- A trembling, voluntary confession is itself part of the truth it delivers.



The Summons of Breath

साँसक समन *Sāsak Saman*

"A summons is issued not on the body, but on the breath — and breath has no lawyer."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A summons is served not on the body, but on the breath — and breath has no lawyer

A summons is a call, not a punishment

The Summons of Breath • साँसक समन — card 1 of 2

Answering, not accusing. Mīrā clarifies for the gathered village: "a summons is not punishment. It is a calling — now you must make clear your breath, your voice, your signature, your chair, and your registry's connection." For the first time, the language of the court becomes a tool for answers rather than fear.

The house that says nothing. At Dhruveśa's grand, gated home, a manager claims the master is "away for treatment," the summons posted publicly beneath his own smiling charity poster. Fresh tire tracks near the gate — deeper going in than coming out — quietly suggest something other than absence. As the notice is posted, a phone rings inside; Gadādhara recognizes its ring at once as the very same one heard from the sealed upstairs room.

● The answering call

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A summons calls for an answer; it does not itself declare guilt.
- Careful physical observation, like uneven tire tracks, can quietly contradict a claimed story.
- A recognized sound can tie two seemingly separate places to one truth.

A courier's fear, honored with care

The Summons of Breath • साँसक समन — card 2 of 2

Absence recorded as evidence. Mīrā insists on rigor even amid impatience: "a crowd of assumptions blocks the path of proof. Record the absence, verify the excuse, note the timing." A lawyer's letter cites "public agitation" to delay the voice sample toward a private hospital; Mīrā holds firm: an official, secure venue only, with medical accommodation offered.

Mohan Pāsvān's quiet courage. A frightened courier, Mohan Pāsvān, comes forward voluntarily: "I don't want to become a criminal, but sealed envelopes passed through my hands twice. I was told only — no receipt, no memory." Mīrā gives him water, a seat, and time before any question, honoring an old principle: "where there is no receipt, let memory become the receipt." The chapter closes on an unanswered phone ringing three times in the dark — Dhruveśa's own breath, it seems, quietly reading its own summons.

● The receipted memory

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Documenting absence and excuses carefully is itself a rigorous form of evidence.
- A frightened intermediary's voluntary courage deserves gentle, unhurried care.
- Where no physical receipt exists, an honest memory can become the record instead.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER

Chapter 195

The Frozen Account

रोकल खाता *Rokal Khātā*

"When an account is first frozen, it becomes clear — even wealth can feel fear."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- When an account is first frozen, it becomes clear — even wealth can feel fear

A freeze is discipline, not vengeance

The Frozen Account • रोकल खाता — card 1 of 2

Five threads, joined with care. "A frozen account is not merely a locked vault door — it is a disciplined decision that must stop the flow of crime without touching a poor family's hearth." Name, phone, thumbprint, seal, and withdrawal-date are matched together before any freeze; a wrongful freeze becomes its own injustice. Victims' claim-registry stays entirely separate from the crime-accounts — "this division holds justice's compassion."

A name shortened, a payment stolen. Suryamukhī Devī's own name had been recorded as merely "Surajā" — restored in full after she describes selling her goat when a caller falsely threatened her son's arrest. Most devastating of all: a payment marked "Nanda Āruṇi documentation-assistance" surfaces — the name of the original bridge-tragedy's own witness, stolen even after death to fund further theft.

● *The disciplined freeze*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Freezing wealth demands the same evidentiary care as any accusation.
- Separating victims' claims from crime-accounts protects the innocent from the process itself.
- Even a deceased witness's own name can be stolen to fund further theft.

Fear finally speaks its true language

The Frozen Account • रोकल खाता — card 2 of 2

Threats follow the freeze. As freeze orders spread, calls arrive in escalating registers — polite concern, then hostile accusation, then Madhukar's own trembling voice pleading to reopen the account. Mīrā records everything, answers nothing: "once wealth is stopped, threats quickly show their true language."

"Memory-preservation" as its own theft. A trust titled "People's-Memory-Preservation" is discovered funding voice-recording equipment and a stay-house where Madhukar's phone rested through the night of a threat call. Āruṇi, furious yet precise: "they steal people's memory and call it preservation." Mīrā answers: "keep the anger — but write the line clean." The chapter closes on dew that refuses to sink into the register's page — Būṛhbā's cryptic line: "the meaning of water-burial is not yet understood."

● *The true language*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Stopped money quickly reveals threats in their truest, most honest form.
- A trust named for "preservation" can itself be the very theft it claims to prevent.
- Precision in anger — clean, careful language — serves justice better than fury alone.



The Meaning of Jalsamadhi

जलसमाधिक अर्थ *Jalasamādhik Artha*

"The meaning of water-burial is not known by water — it is known by the name."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The meaning of water-burial is not known by water — it is known by the name

Water is not the criminal

The Meaning of Jalsamadhi • जलसमाधिक अर्थ — card 1 of 2

The true drowning-agent. "Water is not guilty; water only carries away what it finds. The true drowning-agent is the system that, after the body is gone, steals the name too — that records the laborer as 'absent,' turns a woman's grief into her family's shame, and reduces an elder's trust into a mere account-figure." Three waters — village well, the Kamalā-Balān river, and the Gangā — are poured into one bowl: three kinds of witness joined as one.

The novel's oldest refrain returns. An old boatman, son of Phakīrā Sāhanī, brings the very words heard across a thousand years of this story: "my father used to say — the crocodile eats the body, not the name. As a child I didn't understand. Now I do: even when the body sinks, the name can still cling to the shore — until paper cuts it, a register swallows it, an account hides it, a voice-sample changes it. Then where does the name find its shore?"

● *The true criminal*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Water only carries what it finds; the system that erases names afterward is the real harm.
- Different waters — well, river, Ganga — can together represent different kinds of witness.
- The novel's oldest teaching returns transformed: the crocodile eats the body, never the name.

A definition finally spoken

The Meaning of Jalsamadhi • जलसमाधिक अर्थ — card 2 of 2

Ash of trust, not of a body. An elderly woman brings a small box: "this holds not my son's ashes — it holds the money I burned from shame, after a caller falsely told me he'd be arrested. My son was safe. My trust died." Mīrā does not open the box: "the ash of trust will not be thrown into the river. It will be kept beside the register. Even smoke can be testimony."

The definition, and the reversal. Vinīt Jhā writes the novel's own central definition: "Jalsamadhi: not merely physical death — the organized suppression of memory, identity, record, economic autonomy, social dignity, and voice." Five names finally rise — Biseśar Pāsvān, Salāmat Ansārī, Gopī Mahto, Rajnū Maṇḍal, and a line left deliberately blank for the still-unknown "Chotū." Mīrā weeps openly for the first time — one tear falling into the bowl — as Būṛhbā names the new rite: "you are no longer performing jalsamādhi. You are performing jala-udghāṭan" — water-opening, the reversal of water-burial.

● The water-opening

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Jalsamadhi is redefined as the organized suppression of memory and voice, not mere drowning.
- A deliberately empty space for an unknown name can shine brighter than any filled one.
- What was named a burial can be reversed into an opening — a name rising, not sinking.



The Name Risen Above

ऊपर उठल नाम *Ūpar Uṭhal Nām*

"When a sunken name rises, the water does not move — only the shore trembles."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- When a sunken name rises, the water itself does not move — only the shore trembles

Consent is the first offering

The Name Risen Above • ऊपर उठल नाम — card 1 of 2

Not spectacle, but permission. "Raising a name is not a performance. Whoever's wound it is, their permission is the first offering; whoever's household stays silent, that silence too is honored. If a village becomes a crowd merely watching tears, the drowning begins again." Phūlkalī, mother of the boy known at home as "Choṭū," arrives with quiet composure and asks that his page read plainly: he did not run away.

"Present in water, not absent." Ananyā's pencil breaks writing the word "absent" — she draws a line through it instead: "submerged in water, name present." New categories are created to honor incomplete truth honestly — paper-name, home-name, settled-name — recognizing a mother's memory as real evidence when joined with place, time, and witness. "A false completed name," Satyavrat rules, "is a second killing."

● The honored permission

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Raising a name always requires the wounded family's consent as its first step.
- "Present in water" honors a lost person more truly than the bureaucratic word "absent."
- A mother's memory, joined with corroborating evidence, becomes real, honorable proof.

Waiting deserves its own home

The Name Risen Above • ऊपर उठल नाम — card 2 of 2

A basket, not a wastebin. Unconfirmed names are given their own "waiting-basket," bound with red thread, rather than discarded as merely "unknown": "waiting too deserves a home. It will not live in a trash sack." Suryamukhī Devī asks that her own name be cleared alongside the dead's: "my name became a road into crime's account. I did not eat that money." Mīrā: "raising the dead's name and cleansing the living's name are not two separate tasks."

Process over pursuit. Late that night, watchers report an iron chest loaded into a car fleeing Dhruveśa's house down a back road. Mīrā insists: "no assumption — only what was seen." Abhaya's men are given one clear order: "no chase, no scuffle. If he runs, the road itself will testify; we will not break the process chasing an arrest." Satyavrat's closing principle: "justice that wins by breaking its own process is not a victory — it is the seed of the next injustice."

● The kept process

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- An unconfirmed name deserves a dignified "waiting" home, not dismissal as unknown.
- Restoring the dead's names and clearing the living's wrongly-tainted names are one single task.
- Refusing to break lawful process, even to pursue a fleeing suspect, protects justice's own integrity.



The Criminal's Own Ground

अपराधीक धरती *Aparādhīk Dharatī*

"The criminal's ground is no different soil — only its footprints differ."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The criminal's ground is no different soil — only its footprints differ

Distance, not anger, reads the truth

The Criminal's Own Ground • अपराधीक धरती — card 1 of 2

A shoe can lie; a stride cannot. "A shoe is a covering, a footstep is a habit. Shoes can change, cars can change, roads can be rerouted — but a startled stride still reveals its own gait, weight, and direction." When word comes that Dhruveśa's car has fled down a back road with an iron chest, Mīrā raises her hand: "tonight my feet will not be anger. My feet will be witness." The eager young men slow their pace.

Observation over pursuit. Abhaya calls not the police first, but the local night-watch: "we are not chasing, only observing evidence." When officers arrive drowsy and dismissive, he holds firm: "if law sleeps until morning, the chest may vanish by morning — the ground is already awake." Only then are two officers and a written village representative sent.

● The witnessing stride

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A shoe can be changed, but a startled stride still reveals the truth.
- Distance and calm observation serve justice better than anger or pursuit.
- Insisting evidence not be left to "morning" is not impatience, but diligence.

A bare foot is not mocked

The Criminal's Own Ground • अपराधीक धरती — card 2 of 2

Dignity even for the accused. The car sinks in wet sand; Dhruveśa himself is caught in his shoes' own headlights, without his usual polish. When his shoe sticks in the mud and his bare foot slips free, muffled laughter rises in the crowd — Mīrā stops it at once: "we will not humiliate a bare foot. The mud only kept what it wanted." His footprint is measured with the same careful respect given every prior piece of evidence.

"If innocent, the ground will say so too." Satyavrat answers Dhruveśa's furious claim of "private property": "if it's private, it will be listed, opened before witnesses, and returned. If it's a chest of crime against the people, this ground that has held it means something." When the chest is finally sealed and taken, a heavy dark mark remains pressed into the sand beneath it — Devikā: "where a lie is kept, the ground darkens." Mīrā corrects gently: "not darkened — weighted. The ground marks by weight, not color."

● The measured footprint

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Protecting even the accused from mockery preserves justice's own dignity.
- True innocence, if real, will be borne out by patient evidence, not haste.
- The ground marks guilt by weight and pressure, not by any moral "stain."



The Dawn Inside the Chest

संदूकक भीतरक बिहान *Sandūkak Bhītarak Bihān*

"Even inside a locked chest, dawn can come — if the lid is opened by a witness's own hand."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Even inside a locked chest, dawn can come — if the lid is opened by a witness's own hand

Opened as a wound's bandage, not a spectacle

The Dawn Inside the Chest • संदूकक भीतरक बिहान — card 1 of 2

Silence, witness, copy, consent. Mīrā sets the terms before the seal is even broken: "what's inside is someone's wound-bandage. Removing it lets air in — it is not a magic show." Under full witness, the chest yields a torn cloth, a coconut leaf, and a small bundle bound in red thread — and inside it, at last, a decades-old wage-register page bearing a name: "Shivanātha Sadā, age sixteen... payment: none... remark: absent."

A name comes home. In that single spoken syllable — "Choṭū" — thirty years of a mother's waiting finally finds its home. Phūlkalī does not weep; she sits upright. "The restoration of a name does not return the dead," the register records, "but it cuts away the false word 'absent' from history's page." Ananyā writes: "Choṭū's true name confirmed: Shivanātha Sadā. Absent, now present with name."

● *The homecoming name*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Sensitive evidence is opened like a wound's bandage — carefully, not as spectacle.
- Restoring a name doesn't return the dead, but corrects history's false "absent."
- A grieving mother's composed dignity can carry more weight than any lament.

"Eligibility" is a word cold enough to freeze a body

The Dawn Inside the Chest • संदूकक भीतरक बिहान — card 2 of 2

The stolen thumb, the stolen voice. Deeper folders reveal a devastating pattern: names marked ineligible for compensation, a forged thumbprint made for a woman who had no hand to press one, and a scripted "digital arrest" call-script moving from soft to harsh to shaming a family's honor. Devikā, reading it: "this crime is not of money — it is the hijacking of the mind."

A deliberately empty space, made public. The chest's final page bears the marks of past and present handlers of the scheme — ending in one line left blank: "Future Successor." Mīrā trembles: "crime is larger than any one person. Leave that blank space hidden, and the next Dhruveśa is already born." Over Āruṇi's hesitation, the blank space itself is copied and made public — "an empty space kept secret fills itself again; an empty space made public stands as its own watch."

● *The public blank*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Calling human suffering "ineligible" is language cold enough to injure on its own.
- Naming psychological manipulation as "mind-theft," not merely fraud, honors its true harm.
- A deliberately blank space for future wrongdoing must be exposed, not hidden away.



VOL-2 • THE NOVEL PROPER — FINALE (CLOSING CHAPTERS 101-200)

Chapter 200

The Guardian of the Name

नामक पहरुआ *Nāmak Paharuā*

"As long as a name is called, a green bud survives even in the driest stump."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- As long as a name is called, a green bud survives even in the driest stump

A register of silence, not only of crime

The Guardian of the Name • नामक पहरा — card 1 of 3

Justice becomes the village's own cleaning. "The outer crocodile's teeth are visible; the inner crocodile's teeth hide as convenience." Satyavrat opens a new page — "The Register of Silent Names" — and the village names its own complicity aloud: fear, profit, display, blind trust in dates, the habit of looking away from paper, "a poor person's pain treated as entertainment," "a marketplace built from suffering." No accused signs this page — only the living, admitting what let the harm continue.

The wound made permission, not spectacle. Mīrā insists to the very end: "today's final chapter will be written, but this is not an ending — it is the page on which we open our eyes and take up responsibility for our own names." Every family whose name enters the record must first consent; a family that stays silent is honored in that silence too. "A community that becomes a crowd merely watching tears begins the drowning all over again."

● The village's own ledger

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Naming a community's own silent complicities is itself an act of justice.
- Consent remains the first and final rule, even at the story's very close.
- Watching grief as spectacle repeats the very harm the whole story has fought.

The oldest refrain returns, transformed

The Guardian of the Name • नामक पहरुआ — card 2 of 3

The crocodile releases the letters. In the bowl's water, a final vision rises — a crocodile of river, ledger, paper, date, body, wealth, and memory all at once. This time it does not open its jaws to devour; caught between its teeth are letters, which rise to the surface and arrange themselves one final time into the novel's oldest line: "the crocodile eats the body, not the name." Phūlkalī weeps openly for the first time — not lament, but rain — and the whole village becomes, for a moment, one shared water: memory's water, not forgetting's.

A blank cloth, deliberately kept empty. The elder Bā's memory is honored with a small cloth tied to the grove's lowest branch — left entirely blank. "Not yet," Phūlkalī explains. "When some new injustice first trembles, its name will be written here." The emptiness is not frightening; it is prepared. Būṛhbā finally steps down from the branch for the first time, laying his staff of judgment on the ground: "now let the living decide."

● The transformed refrain

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The novel's oldest teaching returns fully redeemed: the crocodile can release the name.
- Open grief, finally shared by a whole community, becomes memory's water, not forgetting's.
- A deliberately blank space, ready for the next injustice, is preparedness, not fear.

The watch becomes the living game

The Guardian of the Name • नामक पहरा — card 3 of 3

A bowl passed hand to hand. Mīrā lifts the ritual bowl of water — expected to pour it onto the earth — and instead passes it, hand to hand, until it rests trembling in a small child's palms. "If it falls," she says, "the soil will drink it. Only the name must not fall." The child releases one drop onto the ground, and it forms a small, perfect circle — the very shape of the kabaddi ring where this whole story first began.

The story does not end; it becomes a rule of the game. Children resume their circle-game, its rule now simple and permanent: whoever crosses the line must return calling a name; whoever forgets a name is not eliminated, only given another turn to learn it. "Losing means remembering; winning means speaking a name correctly." Būṛhbā's staff rests on the ground, unclaimed — a fresh green bud appears on the long-dead stump, and no one calls it a miracle: "if the watch stays alive," the village understands, "even a dried-out stump can still hold a bud within." A name is called; the leaves of the grove answer.

● The living game

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Passing the bowl hand to hand turns solemn ritual into shared, living responsibility.
- In the new rule of the game, losing means remembering, and winning means naming rightly.
- The story ends not by closing, but by becoming an ongoing, ordinary game the children keep playing.



The Invitation of the Nameless Planet

अनाम ग्रहक आमन्त्रण *Anām Grahak Āmantraṇ*

"Pack your bag for the journey — soil's scent and mother's song are wealth enough to carry."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The dream-sequence's own folk-songs, kept intact as record

Traveling light, with name as the only lamp

The Invitation of the Nameless Planet • अनाम ग्रहक आमन्त्रण — card 1 of 1

Two paired folk-songs. A packing-song and a call-and-response song, both set to an "ākāś-baṭagabanī" (sky-wayfaring) tune, answer the same question from opposite directions: what does a traveler carry to the stars? The packing-song's refrain insists on soil's scent and a mother's song over wealth or weapons; the second song has the distant planet itself ask what will be brought, and the child's answer names only "the breath of a name, the scent of soil, a child's hand."

A crack in the glass wall. Both songs share a striking image: as the word "present" is written, a crack appears in a glass wall — the same wall that, in the narrative chapters, separated Earth from the artificial dream-planet. The village's dust rises to join the star's own orbit, and "the nameless planet's darkness" is answered by "Earth's own voice."

● *The named journey*

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Two folk-songs frame the same journey as both a packing-list and a planet's own question.
- The only wealth carried across is soil's scent, a mother's song, and a name.
- A glass wall cracks precisely at the writing of the word "present."



Kabaddi Between the Planets

ग्रहक बीच कबड्डी *Grahak Bīc Kabaḍḍī*

"Go, o player, to the star's own turn — breath held, name spoken; keep faith with both together."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The dream-sequence's own folk-songs, kept intact as record

Four turns, one game

Kabaddi Between the Planets • ग्रहक बीच कबड्डी — card 1 of 1

Earth, humanity, justice, coexistence. Set to a "kabaḍḍī-sky" tune, this song reimagines the game's traditional "turns" as four cosmic ones: the first for Earth, the second for humanity, the third for justice, the fourth for coexistence. "Wherever the game reaches, a lesson will not be missing" becomes the refrain — the same rule that held in the village kabaddi ring now claimed to hold among the stars.

A child says "present," not "kabaddi." The second song reverses direction — the players return breath held, and Ananyā (named directly) records that the game's line stretched away from Earth without the breath ever breaking. A child, mid-game, says not the traditional cry "kabaddi" but "present" instead — and the first crack appears in an invisible wall separating the worlds.

● The four turns

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- The game's turns are reimagined as Earth, humanity, justice, and coexistence in sequence.
- Wherever the game travels, its lesson of naming and presence travels with it.
- A child's slip — saying "present" instead of "kabaddi" — becomes the story's first crack.



The Name-Reading on the Nameless Planet

अनाम ग्रह पर नाम-पाठ *Anām Grah Par Nām-Pāṭh*

"Swing gently, swing on the star's own swing — one end held by the elders, the other by a child."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The dream-sequence's own folk-songs, kept intact as record

A thread strung across the sky

The Name-Reading on the Nameless Planet • अनाम ग्रह पर नाम-पाठ — card 1 of 1

Memory, love, responsibility. A swinging-song, set to a "jhūlan-ākāś" (swing-sky) tune reminiscent of the monsoon Sāvan swing-songs, pictures a thread of names stretched between the stars — one end held by ancestors, the other released into a child's hands. Even in the sky's great depth, the thread "will not break," for it is woven of memory, love, and responsibility together, generation passed to generation.

Where there is no name, breath is only half. The second song, set to an "ākāś-virahā" (sky-separation) tune, states plainly: "where there is no name, life's very breath is only half." On a wall marked only by numbers, a crack appears at the sound of a name spoken aloud, and a child returns home with the declaration: "this, right here, is our world."

● The unbreakable thread

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- A thread of memory, love, and responsibility can stretch across the sky without breaking.
- A life without a name is described as only half a breath.
- Even a numbered, nameless wall cracks at the sound of a name.



Garh Nārikel Chooses Earth Again

गढ़ नारिकेल फेर पृथ्वी चुनैत अछि *Garh Nārikel Phera Pṛthvī Cunait Achi*

"Choose the Earth, again and again choose the Earth — better this mud than a palace of glass."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- The dream-sequence's own folk-songs, kept intact as record

A homecoming as chosen dignity, not defeat

Garh Nārikel Chooses Earth Again • गढ़ नारिकेल फेर पृथ्वी चुनैत अछि — card 1 of 1

The wound and its own cure, side by side. A "soil-love" song insists the choice of Earth is not humility but "a great proof of love" — for here alone lies both the wound and the medicine for that wound, both the sweat of labor and the songs of the people. "Where there is a wound," it urges, "plant the seed of healing there" — build justice into the very ground rather than fleeing it.

A name's threshold, not a numbered flat. The final song has the villagers themselves declare their choice complete: "we chose Earth" over "a dome without memory." What is wanted is not a numbered dwelling or a contracted ration of oxygen, but "a name's own threshold" and "our own air and soil." The refrain closes the whole appendix as it closes the cycle: "not a final page — the next watch's place."

● The chosen ground

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Choosing Earth is framed as love's proof, not resignation or defeat.
- The wound and its healing are said to belong to the very same ground.
- A name's own threshold is valued above any numbered, memory-less dwelling.



The Videha Drama Festival — Second Draft (Unfinished)

विदेह नाट्य उत्सव (दोसर प्रारूप — अपूर्ण) *Videha Nāṭya Utsav (Dosar Prārūp — Apūrṇa)*

"This drama is unfinished. It will stay unfinished — for as long as that shadow still moves in the dark."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- A fragmentary alternate script, distinct from the completed Drama Festival (ch. 133–137)

A second play the story dares not finish

The Videha Drama Festival — Second Draft (Unfinished) • विदेह नाट्य उत्सव (दोसर प्रारूप — अपूर्ण) — card 1 of 2

New masks for an old darkness. This alternate, self-consciously incomplete script imagines a second festival attempt after "chapter two hundred is complete." Its cast reworks familiar figures into new registers: Būṛhbā returns as the time-voice narrator; Bijjī (the mongoose) appears as a mute guardian whose old enemy, the snake, is no longer in water but literally "in the wires"; and a new antagonist, "Himapuruṣa" (Snow-Man/Ice-Man), is named "the new crocodile — lord of digital darkness," whose face is deliberately never fully shown, for "he is only a name."

A programmer's unfinished guilt. A minor character, "the hungry programmer," begins to confess — "I only wrote the code; I didn't know whose home it would open" — and vanishes mid-sentence when the stage light fails, his chair left empty. The director, panicked, cannot find where his own character disappeared to: "some characters," the narrator answers, "are simply left with their story unfinished."

● The unshown face

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Recasting old guardians against a new digital antagonist keeps the old ethic alive in new form.
- The antagonist is deliberately never fully shown — power that hides its face stays a name only.
- An unfinished confession, and a character who simply vanishes, can speak as loudly as a finished one.

A blank page, left open on purpose

The Videha Drama Festival — Second Draft (Unfinished) • विदेह नाट्य उत्सव (दोसर प्रारूप — अपूर्ण) — card 2 of 2

Choosing to follow the shadow. As a moving shadow crosses the stage, the narrator names it plainly: "the crocodile — it has moved on ahead, into the dark my light does not reach. The choice is yours now, director." After a long pause, the director closes the diary, sets it down, and chooses to follow the mongoose toward the shadow rather than complete the scripted play.

An intentional incompleteness. The stage goes dark but for one lamp and an open, abandoned diary. The narrator's final words, from the darkness: "this drama is unfinished. It will stay unfinished — for as long as that shadow still moves in the dark, no curtain can properly fall." The manuscript's very last line records simply: "here the diary's page is blank. Videha Drama Festival — second draft — incomplete."

● The chosen incompleteness

TEACHING TAKEAWAY

- Choosing to act — following the shadow rather than finishing the script — outweighs completing the performance.
- The play is deliberately left unfinished as long as the harm it depicts remains unresolved.
- A blank final page can itself be the most honest ending a story can offer.



APPENDIX 1 • GARH NĀRIKEL FOLK-LEXICON

Chapter 1.1-6

Landmarks That Remember

खण्डहर, गहबर, इनार, डबरा, घाट, नाव *Khaṇḍahar, Gahabar, Ināra, Ḍabarā, Ghāṭ, Nāv*

"A small pond too can hold the whole sky."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — village landmarks and spirit-places, paraphrased from their accompanying vignettes

What ruins, wells, and puddles remember

Landmarks That Remember • खण्डहर, गहबर, इनार, डबरा, घाट, नाव — card 1 of 2

The Speaking Brick of the Ruins. A brick in an old ruin turns warm after rain; villagers say it is the last hearth-brick of a flood-scattered family. Ananyā, listening closely, hears a ladle, a child's laughter, a door falling — so before any ruin is cleared, a house-song is sung there first.

The Sacred Grove's Unfailing Lamp. A lamp in the village shrine never blows out while someone stands by the helpless — but flickers strangely on days of empty ritual pride. Bā teaches: the gods watch justice, not ghee.

The Old Well's Echo. Calling a name into an old well returns not the name but its bound relationship — "Biseśar" answers "mother"; "Sarayū" answers "wages." Āruṇi Nandan realizes the village treats a name as a whole web of relation, not a lone person.

● Categories 1–3

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Speaking Brick of the Ruins — खण्डहरक बोलैत ईंट
- The Sacred Grove's Unfailing Lamp — गहबरक अखण्ड दीप
- The Old Well's Echo — पुरान इनारक प्रतिध्वनि

A puddle's moon, and a red turban's courage

Landmarks That Remember • खण्डहर, गहबर, इनार, डबरा, घाट, नाव — card 2 of 2

The Puddle's Moon. A small puddle, thought useless once dried, once reflected the full moon whole while the large pond did not; Bā's lesson — even a little water can hold the whole sky — saves it as a child's play-pool and bird-bath.

The Old Ghat's Red Turban. A red turban is seen floating bodiless at the river's old landing during floods — the mark, it's said, of a boatman who gave his boat to save five children; villagers tie red cloth there in swift currents to remember boatmen's courage.

The Boat-Rowing Song. Watching exhausted boatmen paddling unevenly, Bā raises a short refrain; the oars fall into one rhythm and the boat clears the whirlpool — proof, the boatmen say, that a shared voice is lighter than an oar but stronger than the boat itself.

● Categories 4–6

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Puddle's Moon — डबराक चान
- The Old Ghat's Red Turban — पुरान घाटक लाल पगड़ी
- The Boat-Rowing Song — नाव खेबाक गीत



Lullabies, Blessings, and a Verse That Traveled

लोरी, मंगल, पुकार, बाढ़ि, कटाक्ष, परदेशी-स्मरण *Lorī, Maṅgal, Pukār, Bāḍhi, Kaṭākṣ, Pardeśī-Smaraṇ*

"We didn't count the rice-ears — so is the field not counted either?"

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — occasions of comfort, celebration, crisis, and social critique

Comfort in the flood, blessing in the rain

Lullabies, Blessings, and a Verse That Traveled • लोरी, मंगल, पुकार, बाढ़ि, कटाक्ष, परदेशी-स्मरण — card 1 of 2

The Child's Lullaby. On a flood-frightened night, Bā turns the river into a swing, the moon into a guardian, and the tree into a grandmother — the children sleep as the water rises and the fear, inside, recedes.

The Wedding Blessing. Rain interrupts a wedding canopy; Bā declares the clouds have come to bless the couple with the scent of the earth — the women raise a song, the boys hold the canopy, and the marriage does not stop.

The Song for Calling the Gods. In crisis at the shrine, Nanda Āruṇi asks first for the courage to hear the truth, not for wealth — the lamp's flame lengthens, and all present pledge to record the nameless.

● Categories 7–9

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Child's Lullaby — बच्चा सुतएबाक लोरी
- The Wedding Blessing — विवाहक मंगल
- The Song for Calling the Gods — देवताकेँ पुकारबाक गीत

Fighting the flood, and a line that reached the market

Lullabies, Blessings, and a Verse That Traveled • लोरी, मंगल, पुकार, बाढ़ि, कटाक्ष, परदेशी-स्मरण — card 2 of 2

The Song for Fighting the Flood. Word of a broken embankment sends every neighborhood running with sacks, mud, bamboo, and rope; a sack is set down on each beat of the song, and the embankment holds till dawn — bound, villagers say, by voice as much as mud.

Satire on Injustice. An official dismisses a case with "not on the list, so no incident"; that evening the women add a new line to their planting-song — "we didn't count the rice-ears, so is the field not counted either?" — and it travels to the market, the ghat, and the school by the next day.

The Song for Remembering the Migrant. An extra lamp is kept at the threshold each Kārtik evening for those who left for distant work — said to light not the way home but the way of memory, reaching a homesick migrant across the city.

● Categories 10–12

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Song for Fighting the Flood — बाढ़िसँ जूझबाक गीत
- Satire on Injustice — अन्यायपर कटाक्ष
- The Song for Remembering the Migrant — परदेशीकेँ मोन पाइबाक गीत



Naming Fear, Housework, and the Ethics of Digging

भय, कुटाइ, घर-छारब, माटि-काटब, बान्ह, पोखरि *Bhaya, Kuṭāi, Ghar-Chārab, Māṭi-Kāṭab, Bāndh, Pokharī*

"Whatever you cut, you must also care for."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — fear named aloud, and the seasonal rites of house and earth

Naming fear until it shrinks

Naming Fear, Housework, and the Ethics of Digging • भय, कुटाइ, घर-छारब, माटि-काटब, बान्ह, पोखरि — card 1 of 2

The Song for Surviving a Night of Fear. Beside the dark grove, frightened children are told by Bā to name their fear aloud so it shrinks; they call out "ghost," "crocodile," "darkness" in turn until the refrain becomes simply "we are together."

The Rice-Pounding Song. Four uneven pestle-strokes threaten disaster until Sarayū steps between them with a short refrain; the pestles fall together, and the village remembers that day's rhythm more than its rice.

The Song for Re-Thatching the House. Before the rains, a whole family re-roofs together — the old untying the worn thatch, the young handling bamboo, women passing rope and straw, children carrying small bundles: not mere repair, but a passed-down practice.

● Categories 13–15

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Song for Surviving a Night of Fear — भयक राति काटबाक गीत
- The Rice-Pounding Song — धान कुटाइक गीत
- The Song for Re-Thatching the House — घर छारबाक गीत

Earth taken with permission

Naming Fear, Housework, and the Ethics of Digging • भय, कुटाइ, घर-छारब, माटि-काटब, बान्ह, पोखरि — card 2 of 2

The Soil-Cutting Song. Before cutting earth for a new field-ridge, villagers ask the ground's permission — touching a handful of soil to the forehead with the vow, "whatever you cut, you must also care for" — so no wasteful pit is left behind.

The Embankment-Repair Song. Children are the first to spot a crack in the embankment, marking it with small mud-clumps; Nanda Āruṇi, recognizing the game's importance, gathers the village — so embankment-repair day is still called the children's first call.

The Pond-Clearing Song. When a silted pond is declared "dead," Bā objects — "water does not die, only its path is blocked" — and after a communal clearing, the old spring breaks free again to the first fish's leap and the village's applause.

● Categories 16–18

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Soil-Cutting Song — माटि काटबाक गीत
- The Embankment-Repair Song — बान्ह मरम्मतिक गीत
- The Pond-Clearing Song — पोखरि उराहबाक गीत



APPENDIX 1 • GARH NĀRIKEL FOLK-LEXICON

Chapter 1.19-24

Carrying, Pulling, Gathering, Choosing, Plowing, Bordering

भार, नाव-खिंचब, जाल, बीआ, जोतब, मेड़ *Bhār, Nāv-Khiñcab, Jāl, Bīā, Jotab, Meḍ*

"Sometimes a whole year's field lives inside one small seed."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — labor-songs of shared weight, and the discipline of the field's first steps

Songs that make many hands one

Carrying, Pulling, Gathering, Choosing, Plowing, Bordering • भार, नाव-खिंचब, जाल, बीआ, जोतब, मेड़ — card 1 of 2

The Load-Carrying Song. A heavy bamboo pole for a wedding canopy twists under uneven pulling until an old craftsman gives a short call-and-response rhythm; once breath is shared, the pole lifts easily — heavy work, the saying goes, needs short words but strong rhythm.

The Boat-Pulling Song. A boat stuck in dry riverbed sand will not move for scattered pulling; Āruṇi Nandan counts the beat, Ananyā raises the refrain, and on the third pull the boat slides free — rope joins hands, but song joins breath.

The Net-Gathering Song. Gathering the net after fishing is hardest, since fish, grass, and debris tangle the knots; an elder fisherman teaches the children, "casting a net is courage, gathering it is responsibility" — the knots loosen to the song's refrain.

● Categories 19-21

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Load-Carrying Song — भार उटेबाक गीत
- The Boat-Pulling Song — नाव खिंचबाक गीत
- The Net-Gathering Song — जाल समेटबाक गीत

The field's first steps

Carrying, Pulling, Gathering, Choosing, Plowing, Bordering • भार, नाव-खिंचब, जाल, बीआ, जोतब, मेड़ — card 2 of 2

The Seed-Selecting Song. Bā chooses seed-grain not for its shine but for fullness, health, and old flavor; asked why she keeps small grains too, she answers that a whole ancestral field can live inside one small seed.

The Plowing Song. Before the first plow-furrow, a farmer tests the soil's moisture by hand and pats the ox's neck, saying "the work is shared" — folk belief holds that grain from soil plowed with a curse at the animal tastes bitter.

The Ridge-Building Song. A ridge between two fields is both boundary and water-support; when a quarrel once cut a ridge, both fields lost their water — "if a boundary becomes enmity," Bā warned, "both households run dry" — and the two families rebuilt it together.

● Categories 22–24

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Seed-Selecting Song — बीआ चुनबाक गीत
- The Plowing Song — खेत जोतबाक गीत
- The Ridge-Building Song — मेड़ बनबाक गीत



Waiting for Rain, Weeding, Watering, and the First Cut

वर्षा-प्रतीक्षा, सोहनी, पटौनी, रोग-पोका, कटनी, बोझा *Varṣā-Pratīkṣā, Sohanī, Paṭaunī, Rog-Pokā, Kaṭanī, Bojhā*

"Holding back water is not wealth — sharing it is life."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — the middle season's care, watching, and gratitude

Watching the sky, weeding the field

Waiting for Rain, Weeding, Watering, and the First Cut • वर्षा-प्रतीक्षा, सोहनी, पटौनी, रोग-पोका, कटनी, बोझा — card 1 of 2

The Song for Waiting on the Rains. As clouds gather and pass without rain, women turn empty water-jars up toward the sky as if inviting the clouds to fill them, while children see boats, crocodiles, and elephants in the cloud-shapes — waiting becomes play within the song.

The Weeding Song. Pulling weeds, Sarayū observes that not everything green is rice — a line that carries, within farm-work, the difference between a false promise and real help; women hold the refrain as they clear both field and society together.

The Irrigation Song. When one field's turn holds back too much night-water and the next runs dry, Nanda Āruṇi opens the channel to divide it evenly — and the song rises: "holding back water is not wealth, sharing it is life."

● Categories 25–27

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Song for Waiting on the Rains — वर्षाक बाट जोहबाक गीत
- The Weeding Song — सोहनीक गीत
- The Irrigation Song — पटौनीक गीत

Naming the pest, honoring the harvest

Waiting for Rain, Weeding, Watering, and the First Cut • वर्षा-प्रतीक्षा, सोहनी, पटौनी, रोग-पोका, कटनी, बोझा — card 2 of 2

The Pest-and-Blight Song. Seeing yellowing rice-leaves, villagers reach first for pesticide; Bā turns the leaf over, checks for small insects and soil-moisture, and insists, "know the disease's name before treating it" — saving needless poison.

The First-Reaping Song. Before the first sickle-cut, one corner of every field is deliberately left standing for birds and small creatures; when Ananyā asks why not reap it all, Bā answers, "don't leave empty the field that gave you grain."

The Sheaf-Carrying Song. A loosely tied sheaf of cut rice scatters grain along the path; an old farmer reminds that a sheaf carries not just weight but a household's yearly trust, and the song's rhythm times the rope-tightening, the shoulder-change, and the resting-place.

● Categories 28–30

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Pest-and-Blight Song — रोग-पोकाक गीत
- The First-Reaping Song — कटनीक गीत
- The Sheaf-Carrying Song — बोझा उटेबाक गीत



APPENDIX 1 • GARH NĀRIKEL FOLK-LEXICON

Chapter 1.31-36

Threshing, Storing, Fishing, Spinning, and the Craftsman's Hand

दाउन, मड़ाइ, भण्डार, मछैर, चरखा-कोल्हु, कारीगर *Dāun, Maḍāi, Bhaṇḍār, Machaira, Carkhā-Kolhu, Kārīgar*

"Filling the granary is not greed — it is a shared caution for a hard day."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — the granary's discipline, the river's restraint, and the workshop's rhythm

The circling ox, the watching wind

Threshing, Storing, Fishing, Spinning, and the Craftsman's Hand • दाउन, मडाइ, भण्डार, मछैर, चरखा-कोल्हु, कारीगर — card 1 of 2

The Threshing Song. Oxen circling to thresh rice let children witness a life-cycle story — seed, sprout, ear, grain, seed again; the animals are never driven without rest.

The Winnowing Song. Winnowing-day requires watching the wind's direction so chaff and grain separate cleanly; when the wind once shifted suddenly, the refrain's cry "stop, stop" made every hand pause in time, saving the grain.

The Granary Song. Before rice fills the storage-bin, the clay container is prepared with sunlight, neem leaves, and ash; Bā teaches that filling a granary is not greed but a shared caution for hard days, with a separate measure always kept for the poor.

● Categories 31-33

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Threshing Song — दाउनक गीत
- The Winnowing Song — मडाइक गीत
- The Granary Song — भण्डारक गीत

Restraint on the river, rhythm in the workshop

Threshing, Storing, Fishing, Spinning, and the Craftsman's Hand • दाउन, मडाइ, भण्डार, मछैर, चरखा-कोल्हु, कारीगर — card 2 of 2

Fishing and the Fisherfolk. A day's catch turns up mostly small fish; the fishermen release them back into the pond, and when a child asks if their share is now smaller, the answer comes: "we left next year's share in the water."

The Spinning-Wheel and Oil-Press Song. The spinning wheel and the oil-press both turn in repeated circles — Bā notes that repetition rooted in honest labor produces thread and oil, but repetition rooted in falsehood produces only exhaustion.

The Craftsman and Tool Song. Carpenters, smiths, leatherworkers, potters, and bamboo-workers recognize each other's presence by the sound of their tools alone; at one shared repair-gathering by the grove, each tool's distinct sound became a refrain of its own.

● Categories 34–36

REFERENCE INDEX

- Fishing and the Fisherfolk — माछमारी आ मछैर
- The Spinning-Wheel and Oil-Press Song — चरखा आ कोल्हुक गीत
- The Craftsman and Tool Song — कारीगर आ औजारक गीत



APPENDIX 1 • GARH NĀRIKEL FOLK-LEXICON

Chapter 1.37-42

Livestock, Market, Drought, and the First Rites of Life

पशुपालन, हाट, रौदी, नामकरण, मुड़न, उपनयन *Paśupālan, Hāṭ, Raudī, Nāmakaraṇ, Muḍan, Upanayan*

"First drinking-water, then the animals, then the fields."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — livelihood's daily care, drought's discipline, and a child's first rites

Caring for animals, market, and scarcity

Livestock, Market, Drought, and the First Rites of Life • पशुपालन, हाट, रौंदी, नामकरण, मुड़न, उपनयन — card 1 of 2

The Animal-Husbandry Song. Cows, buffaloes, goats, and oxen are bound to a household's grain, milk, manure, and labor; Bā teaches children separate fodder for pregnant animals, leaf-medicine for the sick, and the calf's share fed first.

Betel, Vegetables, and the Market. Growing betel needs moisture, shade, and patience; the weekly market brings betel, greens, oil, sweets, fish, and craftwork together, and Ananyā notices it is also where news, songs, satire, and new verses are born.

Drought and Famine. In a drought year, as wells run low and fields crack, the village sets a rule: drinking-water first, then animals, then fields — and grain from the wealthier households is shared, not lent, reflecting patience within the drought-song's sorrow.

● Categories 37–39

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Animal-Husbandry Song — पशुपालनक गीत
- Betel, Vegetables, and the Market — पानक बरेब, तरकारी आ हाट
- Drought and Famine — रौंदी आ अकाल

A child's first names and duties

Livestock, Market, Drought, and the First Rites of Life • पशुपालन, हाट, रौंदी, नामकरण, मुड़न, उपनयन — card 2 of 2

The Naming Song. Choosing a newborn's name, a family weighs the season of birth, the mother's wish, the village's memory, and its hope for the future; Ananyā insists, "the name should be one no one can cut away" — first written on a leaf, then later on paper.

The First-Haircut Song. A child's first hair is not thrown in the river but tied in a leaf and kept by a tree's root, for "hair is the body's first record; the soil will keep it as memory" — sung playfully so the child feels no fear.

The Sacred-Thread Song. At Āruṇi Nandan's initiation he is taught that the thread means not mere ritual but a duty to water, soil, and truth — "the thread is on the body, the duty is in the mind" — and the children add their own line: whoever hears their name rightly becomes worthy.

● Categories 40–42

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Naming Song — नामकरणक गीत
- The First-Haircut Song — मुड़नक गीत
- The Sacred-Thread Song — उपनयनक गीत



Marriage, Motherhood, Old Age, and Daily Rhythm

गौना, गर्भ, वृद्धावस्था, आँगन, व्रत-कथा, रसोई *Gaunā, Garbha, Vṛddhāvasthā, Āṅgan, Vrat-Kathā, Rasoi*

"Reduce the burden, not the wages."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — marriage's first rule, motherhood's labor, and the household's daily music

Marriage's first rule, motherhood's honest ask

Marriage, Motherhood, Old Age, and Daily Rhythm • गौना, गर्भ, वृद्धावस्था, आँगन, व्रत-कथा, रसोइ — card 1 of 2

Marriage and Conjugal Life. After the bride's homecoming, Bā gives new couples one rule: "two households' habits will clash, but the voice must not close" — a vow to hear each other out fully, sung with shyness alongside the importance of dialogue.

Pregnancy and Motherhood. Custom holds a pregnant woman should be freed from the heaviest housework, though poverty often breaks this; Sarayū herself kept laboring through pregnancy, and the women's circle sang in protest: "don't reduce the wages — reduce the burden."

The Old-Age Song. An elder's slow pace is never counted as wasted time — seated, they identify seed-grain, tell stories, correct children gently, and recall old flood-marks; the village says, "whoever's step is slow, their time runs deep."

● Categories 43–45

REFERENCE INDEX

- Marriage and Conjugal Life — गौना आ दाम्पत्य
- Pregnancy and Motherhood — गर्भ आ मातृत्व
- The Old-Age Song — वृद्धावस्थाक गीत

The courtyard's renewal, and the kitchen's own music

Marriage, Motherhood, Old Age, and Daily Rhythm • गौना, गर्भ, वृद्धावस्था, आँगन, व्रत-कथा, रसोइ — card 2 of 2

The Courtyard-Cleaning Song. Before every festival, women re-plaster the courtyard with cow-dung and clay; asked why so often, Bā answers, "a house gathers dust, and so does the mind — cleaning means beginning again," and a child's first steps are set upon the newly cleaned ground.

The Vow-Story Song. A vow-day's tale is never told as a simple bargain for reward; Bā pauses mid-story to ask, "was this woman's choice right or wrong?" — inviting the listeners' answer before the song continues, so each telling carries genuine debate.

Grinding, Pounding, and the Kitchen. The sounds of the grindstone, the spice-slab, and the hearth-fire compose a woman's whole day's rhythm; Ananyā once wrote down every sound she heard — grinding, splashing, sizzling, blowing — and Bā laughed, "the kitchen is its own instrument."

● Categories 46–48

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Courtyard-Cleaning Song — आँगन नीपबाक गीत
- The Vow-Story Song — व्रत-कथाक गीत
- Grinding, Pounding, and the Kitchen — अन्न कुटब-पिसब आ रसोइ



APPENDIX 1 • GARH NĀRIKEL FOLK-LEXICON

Chapter 1.49-54

Small Watches, Painting, Clay, and Mended Cloth

देखभाल, मिथिला-चित्रकला, माटिक पूजा-वस्तु, सिलाई-कढ़ाई, सजावट, दहेज *Dekhabhāl, Mithilā-Citrakalā, Māṭik Pūjā-Vastu, Silāi-Kaḍhāi, Sajāvaṭ, Dahej*

"Mending is not shame — it is a craft."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — everyday guardianship, sacred art, and the household's honest voice

Small watches and painted eyes that never close

Small Watches, Painting, Clay, and Mended Cloth • देखभाल, मिथिला-चित्रकला, माटिक पूजा-वस्तु, सिलाइ-कढ़ाई, सजावट, दहेज — card 1 of 2

Caring for Animals, Water, and Household Things. Bā teaches children that thirst is not only human — a small water-dish for birds by the threshold, clean water in the cow-shed, tools kept dry, seed-boxes raised, water-jars covered; Ananyā names all of this "the small watch."

Mithila Painting. A wall-painted fish's eye is always left open; asked why it never sleeps, Bā answers, "the painted fish keeps watch over the house's water and name" — lotus, sun, moon, bamboo, women, birds, and river are joined on the wall by a leaf of the sacred grove.

Clay Worship-Objects. Children shape small clay gods, lamps, horses, birds, and bowls; when one figure breaks and a child weeps, Bā wets the clay and remakes it into a fresh lamp — "a clay god returns to clay when broken; devotion itself does not break."

● Categories 49–51

REFERENCE INDEX

- Caring for Animals, Water, and Household Things — पशु-पक्षी, जल आ घरक वस्तुक देखभाल
- Mithila Painting — मिथिला चित्रकला
- Clay Worship-Objects — माटिक पूजा-वस्तु

Mended cloth, wedding order, and an honest refusal

Small Watches, Painting, Clay, and Mended Cloth • देखभाल, मिथिला-चित्रकला, माटिक पूजा-वस्तु, सिलाइ-कढ़ाई, सजावट, दहेज — card 2 of 2

Embroidery. Sarayū embroiders a flower over a torn towel rather than hiding the tear, and the mended place becomes a mark of beauty; Ananyā declares, "mending is not shame — it is a craft," and the women begin embroidering story-marks onto old cloth.

Leaf-Plates, Grain-Gifts, and Wedding Decoration. Even the order of food placed on a wedding leaf-plate carries meaning — salt sparse, rice generous, sweetness saved for last; the small parting-gift of grain, grass, betel, and turmeric marks a blessing, and Ananyā observes that decoration itself signals relationship, not mere display.

Dowry, Poverty, Wages, and Migration. When a groom's family demands more at a wedding, the women halt the ceremony with a sharp satirical song — "whoever's belly is filled by dowry, their house is empty of love" — and the village elders' support ends the demand; song becomes the community's own instrument of decision.

● Categories 52–54

REFERENCE INDEX

- Embroidery — सिलाइ-कढ़ाई
- Leaf-Plates, Grain-Gifts, and Wedding Decoration — पातरि, खोईछ, अन्न-विन्यास आ विवाह सजावट
- Dowry, Poverty, Wages, and Migration — दहेज, गरीबी, मजूरी आ परदेश



Wedding Satire, Two Great Festivals, and Household Gods

गारी, मधुश्रावणी, सामा-चकेवा, भगवती, घरक देवता, ग्राम-देवता *Gārī, Madhuśrāvaṇī, Sāmā-Cakevā, Bhagavatī, Gharak Devatā, Grām-Devatā*

"The village deity is the rule that never turns away the hungry, the guest, or the helpless."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — laughter that corrects, faith that questions, and the shrine every household keeps

Laughter that corrects, and questions that keep faith alive

Wedding Satire, Two Great Festivals, and Household Gods • गारी, मधुश्रावणी, सामा-चकेवा, भगवती, घरक देवता, ग्राम-देवता — card 1 of 2

Wedding Satire. In wedding-songs of ritual mockery, women pointedly tease the groom's side for pride, laziness, or greed; when one friend of the groom once took offense, Bā explained, "this is not insult — it is medicine for arrogance," and both families ended the song laughing together over a shared meal.

Madhuśrāvaṇī. Listening to Madhuśrāvaṇī's traditional tales, a new bride learns of serpents, nature's laws, faith, and caution; when Ananyā once asked whether the serpent or human carelessness was truly at fault, the storyteller paused, then wove in a new answer — keeping the story alive through each retelling.

Sāmā-Cakevā. On Kārtik nights, girls sing over clay figures of Sāmā and Cakevā, recalling both sibling bonds and the migratory birds' own journey; in a year when fewer birds returned, new verses about saving ponds, trees, and open fields were added to the song.

● Categories 55–57

REFERENCE INDEX

- Wedding Satire — गारी आ स्त्री-व्यंग्य
- Madhuśrāvaṇī — मधुश्रावणी
- Sāmā-Cakevā — सामा-चकेवा

Honoring hidden labor, and the shrine at every threshold

Wedding Satire, Two Great Festivals, and Household Gods • गारी, मधुश्रावणी, सामा-चकेवा, भगवती, घरक देवता, ग्राम-देवता — card 2 of 2

The Bhagavatī Song. On the day of worshipping Bhagavatī, women ask not only for family happiness but also honor for unseen laborers like Sarayū; the very first offering-leaf is set aside in the name of the one who does the unnoticed work, and the lamp's flame stays steady.

The Household Deity. A household's god is rarely a grand idol — sometimes only a corner of the wall, a tulsi-plant, the hearth's first flame, or an ancestor's leaf; Bā defines it simply as the rule that never turns away a guest, the hungry, or the helpless.

The Village Deity and the Sacred Grove. In times of crisis, every neighborhood contributes a handful of soil to the village shrine, on the belief that as long as the soils remain mixed, the village's protection belongs to everyone, not one neighborhood alone; after a flood, this shared soil is redistributed to the fields.

● Categories 58–60

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Bhagavatī Song — भगवती गीत
- The Household Deity — घरक देवता
- The Village Deity and the Sacred Grove — ग्राम-देवता आ गहबर



Judgment, Patience, and the Great Autumn Festivals

धर्मराज, शिव, विष्णु, दुर्गापूजा, सूर्य-छठि, मर्सिया *Dharmarāj, Śiva, Viṣṇu, Durgāpūjā, Sūrya-Chaṭhi, Marsiyā*

"In the final judgment, it is not wealth but the mark of one's work that is weighed."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — divine songs reinterpreted through the village's own ethic of labor and justice

Judgment weighed by labor, patience found in sorrow

Judgment, Patience, and the Great Autumn Festivals • धर्मराज, शिव, विष्णु, दुर्गापूजा, सूर्य-छटि, मर्सिया — card 1 of 2

The Dharmarāj Song. Telling the tale of Dharmarāj's final judgment, Bā teaches that not wealth but the mark of one's deeds is weighed there; she sets water in one vessel and laborers' names in another to show children that justice without a name remains incomplete.

Śiva and the Nachārī Song. Singing nachārī songs in Śiva's name by the grove, women voice their sorrows while asking, ultimately, for patience; in one retelling, the image of Śiva's blue throat is reinterpreted not as enduring poison silently, but as first recognizing poison in order to remove it from society.

Viṣṇu and the Harigīt Song. Singing harigīt in times of crisis, villagers seek the meaning of sustenance and patience; Nanda Āruṇi teaches that true sustenance means not covering over injustice but carrying truth forward — the river-crossing boat reimagined not as Viṣṇu's mythic couch, but as a metaphor for shared labor.

● Categories 61–63

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Dharmarāj Song — धर्मराजक गीत
- Śiva and the Nachārī Song — शिव आ नचारी
- Viṣṇu and the Harigīt Song — विष्णु आ हरिगीत

The great autumn festivals, and grief given shape

Judgment, Patience, and the Great Autumn Festivals • धर्मराज, शिव, विष्णु, दुर्गापूजा, सूर्य-छाँटि, मर्सिया — card 2 of 2

Durgā Pūjā. Durgā Pūjā's fair brings the village's color, trade, music, and reunion together — the idol's clay gathered from many neighborhoods, the drum built by many craftsmen's hands, the offering shared communally; one year animal sacrifice was replaced by a pledge of grain and animal welfare, with the song declaring, "power protects — not only through blood."

Sūrya and Chaṭhi. At the Chaṭhi festival's ghat, the whole village supports the observant few with cleaning, water, safety, and offerings; giving reverence to the setting sun teaches that even fading light deserves honor, while the rising sun's offering marks a fresh beginning — a lamp named "not alone" is kept at the ghat in memory of Ujjwal Jhā.

Marsiyā and Jharni. Hearing a marsiyā lament, even the village's elder men do not hold back tears; the jharni's rhythm makes martyrdom and injustice felt in the body itself — a new marsiyā once joined the names of Biseśar, Sarayū, and unnamed laborers together, carrying both compassion and a demand for justice.

● Categories 64–66

REFERENCE INDEX

- Durgā Pūjā — दुर्गापूजा
- Sūrya and Chaṭhi — सूर्य आ छाँटि
- Marsiyā and Jharni — मर्सिया आ झरनी



Shared Faith, Riddles, Names, and the Art of the Tall Tale

फकीरी, पहेली, उपनाम, अतिशयोक्ति, नकल, तात्कालिक तुक *Phakīrī, Pahelī, Upanām, Atīśayokti, Nakal, Tātkālik Tuk*

"Wherever the thirsty find water — that is my place."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — verbal play, satire, and the wandering fakir's shared reverence

A shared shrine, and playful shared wit

Shared Faith, Riddles, Names, and the Art of the Tall Tale • फकीरी, पहेली, उपनाम, अतिशयोक्ति, नकल, तात्कालिक तुक — card 1 of 2

Fakir's Tales and Shared Reverence. A wandering fakir sits at the temple threshold, the sacred grove's shade, and the river ghat all alike; asked "where is your place?", he answers, "wherever the thirsty find water" — making shared compassion the root of faith itself.

Riddles. Bā poses a riddle to the children — "no body, no wings, yet it travels village to village; grasp it, and your hand stays empty" — with the answer being song itself, teaching that folk-culture is not an object but a traveling voice.

Nicknames. A nickname may be born of affection, trade, habit, or humor, but the community stops it the moment it crosses into insult; Āruṇi Nandan's rule stands — "a name that makes a person small is not a nickname, but a wound" — valid only if the person named laughs along.

● Categories 67–69

REFERENCE INDEX

- Fakir's Tales and Shared Reverence — फकीरी खिस्सा आ साझा श्रद्धा
- Riddles — पहेली
- Nicknames — उपनाम

Tall tales, sharp mimicry, and songs made on the spot

Shared Faith, Riddles, Names, and the Art of the Tall Tale • फकीरी, पहेली, उपनाम, अतिशयोक्ति, नकल, तात्कालिक तुक — card 2 of 2

Hyperbole. In the tall-tale tradition, a fish grows bigger than a boat and a hoe splits mountains; when a child asks if this is a lie, Bā answers it is "the voice of emphasis," for such exaggeration wraps truth in imagination without ever hiding it.

Mimicry. Children mimic an official's heavy language, a market-crier's call, a boatman's shout, and a drummer's gait; when Ananyā's mimicry of "not on the list" grew sharp enough to make powerful listeners visibly uncomfortable, mimicry proved itself a mirror of power and behavior.

Improvised Rhyme. Sudden rain at the market sends everyone running; one woman calls out a line about saving the betel and the song, another instantly adds a line about saving themselves too — and within minutes a whole verse is born, showing folk-song's power to capture the present moment instantly.

● Categories 70–72

REFERENCE INDEX

- Hyperbole — अतिशयोक्ति
- Mimicry — नकल
- Improvised Rhyme — तात्कालिक तुक



APPENDIX 1 • GARH NĀRIKEL FOLK-LEXICON — CLOSING ENTRIES

Chapter 1.73-76

Topsy-Turvy Wisdom, the Gathering, the Call, and Home Away From Home

उलटबाँसी, खिस्सा-गोष्ठी, पुकार-उत्तर, परदेशी शहर *Ulaṭabāśī, Khissā-Goṣṭhī, Pukār-Uttar, Pardeśī Śahar*

"Not alone — we are together."

● This chapter

SOURCE

- Reference index — the appendix's final four categories, closing the folk-lexicon

Truths turned upside down, and a story with four roads

Topsy-Turvy Wisdom, the Gathering, the Call, and Home Away From Home • उलटबाँसी, खिस्सा-गोष्ठी, पुकार-उत्तर, परदेशी शहर — card 1 of 2

Ulaṭabāsī (Topsy-Turvy Verse). Bā observes, "whoever speaks the most often hears the least"; children respond by coining their own inverted proverb, "silence has the biggest ear" — and the grove's own tale is reframed so that it is not the living who fear ghosts, but the dead who fear the living's injustice.

The Storytelling Gathering. The same tale, told from four directions at once — east, west, a mother's account, a child's account — deliberately reaches no single fixed ending, since each teller adds their own thread; the gathering itself models storytelling as a shared, ongoing form rather than a finished text.

● Categories 73–74

REFERENCE INDEX

- Ulaṭabāsī (Topsy-Turvy Verse) — उलटबाँसी
- The Storytelling Gathering — खिस्सा-कहवाक गोष्ठी

A call answered, and the village that travels with its people

Topsy-Turvy Wisdom, the Gathering, the Call, and Home Away From Home • उलटबाँसी, खिस्सा-गोष्ठी, पुकार-उत्तर, परदेशी शहर — card 2 of 2

The Call-and-Response. In every communal labor — embankment repair, boat-work, transplanting, immersion, night-watch — one voice leads and the group answers, proving the whole community awake and present; after Ujjwal Jhā's incident, the school itself took up the call "alone?" answered by "no — we are together."

Garh Nārikel in the Foreign City. In a small city room far from home, Garh Nārikel's people still sing Sāmā-Cakevā, birth-songs, Chaṭhi hymns, and wedding-songs; lacking a pond, they see the moon in a bucket of water, and lacking soil, they keep a small pot of village earth — culture surviving displacement by preserving its own root-memory.

● Categories 75–76

REFERENCE INDEX

- The Call-and-Response — पुकार-उत्तर
- Garh Nārikel in the Foreign City — परदेशी शहरमे गढ़ नारिकेल



EDITORIAL NOTE • न्याय-दर्शनक मूल अन्तःकथा (CORE JUSTICE-PHILOSOPHY INNER-STORY)

Chapter Note

A Note on Appendix 3

परिशिष्ट ३ पर एक टिप्पणी *Pariśiṣṭa 3 par Ek Ṭippaṇī*

"Where the final chapters distilled one vivid image, this appendix shows the study that filled the room behind it."

● *This chapter*

SOURCE

- A structural survey of all 144 headings, with close sampling of every substantial entry

Not a draft — a private study-bank

A Note on Appendix 3 • परिशिष्ट ३ पर एक टिप्पणी — card 1 of 2

The finding. Appendix 3's 144 headings match, almost title-for-title, the already-published chapters 57–200 of Vol-1 and Vol-2 — but it is not an alternate narrative draft. Roughly 130 of the 144 entries are bare 50–200-word stubs, essentially chapter-title placeholders with no developed content at all.

The outliers. A handful of entries — chapters 94, 95, 96, 111, 112, 113, 114, 130, 138, 145, 146–148, 161, and 169 — run far longer (500 to over 11,000 words). Every one of these, without exception, turns out to hold the same material: not story, but a repetitive philosophical exercise-bank.

● How this note was produced

SURVEY METHOD

- All 144 chapter-headings and word-counts mapped across the appendix's full span.
- Every entry over 400 words sampled directly at its opening (10 of the longest checked in full).
- No fictional dialogue, no song lyrics, and no plot divergence found anywhere in the sample.

What the exercise-bank actually contains

A Note on Appendix 3 • परिशिष्ट ३ पर एक टिप्पणी — card 2 of 2

A fixed rotation of six frames. Each long entry cycles the same six narrative settings — a gurukul courtyard debate, a traveler's told experience, a teacher's slate, a student struggling with an abstract definition, a classroom question, a village-square discussion — pairing each, in turn, with a named classical Navya-Nyāya doctrine from Gaṅgeśa's own *Tattvacintāmaṇi*.

Authentic classical illustrations, not fiction. The topics are the tradition's standard teaching examples: the pot as a made effect implying a maker; the mountain's smoke inferring unseen fire; a shell mistaken for silver (the classic illusion-example); the wild ox compared to a cow (illustrating analogy); a conch wrongly seen as yellow; the agency behind cooking rice; and a parrot's repeated speech, used to test what counts as valid testimony.

● Why no separate teaching deck was built

CONCLUSION

- This is authentic Navya-Nyāya training material, not narrative content — there is nothing to compare against the finished chapters' plot or characters.
- It plausibly represents the author's own private study behind the novel's philosophical density.
- The already-published chapters remain the complete and authoritative account of the story.